

*Free to Members; Price to Non-Members, 7/-.*

# TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

**Essex Archæological Society.**

---

VOL. VIII., PART I.

NEW SERIES.

---



COLCHESTER :

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY AT THE MUSEUM IN THE CASTLE.

1900.

CONTENTS OF PART I., VOL. VIII.

	PAGE
I. <i>Two Essex Incised Slabs.</i> By MILLER CHRISTY and E. BERTRAM SMITH ... ..	I
II. <i>Ship-Money in Essex—1634-1649.</i> By WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. ... ..	8
III. <i>Some Interesting Essex Brasses.</i> By MILLER CHRISTY and W. W. PORTEOUS ... ..	15
IV. <i>The Milbournes of Great Dunmow, Co. Essex.</i> By THOMAS MILBOURN ... ..	55
V. <i>Essex Field Names.</i> Collected and arranged by WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. <i>Part VI.—The Hundred of Hünckford</i> ... ..	76
<i>Archaeological Notes</i> ... ..	104
<i>General Meeting at Colchester, on Thursday, April 19th, 1900</i> ...	107
<i>Report</i> ... ..	112
<i>Donations to the Society</i> ... ..	114
<i>Balance Sheet</i> ... ..	116

---

*For Illustrations see inside back cover.*



INCISED SLAB AT MIDDLETON, ESSEX, TO SIRE JAMES SAMSON,  
RECTOR OF THE PARISH, WHO DIED IN 1349.

(Restored : Size 88 by 45 inches.)

# MESSRS. WILES & SON

Are prepared to bind volumes of the  
Essex Archæological Society's Transactions

at following prices :—

					PER VOL.
Whole cloth case	...	...	...	...	2/-
Half roan, cloth sides	...	...	...	...	2/6
Half calf or Morocco, plain	...	...	...	...	3/-
Ditto	ditto	extra	...	...	3/6

---

WILES & SON,

Printers, Publishers and Bookbinders,

TRINITY PRINTING WORKS,

COLCHESTER.

# TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

## ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

---

### TWO ESSEX INCISED SLABS.

BY MILLER CHRISTY AND E. BERTRAM SMITH.

THE Incised Slabs of the British Isles have never, it appears, been made the subject of a comprehensive and systematic study by any British archæologist. Isolated examples have been figured and described, it is true, by various writers, while the examples to be found in certain localities or counties have been studied more or less carefully by a few local archæologists. Taken as a whole, however, British Incised Slabs have been neglected to an extent which is really remarkable. There exists, indeed, so far as we are aware, no work in which a sufficient number of such slabs are figured and described to make it worthy of mention here.

This lack of any systematic treatise on our British Incised Slabs is both very surprising and exceedingly regrettable—the more so seeing that a British archæologist (the late Rev. W. F. Creeny, of Norwich) has produced an admirable and well-illustrated work in which he has figured many of the more interesting slabs to be found on the Continent of Europe,<sup>1</sup> and that a very large number of British archæologists have devoted their attention to our Sepulchral Brasses, a class of monuments which is very closely allied, in many respects, to that comprising Incised Slabs. It is greatly to be hoped, therefore, that we may not have to wait much longer before some competent investigator undertakes an adequate treatise on the subject.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Illustrations of Incised Slabs on the Continent of Europe, from Rubbings and Tracings*, by the Rev. W. F. Creeny (Norwich, 1891, large 4to).

Our British Incised Slabs are of great interest from many points of view. In the first place, a majority of them are of early date, ranging from the thirteenth century to the fifteenth—earlier, that is, than the majority of our sepulchral brasses, of which, indeed, the slabs were the prototypes. Secondly, most of them are of large size—far larger than the majority of brasses—many being as much as eight feet in length by four in breadth. Thirdly, not a few of them exhibit an extraordinary amount of detail—more than any of our sepulchral brasses, except a few of our largest and finest examples of Flemish workmanship. Fourthly, most of the very detailed work they exhibit is of high artistic merit, both design and execution being often surprisingly good. It might be mentioned, too, that the method by means of which they may be reproduced satisfactorily in print is by no means difficult or expensive, if somewhat tedious.

Our object at the present time is not, however, to discuss incised slabs in general, but to describe and figure two (or, rather, one and a portion of another) which still exist in the county, but have never before been figured or adequately described.

So far as we are aware, no more than two Incised Slabs and a fragment of a third now exist in the whole of the County of Essex.<sup>1</sup> There are, doubtless, one or two others which have not come under our notice; and, if any of our readers know of the existence of such, we shall be glad to have our attention called to them. One is justified, nevertheless, in stating that monuments of this class are of extreme rarity in the county, as they are, indeed, in most counties where the stone of which they consist is not readily obtainable. In all probability, Incised Slabs have always been rare in Essex; for it must have been exceedingly costly, in the early days when they were chiefly made, to obtain them from the Continent or the more or less distant stone-producing counties of the north and west, where alone, probably, the craftsmen capable of engraving them resided. It was different with sepulchral brasses, which were, we know, engraved largely in the Eastern Counties, where also they were mainly used.

Of the three Incised Slabs known to exist in the county, the best-known is that at East Horndon to the memory of the Lady Alice

<sup>1</sup> We use the term here in its somewhat restricted and technical sense, to define only the class of sepulchral monuments of which we are treating. In a sense, every modern tomb-stone is, of course, an "Incised Slab." We are, however, concerned herein only with ancient slabs bearing effigies represented by means of incised lines and accompanied usually by incised marginal inscriptions. This definition excludes such inscribed slabs as that (date about 1280) at Fobbing (see *Essex Review*, viii., p. 34), and also the slab commemorating John Fenne, Merchant of the Staple of Calais, who died in 1486, in St. Mary's Church, Maldon, on which the effigy (now lost) was represented in brass, though the marginal inscription is incised in the stone itself. It also excludes various comparatively-modern slabs which exist in the county.

Tyrrell, who died in 1422. She was a daughter of Sir William Coggeshall and Antiocha his wife, and married Sir John Tyrrell, of Herons, in East Horndon, who was Sheriff of Essex in 1423. It is a large slab of alabaster, measuring six feet six inches in length by three feet in breadth, but is broken, unfortunately, into four pieces. The very elegant design it bears has been reproduced twice from sketches<sup>1</sup> and twice photographically from a rubbing.<sup>2</sup>

The other two Essex slabs—those with which we are here concerned—are to be found at Middleton, near Sudbury, and Bradwell, near Coggeshall, respectively. Both represent priests and both are of the same date, namely 1349. In all probability, both priests died of the Black Death, which raged from August 1348 till 1350, carrying off a third or even (it is estimated by some) a half of the entire population of Europe—supposed to be then about four or five millions. There can be little or no doubt that both slabs are of Continental workmanship and that the former, at least, was produced in the same workshop as that commemorating Jakemins Doxnen, 1344, now in the Port de Hal Museum at Brussels.<sup>3</sup> This latter slab, beside representing Jakemins and a lady (probably his wife), represents also a priest (probably a brother of Jakemins) who resembles the Middleton priest in so many details that it is impossible to doubt their common origin.

A detailed description of each of these two Essex Slabs follows:—

MIDDLETON.—*Effigy of Sire James Samson, Priest, Rector of the Parish, beneath an elaborate Canopy supported by slender double side-shafts, and surrounded by a Marginal Latin Inscription in Longobardic characters. Date 1349.*

The slab, which is of some hard, dark-coloured, close-grained stone, measures 88 inches in length by 45 inches in breadth. It lies in the middle of the chancel, close up to the steps of the altar—a position in which it is exposed, necessarily, to a good deal of wear. The design incised upon it is now in an exceedingly worn and battered condition; beside which, considerable portions of the surface of the slab have cracked off. We have only been able to make out the design in detail with the expenditure of a very large amount of time and a very great deal of careful examination, both of the stone and of a rubbing we have taken from it. In some cases, details which appear tolerably

<sup>1</sup> By the Rev. E. L. Cutts (*Trans. Essex Archeol. Soc.*, vol. v., 1873, p. 299) and by Mr. F. Chancellor (*Ancient Sepulchral Monuments of Essex*, 1890, pl. li).

<sup>2</sup> By Mr. A. H. Brown (*The Builder*, Oct. 31, 1891) and by Mr. Peter G. Laurie in the Horndon Parish Magazine.

<sup>3</sup> Figured by Creeny: *Incised Slabs*, pl. 42.

clearly on a rubbing scarcely show at all on the stone, and *vice versa*. A recent writer has asserted that the slab is "too much worn and defaced to be illustrated"; but we are satisfied of the correctness of our figure, except in the most trivial detail.

There can be no question that the design cut upon the slab is undergoing very rapid deterioration, owing to the wear and tear to which it is exposed. An old rubbing, taken about sixty years ago by Mr. J. G. Waller, and now in the possession of the Society of Antiquaries,<sup>1</sup> shows the design very much more clearly than any rubbing which can be obtained now. Moreover, about the year 1769, a local antiquary of no great learning deciphered the inscription,<sup>2</sup> which he certainly would not have been able to do had it not then been far clearer than it is now or was sixty years ago, when the old rubbing mentioned above was taken. In another century, at the present rate of destruction, the design will probably have disappeared altogether. We venture, therefore, to suggest to the rector of the parish that it would be well if it could be kept covered with a piece of matting, which would assist largely in its preservation.

The result of our labour in tracing out the design, piece by piece, shows this slab to be, we believe, one of the very finest of its kind and date known to exist in England. The design is elaborate in detail and of great artistic excellence.

The priest is represented almost life-size, being  $65\frac{1}{2}$  inches in extreme height. The incised lines by means of which he is portrayed are strong and bold. He is attired in the ordinary eucharistic vestments—amice, alb, stole, maniple, and chasuble. The latter bears a *x*-shaped apparel, ornamented by means of quatrefoils and dots. These devices also appear on the stole. The maniple is ornamented by means of *fyfots* alternating with similar quatrefoils and dots. The apparel at the foot of the alb is a simple but elegant design of squares filled by quatrefoils. Between his feet a conventional plant is represented. The head, the hands, and the chalice on his breast were originally represented by either marble or a mass of white-metal inlaid, a practice not uncommon in connection with slabs of this character.<sup>3</sup> The block of white marble representing the head still remains, but it now retains no trace whatever of features. These latter are, however, just discernible on the old rubbing taken sixty years ago, as mentioned above, and

<sup>1</sup> We are indebted to Mr. Mill Stephenson, F.S.A., for drawing our attention to it, and also for other help and advice.

<sup>2</sup> See *post*.

<sup>3</sup> Mr. Creeny figures many instances from Belgium, France, and Germany, and there are others in the Town Museum at Dinan, in Brittany.



are shown in our figure. The inlays (whether of stone or metal) by means of which the hands and chalice were represented are now gone, and the matrices are filled with masses of hardened clay.

The canopy is more defaced by wear and the breaking away of the surface of the slab than any other portion of the design, but enough remains to show its elaborate and elegant character. It is supported by very slender double side-shafts, having foliated capitals, and presents a wealth of detail altogether unusual on English slabs, displaying pinnacles and crockets above and trefoiled cusps below. In the centre, immediately above the priest's head, is a panel or compartment which once contained tracery.

The inscription, too, is very much defaced by wear; but considerable experience in deciphering much-defaced Longobardic inscriptions of this character had enabled us to make out (chiefly from the stone itself, whereon it appears more clearly than on any rubbing obtainable) nearly the whole of it—all, in fact, except the concluding supplication—before we discovered that Muilman had deciphered the same portion a century and a quarter ago.<sup>1</sup> It is in Latin and commences with a cross at the upper dexter corner (as is usual with inscriptions of the kind). It reads as follows: ✠ · HIC · IACET · DOMINVS · IACOBVS · | SAMSON · QVONDAM · RECTOR · ECCLESIE · DE · MIDDELTON · QVI · OBIIT · | OCTAVO · DIE · MENSIS · MAY · | ANNO · DOMINI · M · CCC · XLIX · [CVIVS · ANIMA · PROPICIETVR · DEVS · AMEN · ]<sup>2</sup> At the four corners were, apparently, the apostolic emblems, but they have now totally disappeared.

Of the personal history of the divine commemorated by this slab, we know nothing. Newcourt does not mention him<sup>3</sup> among the rectors of the parish, though the inscription leaves no doubt whatever that he was such; nor does Newcourt even mention his name at all in his great work.

BRADWELL-JUXTA-COGGESHALL.—*Lower portion of a Slab upon which has been engraved the Effigy of a Priest, surrounded by a Marginal Latin Inscription in Longobardic Characters. Date 1349.*

This slab, now lying in the chancel, forms the lower third, or thereabout, of a moderate-sized tapering slab, of which the remainder has entirely disappeared. It was probably about six feet six inches

<sup>1</sup> *History of Essex*, by a Gentleman, vol. ii. (1769), p. 134. The rendering here given contains some errors.

<sup>2</sup> "Here lies Sire James Samson, formerly Rector of the Church of Middleton, who died on the eighth day of the month of May in the year of our Lord 1349; [on whose soul may God have mercy. Amen]." The concluding words are now wholly defaced, but were, with little doubt, once present, as they constitute the usual formula.

<sup>3</sup> *Repertorium*, ii. p. 418.

long and about three feet wide at the head, tapering to  $27\frac{1}{2}$  inches at the foot, which remains. The design is not greatly defaced by wear, but large portions of the surface of the stone are broken away altogether, rendering it difficult to make out many details.

The Priest appears to have been represented almost life-size. He is not placed in the middle of the slab, but on the sinister side. For this unusual arrangement, no reason is obvious; but, had we



FRAGMENT OF INCISED SLAB AT BRADWELL-JUXTA-COGGESHALL, ESSEX, TO A PRIEST WHO DIED IN 1349.

(Restored: Original Size 78? by 36? by  $27\frac{1}{2}$  inches.)

the whole of the slab, it would appear, doubtless, that some other design, of which no portion appears on the part we still have, was placed on the dexter side. Possibly the priest was portrayed as holding something (perhaps a chalice) in his extended right hand—an idea which is to some extent supported by the fact that the arrangement of the vestments is not symmetrical on both sides. There are, indeed, unusual features in the fall of the draperies which the portion of the design we still have fails to explain. The design on the apparel of the alb is bold and graceful.

Of the Inscription, only about one-fourth remains. This portion does not give us the name of the priest commemorated, though it tells us approximately the date of his death. It is in Latin and (with the missing portions surmised) probably ran as follows:

[✠ HIC JACET DOMINVS . . . . . DE . . . . . QUI OBIT .  
 . . . . . DIE ME]NSIS AVGVSTI ANNO [DOMINI M . .] CCC XLIX AIA .  
 EIUS PER MIAM [DEVS PROPICIETUR AMEN . ]<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> " [Here lies Sire ————, of ————, who died on the ——— day of the] month of August in the year of our Lord, 1349. Upon his soul, of his pity, [may God have mercy. Amen.]"

We have no clue as to the priest's identity. Newcourt does not mention<sup>1</sup> any rector of the parish who died in 1349, or, indeed, any rector of such early date.

It may be as well for us, in concluding, to state that our illustrations are photographic reproductions of rubbings taken by ourselves and afterwards "touched up," all the incised lines having been whitened and all the rest blackened by hand. Lest it should be objected that this method of "restoration" is not permissible, we may state that, in our opinion, it is not only perfectly permissible but the only method by means of which satisfactory reproductions of incised slabs can be produced. At all events, it is the method by means of which the illustrations in Mr. Creeny's book were produced, as the author himself tells us. An incised slab does not present, even in its pristine condition, those sharp edges to its incised lines that a sepulchral brass presents. Still less does it present them when in a worn condition. While, therefore, a good rubbing may easily be got from a brass, a sharp clear rubbing can never be obtained from an Incised Slab, every tiny dent on the surface being brought into altogether undue prominence in the act of rubbing. The "touching up" of the lines and the elimination of the dent-marks by hand is, therefore, in our opinion, not only permissible but to a large extent inevitable if a clear reproduction of the original design is desired.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Repertorium*, ii., p. 82.

## SHIP-MONEY IN ESSEX—1634-1640.

BY WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

It is not often, methinks, that antiquarian research can be dubbed mischievous, but it has to be conceded that Mr. Attorney General Noy's talents might have been turned in some other direction with happier results to all concerned. For it is generally admitted that his researches among our ancient records led him to suggest the revival of the form of taxation known as Ship-Money, and enabled him, by the production of obsolete precedents, to persuade the Council to adopt his scheme. Of this the earliest intimation is found in some notes by Secretary Coke, dated 1634, on the project of setting forth a fleet for guard of the Narrow Seas, and assessing the cost thereof on the port-towns. The matter was at the time before a Committee and a later entry (July 22, 1634) shews that the Attorney General was willing at the time to go further than it was, as he is described as being "still upon it to have the maritime counties joined with the towns for easing the charge," whereas the Committee still thought it "safest to begin with the towns." In the long run, as we all know, the limit of safety was very far exceeded.

For more than six years no Parliament had met, and the pecuniary needs of the Kingdom had been met by the grant of monopolies and the revival of long-disused prerogatives of the Crown, accompanied by a careful economy in administration. During a time of peace these methods sufficed, but a possibility of war entirely changed the aspect of affairs. In such a case the constitutional course was to summon a Parliament, the only alternative being a fresh recourse to methods which, if not absolutely illegal, were at any rate unconstitutional. The King chose the alternative and the year 1634 saw a revival of Ship-Money. Among the State Papers of the time are still to be found memoranda furnishing a collection of precedents alleged in justification of the imposition of the tax, some of them reaching back, beyond the Edwards, to the date of Danegeld.

The published *Calendars of State Papers (Domestic Series)* enable us to trace the progress of affairs in Essex, more or less intermittently, it is true, but yet in a way not altogether devoid of interest. The King's first writ, addressed to the bailiffs and other legal men of certain towns as well as to the Sheriffs of Suffolk and Essex, was dated October 20, 1634, and called on them to provide a war-ship of seven hundred tons burden, two hundred and fifty men, and other materials of war, by the 1st day of March; and to maintain the same for twenty-six weeks thereafter. The ship was to be at Portsmouth by the date named. Under this writ power to levy by distress was conferred on the corporations, and such persons as proved rebellious might be sent to prison. By March 28th in the following year 2,446*l.* had been received, and on August 31st, 657*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.* out of a total sum of 6,615*l.* still remained due from the two counties.

The apportionment of this sum between the two counties seems to have been a matter of contention, although the small amount in dispute was hardly worth the trouble of an appeal. However, under date Nov. 10, 1635, we find that Suffolk had agreed to raise, for a first assessment, 2,650*l.*, as against 2,300*l.* to be raised in Essex, "leaving a sum of 50*l.*, as to which there was a dispute." The second assessment (1,615*l.*) Suffolk alleged was to be divided equally, but Essex averred that there were certain conditions. What these were appears later, when a certificate, under the hands of six men, was put in, to the effect that, on December 6, 1634, Suffolk agreed to pay 2,650*l.*, leaving 2,350*l.* for Essex. Essex 'condescended' to pay 2,300*l.*, and it was agreed that if either Essex appeared to be easier rated than Suffolk, or if Earl Rivers contributed towards the charge of Essex, that that county should pay the 50*l.* left in difference; if not, Suffolk should bear it. The signatories add that they have heard that Essex was easier rated, and that the Earl did contribute. Two other persons also put in evidence on the same point, one saying that the Sheriff of Essex had told him that he would take one half of the whole sum in charge; the other alleging that the Sheriffs and Commissioners said that, if Earl Rivers paid in Essex, there was 150*l.* to be taken off Suffolk and laid on Essex.

The extension of the levy to the whole area of each county was naturally accompanied by a corresponding rise in the amount of money demanded, and, under the writ issued on August 4th, 1635, the Essex contribution was fixed at 8000*l.* There is a note as to its being reduced to 6500*l.*, but the intention was evidently never carried out, as, on November 15th, the Sheriff of Essex put in a declaration of the way in which the sum of 8000*l.* was assessed,

stating the sums to be paid by each corporate town and by each of the nineteen hundreds. He further reported that the chief constables and hundredors of nine hundreds could not agree as to the assessment of the sums imposed upon them, and that he had appointed meetings with them "for better expediting the service." He says, also, that he himself has assessed every division and will send the names of constables who are refractory, some having given him no answer.

Nor was this recalcitrance on the part of their subordinates the only difficulty placed in the way of the Sheriffs' execution of their duty. The assessments were often disorderly and unequal, and they were sometimes so made as to bring in more money than would 'do the business.' Some collectors had money in hand and would not pay it over to the Sheriff; others, having collected more than enough, kept it, as they alleged "for other public uses." Altogether the High Sheriff of that time seems to have endured much during his year of office, and perhaps more after it.

Sir Humphrey Mildmay, who held office in 1636, was kept busy. Writing under date March 28, 1636, the Council, learning that some of the inhabitants of Theydon Garnon, which was assessed at 29*l.*, refused to contribute, on the ground that they owned no land, directed him to call the parties before him and cause assessment to be laid equally on every man without fear or partiality, it being the King's pleasure that personal estate should contribute. On June 20th he was further instructed that the bailiffs must be required to execute the warrants he issues 'for the shipping business,' or be bound to appear before the Board: if they refused to be bound, they were to be committed to prison. On July 9th Sir Humphrey reported to Mr. Secretary Nicholas that he did not think there was more than 3,100*l.* behind in Essex, he having paid in 1,400*l.* and having 600*l.* more at home, ready to pay in. It is clear that he had been urged to greater activity in the work; for, in conclusion, he adds the expression of a hope that the Council thinks he does what he is able, protesting that "there is no penny paid that is not forced among the people." There was trouble, too, at Stanford Rivers where the Collector had refused to perform the duties of his office, and, when the bailiff of the hundred had seized his cattle by way of distress, had rescued them by force out of his hands. Many people thereupon stopped paying their contributions until such time as they heard what became of this same collector.

On Nov. 17th Sir Humphrey reported further as to the bailiffs' not having demanded payment, and begged that some reformation might be had on some of the chief constables, some untoward

Londoners, and the chief bailiffs. In the result he apprehended that the evil-affected would "quake at the noise thereof, and his Majesty's money come in roundly." Among the 'untoward' he named Sir William Marsham; Thomas Latham, of Stifford; Lord Warwick; Mr. Lamley; Sir Richard Saltonstall; Sir Gamaliel Capel; Sir William Roe; and Lady Lake.

An account of the Ship-Money received from the Sheriff of Essex, under the writ of Aug. 4th, is given under date Jan. 20th, 1637. From this it appears that 6,100*l.* had been received, leaving 1,900*l.* still to come in; and, three days later, the King, "taking notice that this arrear is far greater than that of any other county," commanded Sir Humphrey to use all possible diligence to levy it by Shrovetide, obtaining for the purpose warrants from his successor in office, and returning to the Board the names of such bailiffs as refused to assist. What success he had in his efforts remains a little doubtful, but, later on, we shall again find him engaged in the struggle.

John Lucas, Sir Humphrey's successor in office, seems to have taken somewhat kindly to the work, which, in his case, evidently gave scope to an energetic and methodical character. He makes his first appearance under date May 21, 1637, when he essays to answer a complaint as to his rating made by the nobility and gentry, and the episode is one which brings vividly before us the 'Personal Government' of King Charles. The answer, which seems to have been a written one, set out that the Sheriff had taken care to ease the poorer sort of people, wherewith the county of Essex abounded, and thereby the assessment lay something the more on the abler sort. His Majesty observed that, through this Sheriff's industry, the whole county was now assessed, excepting only two parishes—one would like to know which these were, and the reasons for their omission, but our authority is silent as to the names of them. His Majesty went on to declare how he "perceived by the Sheriff's prudent ordering of the assessment he had expressed a very good affection both to the service and to his country, for which he deserved double thanks; and, the Sheriff being called in by his Majesty's especial command, he had approbation and encouragement given him to proceed with cheerfulness to assess and levy the money of all men within his shrievalty for the lands and abilities for which they were not assessed elsewhere, and that he should not fail therein to receive both countenance and assistance from the Board."<sup>1</sup> When one thinks

---

<sup>1</sup> Order of the King in Council [Copy] *State Papers Domestic*: Charles I., 357/2.

of the wry faces made by those who had to pay the assessments, this royal command to be cheerful in making and levying them, occurs to one as being somewhat sardonic.

There still exists evidence more than sufficient to warrant the royal commendation of the Sheriff's labours, in the shape of a portly volume, containing more than a hundred and fifty closely written pages, and preceded by a title-page displayed in the following form:—

*An Account of the Mony raised in the County of  
Essex for the Setting out of a Ship of eight  
hundred Tunne appointed by his  
Maiesties writt to be ready at  
Portsmouth on the first  
of March  
1636*

*In which the Severall Summes imposed by the Sheriffes  
upon the Inhabitants and the rates of the whole  
County are particularly expressed according to  
an order made by his Maiestie at the  
Councell Board the 23th of Aprill  
Last upon occasion of a Complaint  
then exhibited against the  
proceedings of the Sheriffes  
in that business.*

On the dorse of this title-page a summary of the total amount to be raised, is given, as follows:—

*The whole charge being Eight thousand pounds was by the Sheriffes with the Consent of the Maiors and other head officers of the Corporate Townes proportioned in this Manner:—*

<i>To be paid by the</i>	}	<i>Colchester</i>	300	:	00	:	00
<i>Towne of</i>		<i>Walden</i>	080	:	00	:	00
		<i>Maldon</i>	070	:	00	:	00
		<i>Thaxted</i>	040	:	00	:	00
		<i>Harwich</i>	020	:	00	:	00



*The remainder to be borne by the body of the County was as may appear by the particulars following Thus divided upon the several Hundreds :*

<i>Winstree</i>	164	:	05	:	00
<i>Freshwell</i>	234	:	16	:	05
<i>Thurstable</i>	146	:	09	:	07
<i>Harlow</i>	281	:	04	:	01
<i>Chafford</i>	315	:	14	:	06
<i>Rochford</i>	308	:	01	:	01
<i>Dengey</i>	349	:	11	:	10
<i>Dunmow</i>	416	:	06	:	06
<i>Uttlesford</i>	407	:	06	:	00
<i>Hinckford</i>	951	:	12	:	04 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Tendring</i>	476	:	04	:	10
<i>Barstable</i>	492	:	10	:	06 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Witham</i>	306	:	02	:	08
<i>Lexden</i>	528	:	18	:	05
<i>Chelmsford</i>	817	:	06	:	05
<i>Onger</i>	474	:	08	:	09
<i>Becontry</i>	477	:	04	:	07 $\frac{3}{4}$
<i>Waltham</i>	226	:	18	:	02
<i>Clavering</i>	114	:	18	:	02 $\frac{1}{4}$

*The whole Summe—8000 : 00 : 00*

*John Lucas.*

The hundred and fifty eight pages which follow the summary contain a list, under Hundreds and Parishes, of all those who were assessed to the payment of the subsidy, with the amount payable by each of them. That the meshes of the royal net were small as well as widely spread, is evidenced by the fact that individual contributions fall as low as 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ d. (*e.g.*, in Farnham), if not lower. A rough calculation serves to shew that something like 20,000 Essex men were assessed to the tax, and to that extent we have ready to our hands a census and directory of the county in the year 1637, complete save for the omission of Colchester, Walden, Malden, Thaxted, and Harwich, as to which no details are given, and of the two un-named parishes previously mentioned. From this point of view alone the document is one of singular interest and importance.

On July 6th following John Lucas paid in 500*l.*, in part of 800*l.*, charged on his county by a writ of August 12, 1636; and under the same date appear receipts shewing that Cranmer Harris had, on March 26, 1635, paid in 2,100*l.*, collected under the writ of October 20, 1634, with a further sum of 346*l.* 6*s.* 10*d.*

On August 8, 1637, Secretary Nicholas orders the Sheriffs to send in "this week," or at farthest "by this day sennight," all moneys collected for the shipping business, making reference to an order issued in July which required them to collect, or pay in full by a given date, the sums due from the several counties. Lucas lost no time. On August 24th he paid in 1000*l.*, and, on the 31st, a further sum of 700*l.*, leaving 1,300*l.* still due. It would appear that the Council on October 31st again stirred up the Sheriffs, and at that time, if the figures refer to the subsidy of 1636-7, Essex was 1249*l.* 15*s.* *od.* in arrears. This sum was, on November 11th, reduced by a payment in of 890*l.*, leaving 410*l.* only outstanding. Whether even John Lucas' energy succeeded in recovering this, remains a moot point; for at this time he makes place for the new Sheriff, Sir William Luckyn, who, on Jan. 34, 1638, made an application for "a copy of the rates out of Mr. Lucas' book."

Just about this time Sir Humphrey Mildmay reappears on the scene, complaining at large to Sir Dudley Carleton, of "all bailiffs for a nest of rascals," having much of his Majesty's money in their hands; and a few days later (Jan. 21st) an Order of Council issued for his appearance, inasmuch as he had not paid in the arrears of ship-money for 1635, the Lords having ordered such arrears to be levied by the first day in Easter, the Sheriff to attend the Board from time to time until discharged. By June 9th he had paid in 117*l.* 15*s.* and on March 30th, 1639, a further payment by him of 50*l.* stands recorded. It is to be hoped that the unhappy man was at length discharged, for in 1640 there occurs a list of Sheriffs "who are to be no more troubled for arrears of ship-money due by virtue of the writs of 1636, 1637, and 1638." At that time (Sep. 12th) these arrears are set out (for the whole kingdom) as follows: 1635—4,536*l.*; 1636—6,896*l.*; 1637—16,832*l.*; 1638—13,328. An entry, under date June 9, 1638, shews that the receipts for the years 1636 and 1637 were 188,228*l.* *os.* 11*d.* and 107,406*l.* 16*s.* 1*d.*

Before July 5, 1641, when the King passed the bills for taking away the Star Chamber, for regulating the Council Board, and for taking away the Court of High Commission, he had abolished the obnoxious imposition; for in noting the concessions he had already made, he said: "I have established the property of the subject, as witness the free-giving way to the taking-away the ship-money."

In conclusion I would once more emphasize the importance to local historians of John Lucas' elaborate list of the assessed Essex men, and also thank my friend, Mr. G. H. Overend, F.S.A., for kindly calling my attention to it.

## SOME INTERESTING ESSEX BRASSES.

BY MILLER CHRISTY AND W. W. PORTEOUS.

(Continued from vol. vii., (1899) p. 248.)

THE brasses chosen for treatment on this occasion comprise the entire series to be found in the churches of Brightlingsea and Littlebury (the latter selected because they are all now loose and, therefore, in danger of being lost), together with some formerly in the churches of Great Chesterford, Chrishall, Debden, Heydon, and Newport, but now lost. These latter were described, about 1745, by the Rev. William Cole, the well-known Cambridge antiquary, in his Manuscript Collections now in the British Museum; and we have thought it worth while to reproduce his sketches of them, crude though they are, as the only existing representations of Essex brasses now lost beyond hope of recovery. To the foregoing, we have added one or two other miscellaneous brasses which present, in one respect or another, interesting features.

We shall value, for future use, any additional information our readers are able to send us in reference to any of the brasses herein discussed.

As on former occasions, we have to thank various friends and correspondents for help and information kindly rendered to us. These include the Rev. H. L. Elliot, of Gosfield; the Rev. T. F. Fisher, of Debden; the Rev. A. Pertwee, of Brightlingsea; the Rev. George Smallpeice, late of Cardiff; the Rev. T. W. Ward, of Rainham; Mr. E. Bertram Smith, of Pattiswick; and, above all, Mr. Mill Stephenson, F.S.A.

BELCHAMP WALTER, I.—[*Effigies of a Man in Armour and an Ecclesiastic, beneath fine double-Canopy; with Foot-legend and four Shields.*] *Matrices only now remaining. Date about 1425.*

This fine and large composition, the matrix of which is much defaced, lies in the central aisle of the nave. Its most remarkable feature lies in the fact that it portrayed both a soldier and a priest, doubtless brothers. The only other instance of this to be found in the county is a matrix (which we have already figured<sup>1</sup>), of about the year 1490, at Pleshey. The slab measures 88 inches long by 36 inches broad.

<sup>1</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archæol. Soc.*, vol. vii., p. 29.

The effigy of the soldier (32½ inches in height), placed on the dexter side, represented him in the complete plate armour of the Lancastrian Period.

The priest (32½ inches in height) occupies the sinister side.

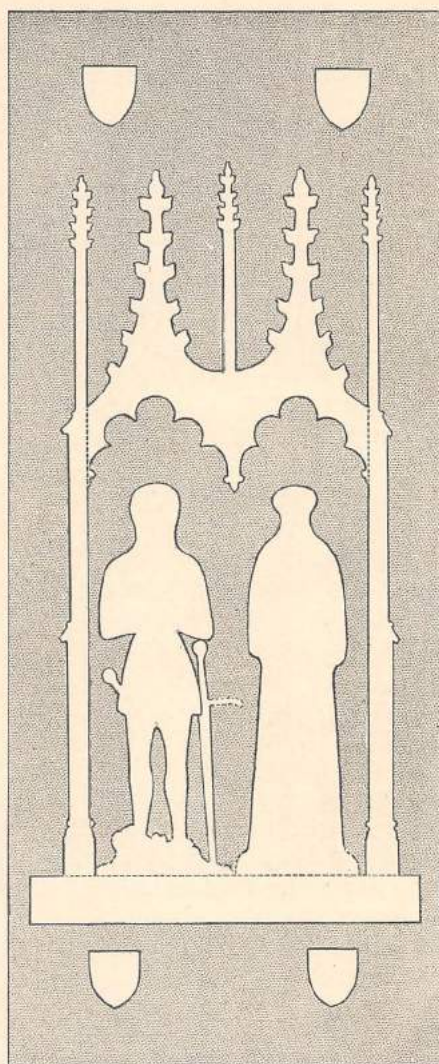
The canopy (59½ inches in height) is supported on slender side-shafts and consists of two cusped arches terminating above in crocketed finials, with pinnacles on each side and in the centre.

The inscription (32½ inches by 3¾ inches) was placed below the feet of the figures, and the canopy rises from it.

The shields (each five inches in height) are placed two above and two below the effigies.

To attempt to guess who the individuals commemorated may have been would be futile.

BELCHAMP WALTER, II.—  
[*Effigy of a Priest in Cope, beneath fine Canopy; with Foot-legend, two Shields, and four Scrolls.*] *Matrices only now remaining. Date about 1435.*



SOLDIER AND PRIEST, ABOUT 1425, AT  
BELCHAMP WALTER (*Matrix*).

This fine and large composition, the matrix of which is exceedingly worn, lies (like the slab noticed above) in the central aisle of the nave. We have no trace in the county of any brass of similar character. The slab measures no less than 100 inches long by 44½ inches broad.

The effigy of the priest (52 inches in height) is fourteen inches higher than our only other ancient example of a coped priest—that of William Kyrkeby, 1458, at Theydon Gernon.

The canopy (94 inches in total height) is triple and in two tiers. The lower tier terminates above in three crocketed finials and two pinnacles. The side-shafts, which are of very unusual width (about nine inches), support the upper tier—a deep rectangular entablature, perhaps battlemented at the top. The extensive surface of the side-shafts and upper tier of the canopy was occupied, doubtless, by figures of saints and ornamental tracery.

The two shields (each  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches in height) are placed on either side of the priest's head.

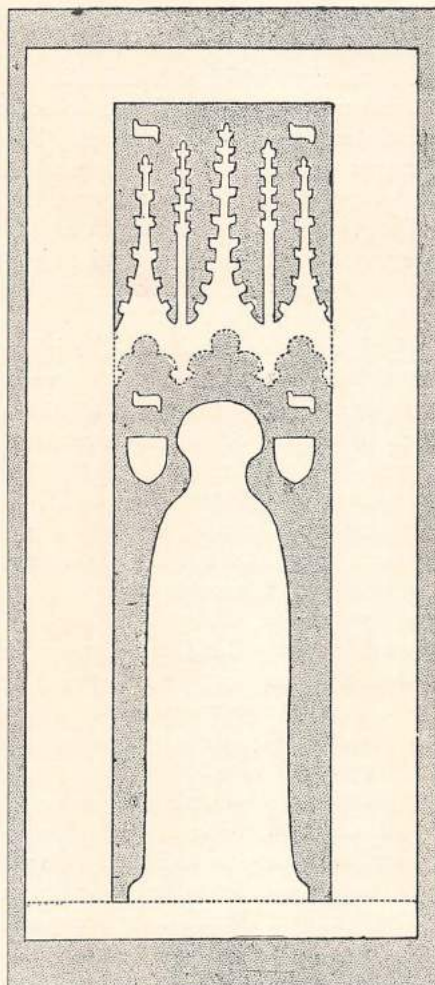
Of the scrolls, which are small (only 3 inches in length), two are placed above the shields and two below the super-canopy.

The outlines of the foot-legend are for the most part defaced.

We have no idea who the priest represented may have been. Newcourt throws no light upon the point.

*BRIGHTLINGSEA.—Nine Compositions (most of them commemorating Members of the Beriffe Family and more or less mutilated) detailed hereafter. Dates from about 1400 to 1578.*

In the fine church of this place, which occupies a very prominent position nearly two miles north of the town, there still remain parts



A PRIEST IN COPE, ABOUT 1435, AT  
BELCHAMP WALTER (*Matrix*).

of eight brasses; while Holman mentions<sup>1</sup> the former existence of a ninth, now lost.<sup>2</sup>

Of the eight which still exist (in whole or in part), the earliest is (or, rather, has been) a fine bracket-brass of about the year 1400. It is interesting as being the only brass of this type of which even a fragment now remains in Essex. The matrices of its effigies are now occupied by later figures, apparently palimpsest.

The other seven all commemorate members of the Beriffe family. They range in date from 1496 to 1578 and form by far the most extensive series of brasses commemorating a single family to be found in the county.

By a curious co-incidence, the inscription plates belonging to six out of these seven compositions have disappeared, the one remaining being that belonging to the latest of them all. Nevertheless, Haines gives<sup>3</sup> the dates of all the seven compositions, together with the names, &c., of the members of the Beriffe family which each commemorates—information which he derived, doubtless, from Morant,<sup>4</sup> who, again, had it, without doubt, from Holman's Manuscripts. In the latter, the inscriptions of all the seven brasses are given almost, though not quite, in full, as they existed about the year 1710; and, though Holman gives no information as to the effigies, it is not difficult to assign each inscription, with little or no doubt, to the effigy or effigies it formerly accompanied.

We do not know when these inscription-plates disappeared from the church. The vicar, the Rev. A. Pertwee, thinks it probable, that they disappeared about the year 1815, when (as he remembers being told, many years ago, by a very aged parishioner) the church lay for some time in an almost ruinous condition, owing to the fall of the roof, and many depredations took place, people helping themselves freely to pieces of brass and to whatever else they took a fancy.

The family of Beriffe once occupied a good position in Essex, but seems to have now died out. Its earliest members of consequence appear to have been those commemorated by the brasses in question. We do not know their various relationships to one another. At the period when they lived (the first three quarters of the Sixteenth Century), the family was not armigerous, as is shown by the use of

<sup>1</sup> In his Manuscript Collections for a History of Essex, gathered about the year 1710, now preserved at Colchester.

<sup>2</sup> In 1747, apparently, either one of the existing brasses was detached from its slab or a figure in brass belonging to some composition not mentioned by Holman was in existence; for John Booth, F.S.A., has added the following note to Holman's manuscript: "The Effigies on Brass is now (1747) kept in the Chest in the Vestry." He does not make it clear, however, which brass this note refers to.

<sup>3</sup> *Manual*, p. 53.

<sup>4</sup> *History of Essex*, vol. i., 450 n.

merchant's marks on their tombs. Doubtless, they were, at that time, merchants who had acquired considerable wealth as ship-owners and traders, rather than gentry. They, or some of them, resided on an estate called "Jacob's," in Brightlingsea, but it is no longer so called. Members of the family built a great part of the fine Perpendicular church of the parish, with its lofty and beautiful tower, as shown by the appearance of their merchants' marks on various parts of it. They also built the chapel, known as the Beriffe Chapel, on the north side of the chancel. Yet, strangely enough, Morant does not even once refer to the family under Brightlingsea.

Later, the chief members of the family appear to have resided at Colchester, in and around which place they held landed property. Morant refers<sup>1</sup> to a William Beriff (son of Augustin Beriff), who married Katherine, daughter of William Draper, of Aldham, and died on Nov. 21st 1594, holding the manor of Great Totham, with other property in that parish and in Aldham, leaving two sons, William and John.

William, the elder son (aged 48 at the time of his father's death), was also of Colchester. He held the manor of Moverons, in Frating and Bromley, and other property in Colchester and Greenstead. He married Frances Sicklemore, of Ipswich. It was to him, apparently, that, on May 31st 1614, Camden (Clarenceux) granted the following Coat<sup>2</sup>:—*Azure, on a chevron engrailed argent, between three trefoils slipped ermine, as many lioncels rampant sable, armed and langued gules, with this Crest: Out of a mural coronet gules, a demi-lion rampant or, ducally crowned of the first, holding in the dexter paw a trefoil slipped vert.* He died January 5th 1627 and was succeeded by his son.

John, the second son, married Joan, daughter of John Noune, of Tostock, and widow of — Reynolds, of Barfold, Suffolk. He died on October 22nd 1624, holding property in Alresford, Thorrington, Bentley, Peldon, and Langenhoe, and leaving issue.

I.—*Fragment of a shafted Bracket.* [*The remainder of the Bracket, the Effigies of two Priests placed thereon, with two Inscriptions and a Shield of Arms, now lost.*] *Date about 1400.* (*The matrices of the Priests now occupied by effigies of a widow lady and a maiden lady date 1536, described hereafter separately.*)

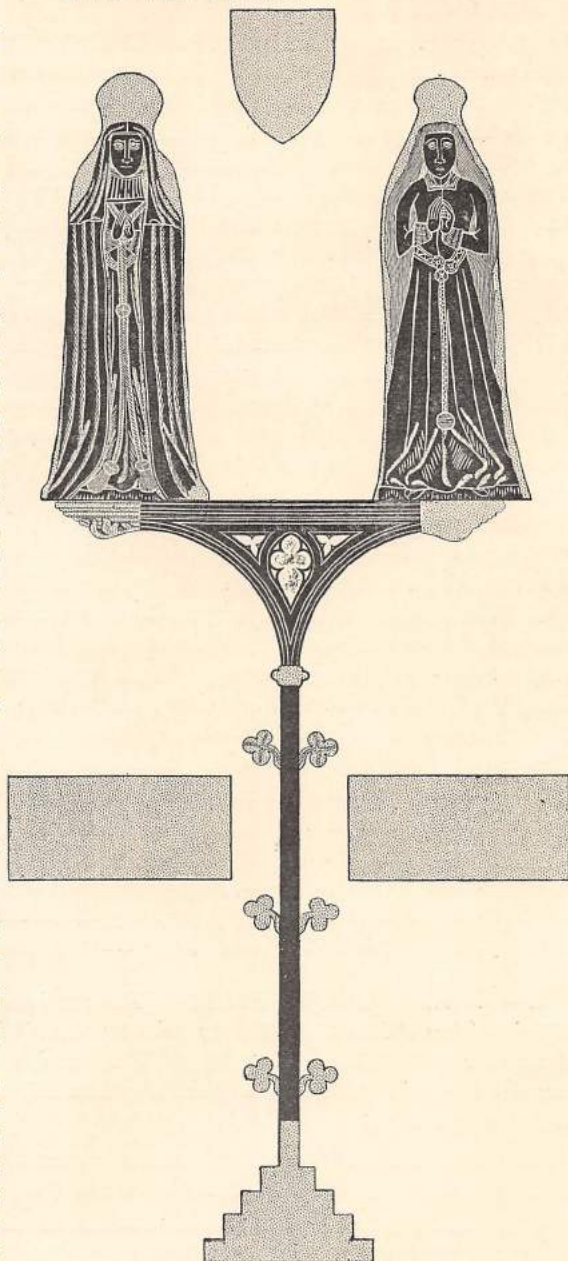
This once-fine brass, of which a mere fragment only now remains, is interesting from the fact that, mutilated as it is, it is the only

<sup>1</sup> *Hist. of Essex*, vol. i., pp. 383 and 450 and vol. ii., p. 198. See also the *Visitations of Essex*, pp. 25 and 348.

<sup>2</sup> See the *Visitation of Essex*, p. 348. Morant, however, gives (*op. cit.*, i., p. 450 n) the arms of Beriff as *On a fess gules, a lion passant or, between six trefoils slipped vert.*

bracket-brass of which even a fragment now remains in the county and that it has been utilized, in a somewhat curious manner, to commemorate two persons of a century and a half later date. The effigies of these latter persons, though affixed in the same matrices, are hereafter described as a separate brass (No. VIII.). The slab (79 by 41 in.), which lies in the Beriffe Chapel, is older than the present church.

The original effigies (each about 25 in. high) represented, as the matrices show, two coped priests, apparently of about the year 1400. The effigies at present fixed in the matrices only partially fill them. We shall hereafter give reasons for believing that the original effigies were cut down and the present ones engraved on



TWO PRIESTS (ABOUT 1400) ON A BRACKET, NOW UTILIZED FOR DAME ALICE BERIFFE AND HER DAUGHTER MARGARET (1536), AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.



Above the figures is a shield now lost. Probably it belonged to the two priests and not to the two ladies.

The bracket (44 inches in total height) was of most elegant construction. The four-stepped calvary ( $5\frac{1}{2}$  in. high) is lost. From it sprang a tall straight slender shaft ( $1\frac{1}{8}$  in. wide and 28 in. high, of which 24 inches still remain), with three pairs of trefoils sprouting from its sides at regular intervals. These are now lost, but the upper pair is shown on comparatively-recent rubbings now in the possession of the British Museum<sup>1</sup> and the Society of Antiquaries. Of the head of the bracket on which the figure stood (originally  $28\frac{1}{2}$  in. wide), only the central  $16\frac{1}{2}$  ins. remain, but the dexter end is shown on both the rubbings referred to above, and the fragment of brass itself is now preserved in the Colchester Museum.

On either side of the shaft, and at about half its height, were two inscription-plates (each 13 by 6 in.), which we believe to have belonged to the original effigies, though they may also have been utilised for the inscriptions to the later ones.

We are quite unable to identify the two ecclesiastics represented. If one was, as is probable, a vicar of Brightlingsea, it is possible he was Roger Skelton, who appears<sup>2</sup> to have died soon after 1400.

II.—*Effigies of John Beriffe (slightly mutilated), his second Wife (Amia), and five Sons and four Daughters by his first Wife, with his Merchant's Mark on a Shield. [Effigies of his first and third Wives (both named Margaret), of four Sons and one Daughter by his second Wife, and of four Sons and one Daughter by his third Wife, together with Inscription, all lost.] Date 1496.*

This large composition, once a good specimen of its kind and remarkable for having portrayed no fewer than twenty-three figures, is now sadly imperfect. It is affixed to a slab (95 by 45 in.) lying in the Beriffe Chapel.

The male figure ( $24\frac{1}{2}$  in. high) is alone represented full faced, his wives having a half-turn towards him. That portion of the plate which represents the lower half of his feet is broken off and lost. His hair is long. His plain gown, which reaches to the ankles, has wide loose sleeves which show the under-garment. From his waist-girdle hangs, on the right side, a gypcière and, on the left, a rosary of twelve beads, having a loop and ring at one end and a large tassel at the other.

The second wife (24 in. high), the only one of the three now remaining, wears a long gown cut square at the neck, where it has a

<sup>1</sup> In the Collection of Mr. T. E. A. Addington (32490, MM. 38).

<sup>2</sup> See Newcourt's *Repertorium*, ii., p. 94.

narrow trimming of fur. The sleeves, which are tight, are turned back to form very large cuffs, which are furred. Though she wears a waist-girdle, it lacks the long embroidered pendant end which appears on nearly all brasses of ladies of a slightly later date. On her head is a singularly-ugly modification of the not-altogether-inelegant,



if extraordinary, butterfly head-dress. The lady stands in a very uncomfortable attitude; her body is represented much too small; and her features are very expressionless, the nose being extremely small.

The first and third wives resembled her exactly, both in size and costume, so far as the matrices show.

The inscription ( $31\frac{1}{4}$  by  $2\frac{1}{2}$  in.) is lost. It was re-

markable for not

being placed immediately below the principal figures, a space of an inch and a quarter intervening. According to Holman, it read:—*Hic jacent Johānes Beryf and Margaveta, Amia, and Margaveta, uxores ejus, qui obiit . . . die mens. Martij 1496 : Quor. &c.*<sup>1</sup>

John Beriffe had children by each of his three wives—nineteen in all, 13 sons and 6 daughters.<sup>2</sup> They are shown in three families, each placed below their mother, but only those by the first wife now remain. They stand in a row behind one another, the five sons first and the four daughters last, ranging in height from  $5\frac{3}{4}$  to  $4\frac{3}{4}$  inches. Both wear costumes almost exactly similar to those of their parents,

<sup>1</sup> Here lie John Beriffe and Margaret, Amia, and Margaret, his wives; who died the — day of the month of March 1496; upon whose, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Nineteen children in three families also occur on a brass at Writtle.

except that the sons lack the gypcière and rosary, and the daughters have the butterfly head-dress much more pronounced.

The families by the second and third wives appear from the outline of the matrices to have resembled in every way the children by the first wife.

Just below the inscription is a shield bearing John Beriffe's merchant's mark, of which the letter B (for Beriffe) forms a component part.

III.—*Effigies of Mary Beriffe, four Sons, and one Daughter.* [*Inscription lost.*] *Date 1505.*

This brass, which lies in the north aisle, is chiefly remarkable for the curious placing of the children. It is in good condition and lacks only the inscription. The engraving is better than in many brasses of the period.

The figure of the lady (24½ in. high) has a half-turn to the right. She is attired in the usual costume of the period—a long, low-necked, over-gown, girt at the waist with a long-ended girdle, and having tight, fur-cuffed sleeves, with the pedimental head-dress. The under-gown is apparent at the neck.

The children (all of whom are engraved upon a single plate and are about 6 in. high) are placed immediately behind their mother—an unusual arrangement in brasses of this kind and date, though common enough at a later period. The four sons

(who are placed in front) have long loose hair and are uniformly attired in long, plain, loose-sleeved gowns. Their hands, though raised in the attitude of prayer, are not placed together. The daughter much resembles her mother in costume, but she wears no head-dress, her long hair hanging down her back; while her hands, though upraised, are not brought together; and her gown lacks ornament.



MARY BERIFFE AND CHILDREN, 1505.  
AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.

The inscription (22 by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in.) is lost. According to Holman, it read:—*Deus propicius esto anime Marie Beryf et omnium fidelium defunctor' et omnia puerorū suorū ut requiescant in pace. Amen. Q<sup>e</sup> obiit die Sci Mich. 1505.*<sup>1</sup>

IV.—[*Inscription (only ?) to Thomas Wright, Vicar of the Parish. Now lost.*] Date 1509.

In Holman's Manuscripts, there is mention of an inscription which no longer exists as being "upon a flat stone in the chancel" about 1710. It read as follows:—*Pray for y<sup>e</sup> Soule of Sr Thomas Knight, sometyne Vicar of this Chirch, who dyed 2 day of Octob' 1509; on whose Soule J<sup>h</sup>u have Mercy. Amen.*

A later hand (that of John Booth) adds: "This Monument is now (1747) removed into the Church Porch and there set in the Floor." It has now disappeared entirely.

Thomas Wright (Holman misread the name as *Knight*) was presented to the living of Brightlingsea on March 13th 1479-80.<sup>2</sup>

V.—*Effigy of Margaret Beriffe. [Inscription lost.]* Date 1514.

This brass, though complete, with the exception of the inscription, and of large size, is a poor specimen of its kind, the workmanship being bad. The figure is wholly lacking in grace; the lines by which it is represented are straight and inelegant; the features are wooden in the extreme; and the hands are shown of an enormous size which is totally disproportionate to the rest of the figure. Probably it was executed by a local workman. It lies in the north aisle.

The lady ( $27\frac{3}{4}$  in. high) wears the usual long gown, cut low at the neck where an undergarment covering the shoulders appears, with tight sleeves having large furred cuffs, and confined at the waist by a long-ended



MARGARET BERIFFE, 1514.  
AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.

<sup>1</sup> God be merciful to the soul of Mary Beriffe, and to the souls of all the faithful who are dead, and all her children, that they may rest in peace. Amen. She died on Saint Michael's Day 1505.

<sup>2</sup> See Newcourt's *Repertorium*, ii. p. 94.

girdle, the embroidered end of which almost reaches the ground. Her head-dress (the pedimental) has unusually long lappets.

The inscription ( $22\frac{1}{4}$  by  $3\frac{1}{4}$  inches) is now lost. According to Holman, it read:—*Pray for y<sup>e</sup> Soule of Margareta Beriff, who died 1514.*<sup>1</sup>

VI.—*Effigies of John Beriffe, his two Wives (Mary and Alice), four Sons and one Daughter by his first Wife, and two Sons and three Daughters by his second Wife, with his Merchant's Mark.* [Inscription lost.] Date 1521.

This large brass, which lacks only the inscription, is still in excellent condition. It is affixed to a slab (97 by 48 in.) lying in the Beriffe Chapel.

The male figure ( $27\frac{1}{2}$  inches high) is represented *affronté* and is placed between those of his two wives, who have each a half-turn towards him. His hair is long, and his long over-gown, reaching to the ankles, is turned back and broadly fur-trimmed from the neck to the girdle, and slightly open in front below the girdle, shewing the fur lining, which also appears inside the very loose sleeves. A gypcière is suspended from the girdle on the right side.



JOHN BERIFFE AND FAMILY, 1521, AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.

<sup>1</sup> John Booth adds: "This Monument is now (27th Augst. 1747), as I apprehend, in the Church porch, and was removed about 14 years ago, with the other of Sr. Thomas Knight [*i.e.* Wright], as the present Incumbent inform d me. J.B." If such were really the case, it must have been removed again back into the church; or perhaps Booth may refer to some other brass, now lost.

The two wives (both  $27\frac{1}{2}$  inches in height) are identically represented in almost every respect, except that the long pendant ends of their girdles are differently ornamented. Each has the long, low-necked, tight-sleeved, fur-cuffed gown and the waist-girdle of the period, with an under-garment showing at the neck.

The inscription ( $38\frac{1}{4}$  by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in.) was placed immediately below the figures, but is lost. According to Holman, it read:—*Pray for y<sup>e</sup> Soule of John Beriff, of Jacobs, & Mary & Alice his wives; w<sup>ch</sup> John deceased 26th of Aug. 1521; on whose Soules J<sup>h</sup>u have Mercy.*

The children are represented in two families which are placed below their respective mothers. Both families are peculiar in that the sons and daughters half-face one another on the same plate. The more usual arrangement is for all children of a family to be represented standing in a row behind one another, the daughters being last. All the six sons are about  $6\frac{3}{4}$  inches in height and resemble their father in every respect, except that they lack the gypcière; while the four daughters are about  $6\frac{1}{2}$  inches in height and resemble their mother in all respects, except that they lack the girdle and their heads are bare, their exuberant hair hanging down their backs.

Above the head of John Beriffe is placed his merchant's mark, engraved on a circular plate ( $5\frac{1}{4}$  inches in diameter). It is different from, and somewhat more elaborate than, that of the earlier John Beriffe (see No. II.), but both contain a conventional representation of the initial B.

This John Beriffe was not improbably a son of the John Beriffe who died in 1496 (see No. II). Under his will, he bequeathed property, either in money or shares in certain of his ships, "toward the lengthing of our lady Chapell according to the Chaucell," at Brightlingsea,<sup>1</sup>

VII.—*Effigies of William Beriffe, Mariner, and Joan his wife, with two Corner-scrolls. [Inscription, two groups of Children, and two corresponding Corner-scrolls lost.] Date 1525.*

This brass is affixed to a slab (93 by 48 in.) lying in the central aisle. Its chief interest lies in the large size of the figures, which are in good condition and have a half-turn towards one another. Both also wear rings upon their fingers and their features exhibit a worn elderly expression.

The man ( $37\frac{1}{2}$  in. high) has his hair long. He wears a short tunic, which does not quite reach to the knees and is gathered at the waist

<sup>1</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, vol. vi., n.s., p. 142.



by a belt, from which on his right side hangs a gypcière. His legs are encased in hose and his feet covered by very ugly broad-toed shoes. Over all he wears a long outer gown or robe, reaching to the ankles, open and turned back in front so as to show the fur lining, and with extremely loose sleeves which have large furred cuffs.

The woman (37 in. high) wears a long gown, cut low at the neck, where the undergarment is exposed, with tight sleeves having large furred cuffs, and falling in folds upon the ground, though leaving the toes exposed. The girdle is of a rather unusual pattern, being very loose and fastened in front by three large rosette-like ornaments, from the lowest of which hangs a chain, with a bell-like ornament at the end. A portion of the lappets of the pedimental head-dress appears at one time to have been inlaid with white-metal or enamel.

The inscription (35½ by 3 inches) is lost. It was placed immediately below the figures, and (according to Holman) read:—*Of yo<sup>r</sup> Charite pray for y<sup>e</sup> soule of William Beryff, marriner, and Joan his wife; w<sup>ch</sup> William deceased 2 Sept. 1525; on their Soules J<sup>hu</sup> have m'cy.*



WILLIAM BERIFFE AND FAMILY, 1525,  
AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.

Two groups of children (about 6½ inches in height) are lost. They appear to have consisted respectively of five sons and three daughters.

There were originally four corner scrolls, but only two remain. Both are on the sinister side and display the words *I desyre Rest* on two coils.

This William Beriffe left by will £40 towards the painting of the church roof and the providing of an altar table.<sup>1</sup>

VIII.—*Effigies of Dame Alice Beriffe and her (unmarried) Daughter Margaret.* [*Inscription, and perhaps some other Portions, lost.*] *Date 1536.*

The chief point of interest in connection with this brass (which lies in the Beriffe Chapel) is the fact that it is, in a way, palimpsest, the effigies being let into matrices which formerly were occupied by effigies of two priests of larger size and about a century and a half earlier date. These priests stood upon a very fine tall-shafted bracket with a stepped pedestal. The fragment of the pedestal which still remains supports the female effigies above mentioned. The earlier brass is, of course, an entirely-separate composition and is so described (see No. I.), but one figure serves for both.

The widow lady (22 $\frac{1}{4}$  in. high) is extremely poorly engraved. The lines are weak and irregular and the features are very ill-represented; while the hands are shown much too small and the cord of her mantle much too large in proportion to the rest of the design. She is represented full-faced and is placed on the left-hand side. Over her gown (which is girt at the waist), she wears a long outer mantle, open at the front, and held together at the upper corners by a cord of enormous thickness which passes across the chest. The ends of the cord hang down, being knotted about her middle, and ending at her feet in enormous tassels. Beneath her chin, she wears the stiffly-plaited barbe or wimple, and over her head is thrown a kerchief, the ends of which fall upon her shoulders. These form the characteristic garb of widows, but we have in Essex no other example of so late a date as this.

The second figure (also 22 $\frac{1}{4}$  in. high), also shown full-faced, represents, doubtless, an unmarried daughter of the widow described above. Her gown, which is cut low at the neck displaying an undergarment, has tight sleeves with large furred cuffs, and is girt at the waist by a loose girdle, which is fastened in front by means of three rosette-like ornaments, from the lower of which hangs a chain, having at the end a round object, probably a pomander of open metal-work for carrying scents, preservatives against infection, and such like substances. Her head is represented bare and her loose hair, which is

<sup>1</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archæol. Soc.*, vol. vi., n.s., p. 142.



extraordinarily voluminous, falls (as customary with maiden ladies) in masses down her back and over her shoulders to the level of her knees.

There are two matrices of inscription plates (each 13 by 6 in.), one on each side of the shaft of the bracket, and below the two existing effigies. It is not unlikely that they belonged originally to the two priests, but that they were utilized afterwards for the two ladies. According to Holman, the inscription (wherever placed) read:—*Of yo<sup>r</sup> Charite, p<sup>y</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> Soule of Dame Alyce Beryff, w<sup>ch</sup> dyed y<sup>e</sup> last day of Octob<sup>r</sup> 1536, & for y<sup>e</sup> Soule of Margaret her daughter; whose soules God p<sup>'</sup>don.*

We have said that the entire composition is, in a way, palimpsest. We believe that, if these effigies were detached from the stone, they would be found to be palimpsest also in another way. We believe, in fact (as already hinted), that they have been engraved upon the backs of the plates upon which were engraved the effigies of the two priests of about a century and a half earlier and which originally occupied the same matrices. There are several reasons which go to support this view. In the first place, the plates are (as the edges show) of greater thickness than those ordinarily used when the later effigies were engraved. As to the figure of the maiden lady, there can hardly be a doubt that the curious contraction in the width of the gown, which is observable about the level of the knees, was rendered necessary by the use of some earlier effigy, though, with a little more care, this contraction could have been rendered much less obvious or done away with altogether. That the existing effigies are some three inches shorter than those on the back of which they are engraved is easily accounted for; for the narrow necks of the priests would not allow of the insertion of taller effigies of the width of those now existing into the same matrices. It seems probable, therefore, that, on the death of two lady members of the Beriffe family, the effigies of two early priests were seized upon, cut down, and re-engraved on the reverse side by some clumsy workman in order to make them serve as monuments to the ladies in question.<sup>1</sup>

IX.—*Effigy of William Beviffe, with Inscription to him and his Father, John Beviffe (died 1542). Date 1578.*

This brass, still perfect and in excellent condition, lies in the Beriffe Chapel. It is a fairly-good specimen of its kind. The reference in the legend to John Beriffe, the father of the man commemorated, is peculiar, as the monument appears to have been erected solely to the memory of the son.

<sup>1</sup> Haines assigns (*Manual*, p. 54) the date "1542 (?)" to these figures—for what reason, we know not. Perhaps he has confused this brass with No. IX., in which the date 1542 occurs.

William Beriffe (17 $\frac{3}{4}$  in. high) is represented standing erect, almost full-faced, and in the attitude of prayer. His hair is short, but he wears a beard and moustache. Over an under-gown or doublet with small frills at his neck and wrists, he wears a long robe, reaching almost to the ground, and having short sleeves with long pendants, ornamented at the middle and fringed at the ends, reaching to below the level of his knees. It is slightly open and turned back in the front, showing the fur-lining. If not the ordinary gentleman's over-gown of the period, it is probably his official robe as "Deputy" of Brightlingsea. In any case, it very much resembles the robes now worn by aldermen on occasions of civic state. His shoes are low and broad-toed.<sup>1</sup>



John Beriffe of Jacobs died the xx<sup>th</sup> of Maye A<sup>o</sup> 1542.  
Here lyeth William Beriffe his eldest sonne who hath bene  
Deputie of Brightlyngsee xii yeres who had Iue wyf Ann  
his wyffe ii sonnes & iii daughters who died y<sup>e</sup> ix of Maie  
Anno domini 1578

WILLIAM BERIFFE, 1578,  
AT BRIGHTLINGSEA.

The inscription (18 by 3 $\frac{3}{4}$  inches, but  $\frac{3}{4}$  inch wider for 7 inches in the middle) reads:—*John Beriffe of Jacobs died the xx<sup>th</sup> of Maye A<sup>o</sup> 1542. | Here Lyeth William Beriffe, his eldest sonne, who hath bene | Deputie of Bryghtlyngsee xii yeres, who had Iue by Ann | his Wyffe ii sonnes & iii daughters ; who died y<sup>e</sup> ix of Maie | Anno Domini 1578.*

Morant erroneously assigns this brass to John Beriff and says<sup>2</sup> it commemorates eleven (instead of two) sons.

GREAT CHESTERFORD.—[*Effigy of a Civilian, with Foot-legend. Now lost.*] Date about 1515.

When Cole visited the church on April 19th 1744, he wrote<sup>3</sup> of this brass as follows:—

["In the South Isle], near y<sup>e</sup> S. Door, lies a marble w<sup>th</sup> a Figure of a Man on it, but y<sup>e</sup> Inscription at his Feet is gone."

<sup>1</sup> Holman, writing about 1710, quaintly described the figure as that of "a venerable man in brass, in the habit of a mayer, his hands folded in token of devotion."

<sup>2</sup> *Hist. of Essex*, vol. i., p. 450 n.

<sup>3</sup> *Add. MS.* 5806, fo. 57.



A CIVILIAN, ABOUT 1515, FORMERLY  
AT GREAT CHESTERFORD (after Cole).

Cole also gives a sketch (here reproduced), which depicts a man of about the date given above, attired in the long, ample, furred gown of the period, and with a rosary hanging from his belt.

It is now impossible to say who he may have been.

GREAT CHESTERFORD.—[*Effigies of a Civilian and wife (probably William and Katheryn Holden), their 8 Sons and 2 Daughters, with Foot-legend. All now lost.*] Date 1523 (?).

No fragment of this brass now remains, though a slab bearing much-defaced matrices from which it may have been reaved still exists, partly covered by the pewing. Cole, who visited the church on April 19th 1744, describes it<sup>1</sup> as follows:—

“In y<sup>e</sup> middle of this Chapel lies a large Marble, wth y<sup>e</sup> Figures of a Man & a Woman, wth 8 Boys & 2 Girls under y<sup>m</sup>; the Inscription also gone.”



Cole also gives a rough sketch (here reproduced) depicting the man in long, loose, furred robe: the woman apparently in the garb of a widow; but the crudity of the sketch makes it a little difficult to follow details.

It is impossible to identify with certainty the persons commemorated; but there is little doubt they are the William and Katheryn Holden to whom a brass formerly existed in the Chapel on the south side of the chancel, as mentioned by both



WILLIAM AND KATHERYN HOLDEN (?), FORMERLY AT GREAT CHESTERFORD (after Cole).

Weever (1631),<sup>2</sup> and

Salmon (1740).<sup>3</sup> According to the latter, the inscription of this brass read: “Pray for the Sowles of William Holden and Katheryn his Wife, Founders of our Ladie’s Chauntre, which William

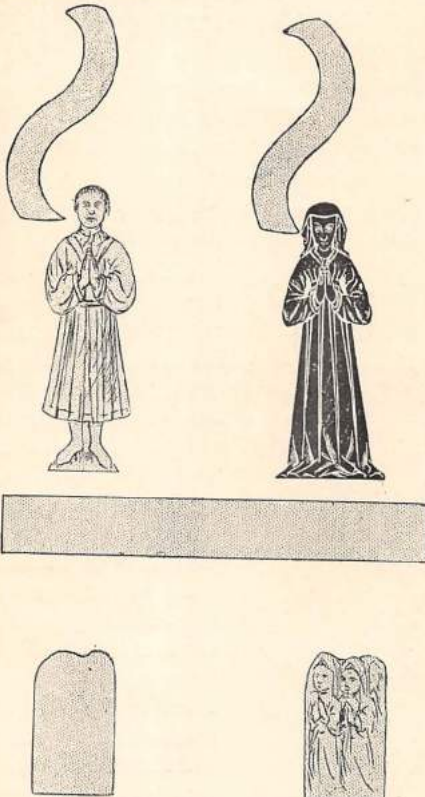
<sup>1</sup> *Add. MS.* 5806, fol. 54.

<sup>2</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, p. 624.

<sup>3</sup> *History of Essex*, p. 137.

decessyd 2 Dec. 1523."<sup>1</sup> As to the fate of this Chantry, Salmon gives a good deal of information.

CHRISHALL.—*Effigy of a Lady.* [*Effigies of her Husband (a Civilian), 2 (?) Sons, & 3 (?) Daughters, with Inscription & Mouth-scrolls lost.*] Date about 1450.



CIVILIAN AND FAMILY ABOUT 1450, AT  
CHRISHALL (*partly after Cole*).

figure is cracked across the middle.  
represent.<sup>3</sup>

The daughters, as sketched by Cole, lack all detail.

The scrolls (each about 11 inches long) and the inscription (19½ by 2½ inches) are lost.

Of this composition, the inscription, mouth-scrolls, and sons have been long missing, having disappeared before the Rev. Wm. Cole visited the church on March 15th 1745-6; but the effigies of the man and of the daughters, which are now lost, then remained. It is now in the south aisle, but was formerly in the nave.

The male effigy (13 inches high) represented (according to Cole's sketch<sup>2</sup> here reproduced) a man wearing the ordinary civilian's gown of the period.

The female effigy (12½ inches high) is represented wearing the long gown of the period, girt just below the breast, open and turned back at the neck, and with fairly loose sleeves, fur-trimmed at the wrists, where the sleeves of an under-garment are visible. Upon her head is a kerchief, the edges of which fall upon her shoulders. The We cannot say who it may

<sup>1</sup> Weever gives the date as 1524

<sup>2</sup> For his note on and sketch of the brass, see his MS. Collections (*Add. MSS.*, 5811, fo. 39).

<sup>3</sup> It cannot represent Mrs. Lettice Martin, who bequeathed money for the good of the poor of all parishes (said to be thirty-two in number) visible from the tower of the church, as surmised by Wright (*History of Essex*, vol. ii., p. 189 n), for that lady died in 1562.

CHRISHALL.—[*Effigies of a Civilian, his Wife, three Sons (one a Priest), and six (?) Daughters, with Inscription. All now lost.*] Date about 1530.

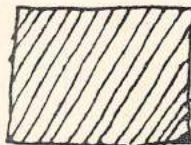
All we know of this brass (of which even the slab has disappeared) is derived from the note-books of the Rev. William Cole, who visited the church on March 15th 1745-6 and made a sketch of it, which we here reproduce. He also says of it<sup>1</sup>:—

"In y<sup>e</sup> Middle Isle lie several stones disrob'd of their Brasses. In y<sup>e</sup> Middle, between y<sup>e</sup> two first Pillars, lies an old grey marble with y<sup>e</sup> Figures in Brass of a Man and his Wife, with an Inscription at their Feet, which is stolen away. At his feet are 3 Sons, whereof one is in a Priest's Habit. At her Feet were about 6 or 7 Daughters, but y<sup>e</sup> Brass is reaved."

Cole's sketch shows the man in a long, loose, fur-trimmed robe, with gypcière and rosary hanging from his girdle, and the woman in close-fitting low-necked gown, confined at the waist by a girdle having a long pendant end, and wearing the curious tam-o'-shanter-like cap which appears on various brasses of this period, supposed to have been executed by a company of engravers belonging to Cambridge.

Although Cole says one of the sons is attired "in a priest's habit," his sketch is too crude to show it. It is curious that our only two other Essex instances in which ecclesiastics are represented in groups of sons (about 1460 and about 1485 respectively) occur in the adjacent parishes of Wenden Lofts and Clavering.

We have no idea who the persons depicted were.



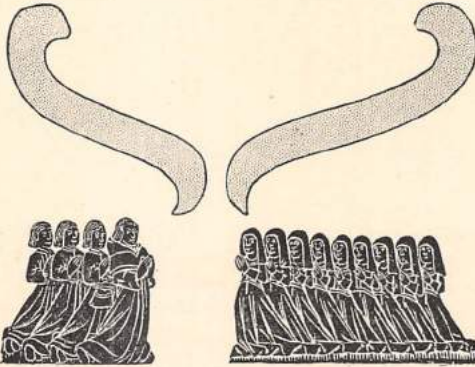
A CIVILIAN AND FAMILY, ABOUT 1530, FORMERLY AT CHRISHALL (after Cole).

<sup>1</sup> *Add. MSS.*, 5811, fo. 39.

CLAVERING.—Effigies of — Songar (Civilian: mutilated), his Wife, four Sons (one a Priest), and nine Daughters. [Inscription, upper half of Male Effigy, and two Mouth-scrolls (to the children) all lost.]. Date about 1485.



Hic jacet in titulo Songar  
Et sua dilecta uxor sub  
quam fuerat horu pater



— SONGAR AND FAMILY, ABOUT 1485,  
AT CLAVERING.

This brass is no longer to be found in the church, even the slab from which it was reaved having disappeared. When Cole visited the church on May 6th 1743, he found the brass (then in the aisle) quite perfect.<sup>1</sup> The various portions shown in our figure (with the exception of the upper half of the male effigy and the dexter half of the inscription) were loose at the Vicarage when we rubbed them in June, 1881.<sup>2</sup> The other portions (alluded to above) are now probably lost. We figure them from a rubbing taken by Thomas Fisher about the year 1810, and now belonging to the Society of Antiquaries.

The two principal effigies form an almost exact counterpart to those of Thomas and Alicia Broke, 1493, at Barking, but the children (all represented kneeling) differ on the two brasses.

Of the male effigy (originally 18 inches high) only the lower 11½ inches

<sup>1</sup> Except, perhaps, the scrolls, of which he says nothing.

<sup>2</sup> They are probably still there, but we have been unable to ascertain.

remains. He wore the long, plain, civilian gown of the period, which reached to the level of his ankles, and was girt at the waist by a belt from which a rosary hung beneath his right arm.

The figure of his wife (17½ inches high) shows her in a long gown falling in folds upon the ground. It is open down the front nearly to her middle—widely so at the neck, where it is turned back and broadly trimmed with fur; it is girt below the breast by a narrow transverse girdle. Traces of an under-garment are seen at the neck and wrists.

Of the four sons, the three hindmost are attired in a costume much the same as that of their father, except that the foremost of the three wears a gypcière, which was, perhaps, intended to indicate that he was a merchant. The eldest of the four sons is represented as a priest in academic attire, wearing cassock, tippet, and hood. Our only other instance in Essex in which one of a group of sons is represented as an ecclesiastic occurs in the adjacent parish of Wenden Lofts, where the eldest of the four sons of William and Katherine Lucas (about 1460) is represented as an abbot, being intended, doubtless, for John Lucas, Abbot of Waltham, who died in 1475.<sup>1</sup>

The nine daughters are all attired alike, but differently from their mother. Their gowns are not fur-trimmed and their girdles are narrow and diagonal: not transverse.

The inscription is lost; but is given by Salmon (1740)<sup>2</sup> and Cole (1743).<sup>3</sup> It ran:—

*Hic jacet in tumulo Songar tumulatus in illo,  
Et sua dilecta cōjux sub marmore tecta,  
Qui fuerāt horū pater et mater puerorū.*<sup>4</sup>

There appears never to have been a date.

We know nothing of the connection between the persons commemorated and the parish of Clavering. Cole says that members of the Songar family were for a long period Lords of the Manor and Patrons of the Rectory of Stocking Pelham, in Hertfordshire.<sup>5</sup>

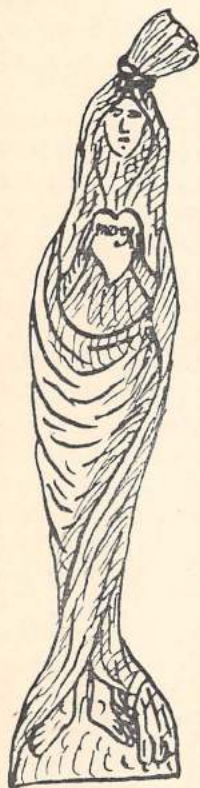
<sup>1</sup> There was formerly, also, at Chrishall (another adjacent parish) another brass on which the eldest son was represented (see above: p. 33) as a priest.

<sup>2</sup> *Hist. of Essex*, p. 150.

<sup>3</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5804, fo. 131.

<sup>4</sup> Here lies Songar, buried in this tomb;  
Also his beloved wife, enshrined under marble;  
Who were father and mother of these children.

<sup>5</sup> See also Newcourt's *Repertorium*, i, p. 167.



WOMAN IN SHROUD,  
ABOUT 1490, FORMERLY  
AT DEBDEN (after Cole).

DEBDEN.—[*Effigy of a Woman in a Shroud, with Inscription. Now lost.*] Date about 1490.

Cole, speaking of some brasses he found loose in the parish chest when he visited the church on October 26th 1745, says<sup>1</sup>:—

“In the same Chest lies a brass figure of a Woman in her winding sheet, with her hands holding her heart, on which is written *Mercy*. This was reaved off some of the Stones in the Chancel, in all probability, tho’ I could see none to fit it. Those that remain are partly covered by grass and dirt.

Cole’s sketch (here reproduced) represents an emaciated corpse: not a skeleton, as was common. The shroud is tied above her head and open below her feet, both which parts of the body are exposed, though the rest is concealed.

We have no clue as to the lady’s identity.

Our only existing shroud-brasses are those to a priest (about 1480), at Stifford, and a woman (? Katherine Leventhorp, 1502), at Little Horkesley, both of which we have already figured.<sup>2</sup>

DEBDEN.—[*Effigy of a Civilian, with two Shields and Inscription. Now lost.*] Date about 1510.

Cole tells us<sup>3</sup> all we know of this brass. He writes as follows as a result of his visit, on October 26th 1745, to the church, then newly rebuilt:—

“On the floor of the . . . [ruined Church] still lie three old grey marble grave stones, seemingly before the steps of the Altar; that in the middle had the figure of a man in a praying posture, & a gown on, & 2 coats above his head, & Inscription at his feet, all dispoiled of their brasses; but, luckily, in the chest belonging to the Church is preserved a figure of a man, which fits the plate [? the matrix into which the plate was let], with one of the shields, enough to show to whom it belonged; for the arms on it are: *A Chevron int. 3 lion's paws erect & erased, within a border; on a chief, an Eagle displaid*. Now these Arms belong to the family of the Browns of Essex; and, in an old MS. of Heraldry in my possession, the Arms of Sir Anthony Browne are thus blazoned: *G., a Chevron int. 3 Lion's paws & a border a.; on a cheif o., an Eagle displaid s.*”

<sup>1</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5806, fo. 132.

<sup>2</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archæol. Soc.*, vol. vii., pp. 21 & 245.

<sup>3</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5806, fo. 132.



Cole's sketch of the brass (here reproduced) represents a civilian in the long, fur-lined gown of the period, turned back at the neck and down the edges, with a gypcière hanging from his belt.

While Cole is correct in assigning the arms on the shield he found to Browne, it does not follow that the man commemorated belonged to that family. If the shield really belonged to the dexter side of the composition, as represented by Cole, he may have been so; but, as Cole expressly says the shield was loose, it may have come equally well from the sinister side; in which case, the man represented was probably that member of the Cutte family, of Debden, who married a Browne.<sup>1</sup>



A CIVILIAN, ABOUT 1510, FORMERLY AT DEBDEN (after Cole).

HEMPSTEAD.—*Effigies of a Civilian, his wife, 4(?) Sons, & 6(?) Daughters.* [*Inscription lost.*] *Date about 1530.*

This brass, which lies in the nave, is not only imperfect (lacking the inscription) and of small size, but is in a very worn and rather battered condition. It possesses marked individual features which stamp it as probably the work of the company of local (probably Cambridge) artists by whom the somewhat-similar brasses at Audley End, Great Chesterford, Elmdon, and Toppesfield (already figured by us) were made. The crudity of the execution, which gives to the figures a wooden and inelegant pose, is still further evidence of its provincial workmanship.

The figure of the man (15 inches high) represents him full-faced. His long hair, parted in the middle, falls upon his shoulders. He wears a long, loose-sleeved, furred gown. At his waist is a belt, from which hangs, in front, a gypcière and, at his right side, a rosary

<sup>1</sup> See *Visitations of Essex*, p. 166.

of eight beads, very irregularly engraved in a single row, and ending in a very large tassel.

The lady (also 15 inches high) wears the curious tam-o'-shanter-like cap, and a close-fitting gown, with tight-fitting fur-cuffed sleeves. The gown is cut low at the neck, an under-garment being visible at the opening, which is rounded, instead of being, as usual, more or less square. The long embroidered end of her girdle hangs down in



front, instead of appearing more or less to one side as is usually the case.

The effigies of the four sons (all engraved on a rectangular plate  $5\frac{3}{4}$  by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in.) are much effaced by wear; but they appear to be represented kneeling, with a half-turn to the left, and attired in gowns similar to that worn by their father.

The figures of the five daughters (also on a rectangular plate,  $5\frac{1}{2}$  by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  ins.) are made out with difficulty, owing to the worn state of the plate; but the two in front appear to be kneeling, those behind standing, all with a half-turn to the right. Their gowns appear to be similar to that of their mother, but cut square, instead of round, at the



CIVILIAN, WIFE, AND CHILDREN,  
ABOUT 1530, AT HEMPSTEAD.

neck and with small capes or tippetts covering the shoulders. They appear also to be wearing bonnets of a curious kind.

The inscription (14 by  $2\frac{1}{2}$  ins.) was lost when Cole visited the church on June 19th 1744.<sup>1</sup>

We cannot identify the persons commemorated.

HEYDON.—[*Effigies of a Man and his two Wives, with Inscription & perhaps other Accessories; also Effigies of seven Daughters in a Group, with separate Foot-legend giving their Names, and of five Sons in a Group, with separate Foot-legend giving their Names, & perhaps two other Groups of Children. All now lost.*] Date about 1455.

This brass, of which no trace remains, was seen and described by

<sup>1</sup> *Brit. Mus. Add. MSS.*, 5806, fo. 84.

Cole when he visited the church on May 18th 1744. He says<sup>1</sup> of it:—

"In the middle of the Chancel, before the Step of the Altar, lies a grey marble, which has lost its 2 figures of a man and woman, but [?one figure of a woman remains and] several children are represented under them [i.e., ? under the lost figures] viz., about the middle, 7 Girls & under them is wrote: Katryn, Johān, Elizabeth, Elizabeth, Margarite, Elianore, & Katryn. Under the Boys, on the left, is this written: Stephen, John, Stephen, Thomas, & George."



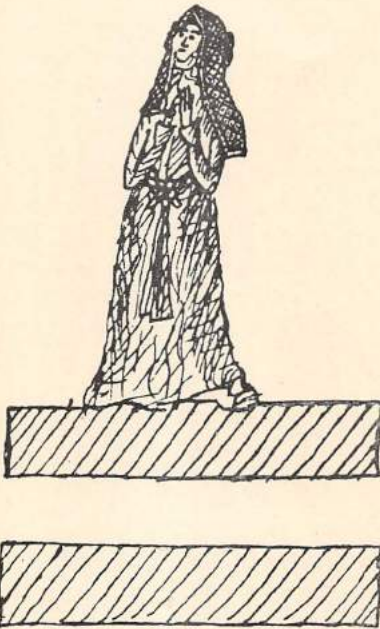
LADY AND CHILDREN, ABOUT 1455, FORMERLY AT HEYDON (after Cole).

The meaning of this description is not quite clear. We take it, however, Cole intended to state that, in addition to the effigy of the lady shown in his sketch (here reproduced), there had formerly been effigies of her husband and his first wife, though it is strange that Cole omitted to sketch their matrices, as he usually did.

<sup>1</sup> Add. MS., 5806, fo. 79.

The lady shown in the sketch wears the horned head-dress and the long gown of the period, having full sleeves, tight at the wrists. The addition of separate legends giving the names of each child is unusual, and we have now no other instances in the county, except at Boreham and West Ham.

We know not who the brass represents.



LADY, ABOUT 1515, FORMERLY AT HEYDON  
(after Cole).

HEYDON.—[*Effigy of a Lady, with Foot-legend and another Inscription below it. Now lost.*] Date about 1515.

Cole tells us all that we know of this brass. When he visited the church on May 18th 1744, the effigy remained, though the inscription plates were both reaved. He says<sup>1</sup> :—

[“ In the Chancel], at a good distance from the N. Wall, lies another marble, disrob<sup>d</sup> of two brass inscriptions, but the Figure of a Woman remains.”

Cole's sketch (here reproduced) shows a lady of about the year 1515, wearing the pedimental head-dress. Her gown is confined at the waist by a sash, and her cuffs are turned forward over her hands. Who she may have been, we have no means of knowing.

LITTLEBURY.—*Ten Brasses (now all either lost or torn from their Slabs) detailed hereafter. Dates from about 1480 to 1624.*

The fate of the Brasses at Littlebury well illustrates the dangers to which these interesting memorials of the dead are exposed, even in the present day, when a more enlightened sentiment on such matters than formerly existed prevails.

The Rev. William Cole, the well-known Cambridge Antiquary, who visited this church on October 28th 1745, has left us, in his very voluminous manuscripts now in the British Museum,<sup>2</sup> an account of

<sup>1</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5806, fo. 79.

<sup>2</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5811 fl., 1-7

the church and its contents, as he found them. He describes, in addition to one matrix, no fewer than nine distinct brasses, of most of which he gives rough sketches.

For one hundred and twenty-six years, these brasses remained in the church, loosing only one or two small portions through chance abstraction; but, in 1871, during a restoration of the church, every one of those which remained was torn from its slab, while the slabs were either disposed of, broken up, or buried beneath the new tiled pavement. The brasses—ten plates in all—have remained, until recently, loose in the unlocked church chest in the vestry, and might have been carried off by any evil-disposed person.

This remarkable act of desecration of tombs was not perpetrated during the incumbency of the present vicar; but surely he would perform a commendable public service if he would have the brasses affixed, for the sake of safety, either to new slabs or (if that should not be convenient) to the walls, as has been done at Harlow, Chigwell, Upminster, and elsewhere in the county.

Of the nine distinct compositions noticed by Cole as existing in 1745, two have now disappeared altogether, four have lost some of their portions, and only three remain perfect. Of the two which have disappeared altogether, we give Cole's sketch of one; whilst of the other he gives no sketch. Of the four which have lost portions since Cole's time, we have given illustrations of all the lost portions of which Cole gives sketches; while, in one case (No. IX.), we have given figures of missing portions of which our friend the late Mr. C. K. Probert, of Newport, had rubbings.

In the case of all the compositions, we have been guided by the sketches in Cole's Manuscripts as to the original arrangement of all the various parts, both existing and lost. Without the information supplied by his notes, it would have been quite impossible to sort the various loose plates remaining.

I.—[*Effigy of a Man in Armour, with Inscription and Shield of Arms. All now lost.*] Date — ?

Of this brass, no trace now remains. Only the matrix was in existence in 1745, when Cole wrote. He says of it<sup>1</sup>:—

"At ye head of ye Aforesaid Stone with ye half Figure of a Man on it,<sup>2</sup> in ye middle of ye Chancel, lies an old Grey Marble disrob'd of a Person in Armour, with an Inscription at his Feet and Arms under it."

It is, of course, quite impossible to guess from what Cole says either the approximate date of this brass or who it represented.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, fo. 5.

<sup>2</sup> See No. VII.

II.—*Effigy of a Civilian.* [*Effigies of his two Wives, — (?) Sons, and 6 Daughters, with Inscription, three Mouth-scrolls, and Representation of the Holy Trinity (?) all lost.*] *Date about 1475.*

The inscription belonging to this brass, the wife on the sinister side, the group of sons, the representation of the Holy Trinity (?), and portions of the mouth - scrolls were all lost in 1745, when Cole wrote; but the effigy of the other wife, the group of daughters, and the fragments of the mouth - scrolls have since disappeared.

Cole's sketch of the brass as it was in his day is here reproduced, the existing effigy being inserted instead of Cole's sketch of it. He says<sup>1</sup> :—

"Toward ye E. End of ye S. Isle, lies an old grey CIVILIAN & FAMILY, ABOUT 1475, AT LITTLEBURY (mainly after Cole) marble, on which were formerly a Man between his 2 Wives, with Scroles fr' their Mouths, on wch were Supplications to a Saint over their Heads, but ye name is industriously



<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 6b & 7.

broken out of each of them and only *Sancta* \* \* \* *Miserere Nobis* left. The Woman on his right hand is also stolen away, as is ye Inscription at their feet, and ye Brass Plate for ye Sons. 6 Girls remain under ye remaining woman."

The single effigy (19 inches in height) which now remains is that of the husband, and represents him standing erect and full-faced on a small piece of foreground, with a slipped trefoil between his feet, upon which are long pointed shoes. His hair is long and his face clean-shaven. His long gown, which reaches to his ankles, has loose-fitting (but not bagged) sleeves; it is narrowly fur-trimmed at the bottom and round the neck and cuffs; and is confined at his waist by a girdle or strap, the pointed end of which hangs down some distance on his left side. From this belt, beneath his right arm, hangs a gypcière and over it a double-tasselled rosary of twelve beads. His cap rests upon his right shoulder, the scarf hanging down in front to the level of his knees.<sup>1</sup>

It appears from Cole's sketch that the effigies of the two wives were exactly alike. They wore the horned head-dress, with tight-fitting, low-necked gowns, girt at the waist with plain narrow girdles without pendants, and close-fitting sleeves with furred cuffs turned back.

The names of the Saint, or Saints, which Cole says had been "industriously broken out" of the three mouth-scrolls before his visit in 1745, had probably been removed soon after the Reformation by descendants anxious to avoid the destruction of the memorial at the hands of puritan bigots.

III.—*Effigies of a Civilian and Wife.* [*Foot-legend and Escutcheon (?) lost.*] *Date about 1510.*

We still have all of this brass which remained in 1745, when Cole visited the church. He gives a sketch of it and the following description<sup>2</sup>:—

"In ye Middle Isle, also just before ye Pulpit, lies another large old Grey Marble, with 2 large figures in Brass on it—a Man and his Wife. Above their heads was a Brass Plate, and an Inscription at their feet; but ye Brasses are stolen away from both Places."<sup>3</sup>

The two figures (both about 25½ inches in height) have a half-turn towards one another. Both wear enormously broad-toed shoes.

<sup>1</sup> There is an almost exactly-similar figure at Hempstead.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 5b & 6.

<sup>3</sup> Haines mentions (*Manual*, p. 60) some "scrolls"; but, as Cole says nothing of any such, Haines has probably confused this brass with No. II.



CIVILIAN & WIFE, ABOUT 1510, AT LITTLEBURY. Cole's time.

The man is attired in a long civilian's gown, open at the neck and broadly turned back upon the shoulders, displaying the fur-lining and allowing an under-garment to be seen. It is also slightly open below the waist and has one edge turned back displaying the fur-lining which is also apparent at the cuffs of the very loose sleeves.

The woman wears the pedimental head-dress, a long low-necked close-fitting gown, confined at the waist by a loose buckled girdle the long ornamented end of which hangs nearly to the ground.

The inscription-plate (about 28 by 6 inches) and the upper plate (about 8 by 6 inches), which probably bore a shield of arms, were both lost in

IV.—*Effigy of a Priest.* [*Inscription and Figure from above his Head lost.*] *Date about 1510.*

This brass, which is in good condition, is of very poor workmanship. The pose is inelegant; the features ugly; the folds of the drapery wooden; and a large amount of feeble "shading" appears on the vestments. Cole says of it (1745)<sup>1</sup>:—

"Close to ye step wch separates ye Nave and Chancel, in ye Middle Isle, lies an old Grey Marble, with ye perfect and neat Figure of a Priest, wth ye Cup and Wafer, as immediately after Consecration and going to ye Elevation. Above his Head was a Brass Plate with some Picture, I suppose; but this is reaved off, as well as ye Brass Inscription at his Feet. This was design'd, in all probability, for one of ye Rectors of this Church."

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 5b & 6.



The figure (18½ inches in height) represents the Ecclesiastic wearing the usual Eucharistic Vestments, and holding in his hands a chalice with wafer inscribed IHS. The stole and maniple are each ornamented by a longitudinal row of quatrefoils: the apparel of the alb, by a sort of interlacing design, like wicker-work, in squares. His shoes are of unusual breadth and roundness.

The inscription must (judging from Cole's sketch) have measured about 12 by 5 inches.

We are quite unable to judge from Cole's sketch of the matrix what the figure (about 6 inches square) above the priest's head may have represented. It appears to have had a flat top and bottom and irregularly indented sides, in outline somewhat resembling the conventional rolls of tobacco often seen suspended above the shops of tobacconists. It was probably a representation of the Trinity.

This brass might very well represent William Baxter, rector, who probably died shortly before March 30th 1515, when his successor was appointed, or William Robinson, vicar, who probably died shortly before August 26th 1516, when his successor was appointed<sup>1</sup>; but this is merely a guess in the absence of the inscription.



PRIEST, ABOUT 1510,  
AT LITTLEBURY.

V.—*Effigy of a Civilian.* [*The Effigy of his Wife and of another of her Husbands, with Inscription and a Representation of the Holy Trinity (?) lost.*] *Date about 1520.*

The inscription belonging to this brass and the representation of what appears to have been the Holy Trinity above the heads of the effigies were both lost in 1745, when Cole wrote, but the effigy of the woman and of another of her husbands, which then existed, are now gone. Cole, who gives a sketch of the brass as it was in his day, says<sup>2</sup>:—

"In ye same middle Isle, about ye midst of it, lies another old Grey Marble, with three Figures in Brass on it, *viz.*, a woman between her two Husbands. Above their head and at their Feet were two brasses, ye one for a Picture and ye other for ye Inscription, but this also has [*? these also have*] shared ye same fate as ye two preceding ones."

<sup>1</sup> See Newcourt's *Repertorium*, vol. ii., p. 394.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 5b & 6.



CIVILIAN, ABOUT 1520,  
AT LITTLEBURY.

The figures of the two husbands appear from Cole's sketch (here reproduced) to have been identical. That which still exists (12½ inches in height) is shown separately, as it differs slightly from Cole's sketch, Cole having, apparently, erred in drawing it. It lacks elegance and grace, and is, in all probability, the work of a provincial artist. The man is represented full-faced, with the outer edges of his hands brought together in front of his breast in a somewhat unusual manner. His hair is long and his face clean-shaven. He is attired in a long gown, confined at the waist by a girdle, from which, beneath his right arm, hangs a gypcière. Above the girdle, the edges of the gown are turned back upon the shoulders, displaying the fur lining, which is also seen at the openings of his very loose sleeves.

The effigy of the lady was also (according to Cole's sketch) full-faced. She has a



kerchief thrown over her head and falling upon her shoulders. The gown has fairly-tight sleeves. From the girdle hangs down in front an enormous rosary, reaching almost to the ground and consisting (if Cole's sketch is to be relied upon) of about thirty-five beads.



LADY WITH TWO HUSBANDS, ABOUT 1520, FORMERLY AT  
LITTLEBURY (after Cole).

We have not many other instances in Essex in which a lady and two of her

husbands are represented together on a brass, but one other instance occurs at Little Horkesley, where Dame Bridget Marney (1549) is represented with her husbands, Thomas Fyndorne and John Lord Marney.

VI.—*Inscription (only) to James Edwards, Bailiff. Date 1522.*

This inscription (on a plate 19 by 4 inches) seems never to have accompanied any effigy. Cole (who makes no reference to the former existence of an effigy and gives no sketch of the plate) says 'it was formerly on "an old Grey Marble" which lay "in y<sup>e</sup> Middle of y<sup>e</sup> S. Isle."

Hic iacet Jacobus Edwardus quondam satelles de hadstok et hadhām tum  
hui<sup>9</sup> ville qui oī mox p'bitate hoc mun<sup>9</sup> gessit et candidissimū fauo-  
redm̄ Redman Elien<sup>9</sup> epi. hoc fuit<sup>9</sup> est officio. tandē fatali peste pie  
expirans. iij<sup>9</sup> calendas Octobris. Anno gr̄e. 1522.

INSCRIPTION TO JAMES EDWARDS, 1522, AT LITTLEBURY.

The inscription reads as follows:—*Hic iacet Jacobus Edwardus quondam satelles de hadstok et hadhām tum | hui<sup>9</sup> ville, qui oī mox p'bitate hoc mun<sup>9</sup> gessit, et candidissimū fauo- | re dñi Redman Elien<sup>9</sup> epi. hoc fuit<sup>9</sup> est officio. tandē fatali peste pie | expirans iij<sup>9</sup> calendas Octobris. Anno gr̄e. 1522.*<sup>2</sup>

The word *satelles* has given rise to considerable discussion. Salmon was puzzled by it.<sup>3</sup> Cole was not clear as to its meaning and has inserted in his note-books copies of letters discussing the matter, one of which was written by Strype, the historian, on January 21st 1705-6, and others of which appeared in the *Cambridge Chronicle* of July 6th 1765. Strype was of opinion that it might be translated "steward" or "bailiff," in which we think there is no doubt he was right.

This inscription affords one of the earliest instances in Essex—perhaps quite the earliest—of the use of Arabic numerals to indicate the date.<sup>4</sup> They are, as will be seen, of very curious formation, especially the "5."

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 6 & 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Here lies James Edwards, formerly Steward [or Bailiff] of Hadstock and Hadham [Herts.], afterwards of this Manor, who discharged this duty with great integrity and served this office with the most distinguished approval of the Lord Bishop Redman of Ely, expiring at length devoutly through a fatal pestilence on the 4th of the Calends of October [Sept. 28th] in the year of grace 1522." The Bishop of Ely, here mentioned, was Richard Redman, D.D., previously Bishop of St. Asaph and of Exeter. He died at his Palace in Holborn, London, on August 24th 1505 (see Dugdale's *Monasticon*, vol. i., 1817, p. 456).

<sup>3</sup> See *History of Essex*, p. 134.

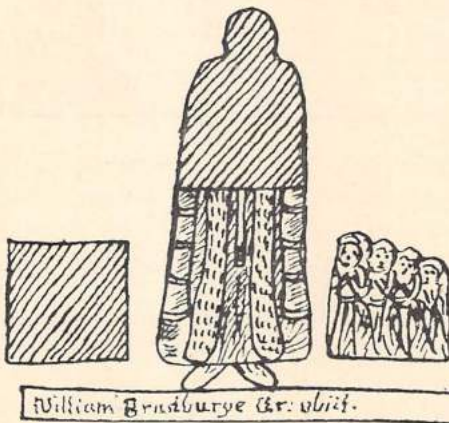
<sup>4</sup> The date 1493, in Arabic numerals, on the brass of Ursula Gasper, at Leyton, is modern, having been added in quite recent times.

VII.—[*Effigies of William Bradbury, Esquire, — (?) Sons, and 4 Daughters, with Foot-legend. All now lost.*] Date 1551.

When Cole visited the church in 1745, he noticed and described a brass of which no trace now remains. He says of it<sup>1</sup>:—

"In y<sup>e</sup> middle of y<sup>e</sup> Chancel, at y<sup>e</sup> head of y<sup>e</sup> Middlemost black marble, but a little higher, lies an old Grey Marble, with an half figure of a Man in Brass, in a gown. Y<sup>e</sup> upper part of him is reaved, as is y<sup>e</sup> Plate on one side of him for y<sup>e</sup> Figures of his Sons. That on his left side has 4 Daughters. On a small label at his feet is this Inscription, without y<sup>e</sup> Date being ever filled up:—*William Bradburye Ar. obiit \* \* \* \**"

From the sketch which accompanies Cole's description and is here reproduced, it appears that the effigy of William Bradbury represented



WILLIAM BRADBURY, 1551, FORMERLY AT  
LITTLEBURY (after Cole).

him attired in the long gown of the period, with furred turned-back edge and long striped false-sleeves. Cole's sketch of the children is too small and rough to show any details of costume. It appears from the county historians,<sup>2</sup> that this William Bradbury became possessed of the Manor of Catmere Hall, in this parish, in 1539, and that his descendants held it for about a century. His origin is not very clear, but he was probably descended from, or connected with, Thomas Bradbury, who was Sheriff of London in 1498, Lord Mayor in 1509, and died January 9th 1511, holding the Manor of Manuden, the Manor of Bawdy's in South Weald, and other properties in Essex. William Bradbury married Eleanor, daughter of — Fuller. He died on August 26th 1551, possessed also of Gifford's, in Great and Little Sampford, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Robert, to whom also there was formerly a brass (see No. VIII.) in this church.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon, p. 134; Morant, II, pp. 395-396, &c.; and Wright, II, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> See also *Visitations of Essex*, p. 28.

VIII.—[*Shield of Arms and Inscription to Robert Bradbury. Now lost.*] *Date 1577.*

Cole, after describing the brass to William Bradbury, continues as follows<sup>1</sup> :—

“ On another Grey Marble wch lies higher, or more to y<sup>e</sup> W. of y<sup>e</sup> Chancel, and under y<sup>e</sup> stalls on y<sup>e</sup> S. Side, is only a thin label with an Inscription and these Arms on a [Brass] Plate: viz., *Quarterly 1st & 4th, a Chevron Erm. int. 3 Buckles*, for Bradbury, *2nd & 3rd, a Chevron int. 3 Chess Rooks*, [for ]. This is y<sup>e</sup> Inscription:—*Robert Bradburys Ar. obiit 13 Jan. 1576.*

Of the brass thus described, no trace is now discoverable. It appears from what Cole says that there never was an effigy—merely the shield of arms he describes and the brief inscription.

Robert Bradbury was the eldest son of the William Bradbury whose brass has been already described (see No. VII). He married Margaret, daughter of — Tyrrell, Esquire, of Beeches, in Rawreth, but died without issue on January 15th 1576-7, when he was succeeded by his next brother, Henry, whose first wife lies buried in this church and is commemorated by a brass (see No. IX.).

IX.—*Effigy of Jane Bradbury (wife of Henry Bradbury, Gentleman), with Inscription. [Effigies of one Son and three Daughters and an Escutcheon lost.] Date 1578.*

This brass was quite perfect in the time of Cole (1745), who gives a sketch of it and the following description<sup>2</sup> :—

“ Exactly underneath this [the Altar], between y<sup>e</sup> rails of y<sup>e</sup> Altar and y<sup>e</sup> North Wall, lies a very handsome Grey Marble, with y<sup>e</sup> Figure of a Woman on it in Brass, in y<sup>e</sup> Dress of the time she lived in; with a Son on one side and 3 Daughters on y<sup>e</sup> other side of her; and an Inscription at her feet: and under them these arms: viz., *A Chevron Erm: int: 3 Buckles*, for Bradbury, impaling, *A Fess int: 2 Mulletts*,<sup>3</sup> for Poulton. Under y<sup>e</sup> Woman's Feet is this Inscription:—[See post].”

The group of daughters and the escutcheon have been lost, we believe, some time; but the effigy of the son remained, until comparatively recently. Our figure is derived from a tracing which we took, many years ago, from a rubbing then in the possession of our friend the late Mr. C. K. Probert, of Newport.

The figure of the lady (24½ inches in height) admirably depicts the costume of the period. She wears a small French hood and a gown which has small frills at the neck and wrists; tight sleeves, very prominently striped transversely; and a petticoat richly embroidered down the front with a diagonal diaper pattern. Worn above all this

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, fo. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 1b & 2.

<sup>3</sup> As Burke (*General Armory*) gives three mullets, Cole was probably mistaken in the number.

is a plainer sleeveless over-gown, tied at the waist by a bow, but open thence downwards to display the elaborate embroidery of the petticoat. It is also open and turned back at the neck (the "revers" being prominently striped like the sleeves) and stands up behind the neck in a sort of high "Medici Collar." The costume, which is thoroughly characteristic of the period, very closely resembles that worn by

Joan Strangman, about 1575, formerly at Wimbish (an adjacent parish),<sup>1</sup> by Katherine Staverton, 1575, at Cunnor, Berks.,<sup>2</sup> and by Dame Margaret Harper, 1573, at St. Paul's, Bedford<sup>3</sup>—so much so as to leave little doubt that all four were engraved by the same hand.

The effigy of the son, William by name, (on a rectangular plate  $6\frac{1}{4}$  by 2 inches) was also placed immediately above the inscription, in front of, and with a half-turn towards, that of his mother. It represents him in the costume of a child, consisting of a sort of tunic reaching to the knees, confined by a sash at the waist, and with small frills at the neck and wrists, hose, and shoes.

Cole's sketch of the plate on which the daughters were engraved is too small to show details.



JANE BRADBURY, 1571, AT LITTLEBURY.

The inscription (on a plate measuring  $20\frac{1}{2}$  by  $6\frac{1}{4}$  inches) reads:—  
*Here Lyeth the body of Jane, the wife of Henry Bradburye, | Gent.,  
 Daughter of one Gyles Poulton, of Desboroughe, in the | Countie of Northmton,  
 Gent., whoe in her Lyfe not onlye Lyved | Vertuouslye, but fynished her  
 daies with fayth in Christ most | Joyfullye. She died the third of August  
 1578. And had Issue of | her bodye by y<sup>e</sup> said Henry: William, Marye,  
 Anne, & Elizabeth.*

<sup>1</sup> Figured by us in the *Transactions of the Monumental Brass Society*, vol. iii. (1899), p. 262.

<sup>2</sup> Figured by Haines (*Manual*, p. 246).

<sup>3</sup> Figured by Macklin (*Monumental Brasses*, p. 30).

The escutcheon appears from Cole's sketch to have been placed immediately below the inscription and to have borne, [*Sable*], a *chevron ermine between three round buckles* [*argent*], the *tongues hanging down*, for *Bradbury*, impaling [*Argent*], a *fess between two* [*? three*] *mullets* [*sable*], for *Poulton*.

The husband of this lady was, as stated, Henry Bradbury, of Catmere Hall, Littlebury, second son of William Bradbury, whose brass (see No. VII.) has been already described. Their son William (named above) ultimately succeeded his father in the ownership of Catmere Hall, which remained in the possession of his descendants until one of them sold it, about the middle of the seventeenth century to the Earl of Suffolk. After the death of his wife on August 3rd 1578 (as recorded above), Henry Bradbury married, secondly, Mary, daughter of William Nichols, Esquire, of Saffron Walden, by whom also he had children.<sup>1</sup> He died on February 27th 1586-7.

X.—*Effigy of Anne Byrd, with Inscription.* [*Escutcheon and representation of a Skull lost.*] *Date 1624.*

This design, which has now lost two of its accessory portions, was perfect in 1745, when Cole visited the church. He gives<sup>2</sup> both a sketch and the following description of it:—

“Close to this [*i.e.*, another brass], on y<sup>e</sup> N., lies a Grey Marble, with y<sup>e</sup> Figure of a Woman on it in Brass, in y<sup>e</sup> Habit of her Times with a Hat on her Head and hanging sleeves to her coat. Above her Head are y<sup>e</sup> Arms of Byrd, on a small square of Brass, viz. *Qrty. in y<sup>e</sup> 1st. Qr. an Eagle displayed.* Below her feet, on another Piece of Brass, is an Inscription, & below that, on a 3rd. small Brass, is a Death's Head Engraved. This is y<sup>e</sup> Inscription: [*See post.*]”

The effigy of the lady (20½ inches in height) represents her with a half-turn to the right and apparently in the act of walking, though with her hands raised in the attitude of prayer. She wears the broad-brimmed hat of the period, with wreathed crown, a large neck ruffle, a perfectly plain bodice, cut very low at the neck, with close-fitting sleeves, a skirt devoid both of bows and embroidery, a kind of cloak affixed to the shoulders and hanging down the back, and low shoes tied with bows over the instep.

<sup>1</sup> According to *The Visitations of Essex* (p. 28), Jane Bradbury was a second wife of Henry Bradbury, but this is probably an error.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, ff. 3b & 4.

The inscription (on a plate measuring  $17\frac{1}{2}$  inches by  $6\frac{1}{4}$ ) reads;—  
*Here lyeth buried Anne Byrd, late the | wife of Thomas Byrd,<sup>1</sup> gent., being*  
*y<sup>e</sup> daugh<sup>r</sup> | and heire of one Robert Perkin, of Little- | burye, long since*  
*deceased. She was buried | the 29 of October 1624.* It is odd that the  
 date of her *burial*, and not that of her death, should be given.



HERE LYETH BVRIED ANNE BYRD LATE THE  
 WIFE OF THOMAS BYRD GENT. BEING Y<sup>e</sup> DAUGH<sup>r</sup>  
 AND HEIRE OF ONE ROBERT PERKIN OF LITTLE-  
 BVRYE, LONG SINCE DECEASED SHE WAS BVRIED  
 THE 29 OF OCTOBER 1624.



The escutcheon was engraved upon a plate (measuring  $6\frac{1}{2}$  by  $5\frac{1}{2}$  inches) placed above her head, and was surrounded by a scroll-work border. It bore *Quarterly* [argent & sable]; in the first quarter, an eagle displayed [of the second]; on the fess point, a crescent for a difference, for Byrd. Our representation of it is derived from a tracing taken by us many years ago from a rubbing then in the possession of Mr. C. K. Probert.

The skull was, according to Cole's sketch, engraved on the centre of a square plate placed below the inscription.

The Thomas Byrd mentioned in the inscription as the husband of the lady commemorated was heir to Sir William Byrd, Kt., a Judge, who appears to have belonged to a prominent Walden family concerning which we have already given some information.<sup>2</sup> Thomas Byrd survived his wife six years, dying on September 5th 1630, aged 66 years. He left a son William, a Doctor of Laws, who died without issue on November 24th 1639, aged 31, and a son Thomas, of

Littlebury, who married and, dying on September 4th 1640, left a large family.<sup>3</sup> Salmon says<sup>4</sup> that inscriptions to the three last-named existed in Littlebury Church in 1740.

<sup>1</sup> Not *Byrch* as Haines has it (*Manual*, p. 60).

<sup>2</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archæol. Soc.*, vol. vi., n.s., p. 165.

<sup>3</sup> *Morant*, vol. ii., p. 596.

<sup>4</sup> *Hist. of Essex*, p. 134.



NEWPORT.—[*Half-effigies of a Civilian and Wife, with Inscription. Now lost.*] *Date about 1470.*

All we know of this brass is that, when the Rev. William Cole visited the church on January 5th 1743-4, he found it existing in the nave and made a sketch of it, which we here reproduce. Of the slab, Cole says<sup>1</sup> that it was “disrobed of its Inscription, but has still two half-figures in brass on it, still remaining, of a man and his wife.”

The male effigy wears a tight-sleeved gown, girt at the waist by a narrow belt, from which hangs a rosary.

The female effigy wears also a tight-sleeved gown, with the horned head-dress.



CIVILIAN AND WIFE, ABOUT 1470, FORMERLY AT NEWPORT (after Cole).

It is impossible to say who the figures were intended to represent.



RAINHAM.—*Effigy of a Lady, with two Shields.* [*Effigy of her Husband (a Civilian) and Inscription lost.*] *Date about 1475.*



LADY, ABOUT 1475, AT RAINHAM.

For our knowledge of the existence of this brass (which has, we believe, never before been recorded), we are indebted to our friend Mr. E. Bertram Smith. The slab (54 by 26 in.) was brought to light, we understand, during the recent restoration of the church and now lies in the south aisle; but only the two shields remain affixed to it, the effigy being now loose at the vicarage. It

<sup>1</sup> *Add. MS.*, 5806, fo. 30.

was, we hear, preserved for thirty or forty years at a cottage in the village and was about to be thrown away when the Vicar's attention was fortunately called to it.

The effigy of the lady (only  $12\frac{1}{4}$  in. high) represents her wearing an unusual form of the butterfly head-dress and a very low-necked, high-waisted, tight-sleeved gown, with fur-trimmed collar and cuffs.

The inscription (13 by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in.) is lost.

The two shields, placed at the top, are, we believe, the only tilting-shields forming part of a brass now remaining in Essex. That on the dexter side bears: *On a griffin segreant, three barrulets.* Several friends have assisted us in our efforts to identify this unusual coat, but without avail. It does not appear to be given in any list of English coats. The shield on the sinister side bears: *Within a bordure, a mullet pierced.*

We have failed to find any definite clue as to the identity of the people commemorated.

---

## THE MILBOURNES OF GREAT DUNMOW CO. ESSEX.

BY THOMAS MILBOURN.

THE following abstract account of the several families of MILBOURNE of Great Dunmow, is drawn from a large collection of notes collected by me during the past forty years for the purposes of a history and pedigree of the Milbournes of the county of Essex, but which notes are far too voluminous for publication in the *Transactions* of this Society to the exclusion of other papers of county archæological interest, and I hope that only in its condensed form it may contain information of interest to the local historian and genealogist, to whom I shall be pleased to furnish references to the several deeds, registers, wills, etc., from which the extracts have been obtained, hoping in return to be favoured with any information which he or they may possess relating to the family and its offshoots.

In my paper on "The Milbournes of Essex and the King's Otter Hounds, 1385—1439,"<sup>1</sup> the first name recorded is that of "John de Melbourne," master of the otter hounds, 1385. This is the earliest reference to the name in the county. To him succeeded in the mastership William Melbourne, who is described as of Gillingham, co. Somerset (an error for Dorset, as Gillingham lies in that county, but close on the borders of Somersetshire), with another John Melbourne as his deputy, who is described as of Stratford-le-Bow, co. Essex. This clearly shows a connection between the Milbournes of Somerset and Dorset and the Milbournes of Essex. I may mention that at this early period there was a family of Milborne or Milbourne residing at Milborne Port, co. Somerset (about ten miles from Gillingham). An old and influential county family settled there in the time of Edward II., if not earlier. From this connection I infer that the Milbournes came into Essex from Somersetshire, and not from Derbyshire as recorded in the Herald's Visitation of the county of Essex, more particularly as they were in the county upwards of one hundred years before the date of residence of Ralph Milbourne at Great Dunmow.

It is probable that John de "Melbourne," master of the king's otter hounds in 1385, 9 Ric. II., is the John "Melbourne" the king's

<sup>1</sup> Printed in the *Transactions* of this Society, vol. v., part 2, pp. 87—94, new series.

servant, to whom the king, by his privy-seal dated at Westminster the 24th November, 1384 (8 Ric. II.), granted the office called "Forester de Fee" in Gillingham Forest, co. Dorset, previously held by John Hayme (*Patent Roll*, 8 Ric. II., part 1, numb. 10). And I think there can be no doubt but that the said "John de Melbourne" was the progenitor of the several families who were resident in the county of Essex from the end of the fourteenth to the middle of the nineteenth century. I had long deemed the name to have become extinct in the county, until recently I discovered that the name is still extant at Great Wakering, near Southend, and I am informed that there is also a family of the name at Colchester and another among the labouring population at Stebbing.

The arms of the family of Milbourne of the manor of Markes are given in the Herald's Visitation, 1634, as: Gules a chevron between three escallops, argent, with a mullet for difference—a mark of cadency of a third son; but as there does not appear to have been a third son at any time as successor to the manorial estate, I deem this mark of cadency to apply to John Milbourne (the son of Ralph Milbourne), who purchased the manor of Markes; and if this is the case, it is probable that William Milbourne of Great Dunmow in 1543, and Robert Milbourne of Great Dunmow in 1524, who were men of position and means, were his brothers.

As the family name "Milbourne" is evidently the correct spelling, I have adopted it throughout the following paper; but it occurs in the various registers, wills, records, deeds, etc., as Milborn, Milborne, Milbourne, Milbourn, Mylborne, Mylbourne, Melborne, Melbourne, etc.

#### FIRST FAMILY OF MILBOURNE OF GREAT DUNMOW.

RALPH MILBOURNE, gentleman, of Great Dunmow, co. Essex (said to have derived from co. Derby, but probably from co. Somerset). This gentleman is the first recorded as of Great Dunmow. The 26th February, 1519, 10 Hen. VIII., a deed of indenture was made at Great Dunmow confirming to him and others a cottage and garden adjacent in Great Dunmow to his use and the use of his heirs and assigns for ever. He was a resident in Great Dunmow and assessed to a subsidy in 1524, 15 Hen. VIII. He married<sup>1</sup> and had issue:—

JOHN MILBOURNE, gentleman, of Great Dunmow. This gentleman appears to have held property in Great Dunmow, prior

<sup>1</sup> There was a Katherine Milbourne, widow, at Dunmow, assessed at 4d. on goods, 4s. to a subsidy, dated the 12th November, 1543, 35 Hen. VIII.

to his purchase of the manor of Markes, as I find he was assessed at 6s. 8d. on goods and chattels, £40, and 4d. on lands, 20s. per annum to subsidy, dated 12th November, 1543, 35 Hen. VIII. being a subsidy granted the same year. He purchased the manor of Markes in Great Dunmow, with houses and land in Little Dunmow, High Easter, and Great Waltham, of John Ferrers, esquire (son and heir of Humphrey Ferrers, knight deceased), and Barbara, his wife, in 1559, 1 Elizabeth, for £40, and held his first Court Baron of the manor the 15th May, 1559.<sup>1</sup> His will was dated the 13th December, 1569, but unfortunately it is missing (otherwise no doubt some interesting information might be obtained as to his relationship to the family of William Milbourne, and the family of Robert Milbourne, hereafter mentioned). He married ELYNOR, daughter of . . . . MEADE, of Great Easton, co. Essex. This lady died and was buried the 9th April, 1590, at Great Dunmow. Her will bears date the 9th November, 1589, and was proved at Great Dunmow the 26th April, 1590, she bequeathed three bushels of wheat to her daughter Elynor to give to the poor people of Dunmow. He had issue:—

JOHN MILBOURNE, son and heir, of whom hereafter. SEE **A.**

GEORGE MILBOURNE, gentleman, of Stebbing, in co. Essex.

He died the 23rd March, 1596. His will bears date the 20th March, 1596, 38 Elizabeth, and was proved the 4th May, 1597. The inquisition post-mortem was held at Chelmsford the 27th September, 1598, 40 Elizabeth. He married DOROTHY, daughter of WILLIAM BOURNE OR BOWRNE, esquire, of Bobbingworth, co. Essex. Her name appears in the Herald's Visitations of Essex, 1552, 1612—15, and 1634, she married *secondly* EDWARD ELDRED, of Stebbing, co. Essex. He had issue:—

ELYNOR MILBOURNE, eldest daughter. She is not mentioned in her father's will, dated the 20th March, 1596, but she is mentioned in the inquisition post-mortem, held at Chelmsford the 27th September, 1598, as aged 20 years and more, and that she was then married to WILLIAM STOCK.

MARGARET MILBOURNE, second daughter, age 18 years and more the 27th September, 1598. Married (before the 20th March, 1596, 38 Elizabeth), to JAMES REYNOLDS (afterwards Sir James Reynolds) of Castle Camps., co.

<sup>1</sup> The several extracts from the Court Rolls of the manor of Markes are taken from the original Rolls in the British Museum, Add. Charters Nos. 22681—26823.

The Rolls Nos. 26827—26820, are only fragmentary, commencing October, 1382, 1 Ric. II., the last being a Roll temp., Ric. II.

Cambridge, a gentleman of great repute in the County, and lived hospitably. This lady was his *first* wife. He died March 1650, and was buried at Castle Camps. the 22nd of the same month, aged 80 years.<sup>1</sup> She had issue:—

JAMES REYNOLDS, eldest son of Bumpstead Helions. Died and was buried the 8th June, 1662. He married . . . . daughter of SIR WILLIAM DE GREY, of Merton. co. Norfolk, and had issue:—

JAMES REYNOLDS, born 28th April, 1633, at Merton, co. Norfolk. Died at Bury St. Edmunds, Easter Day, 1690, and was buried in the grave of his grandfather, at Castle Camps. He married *first*, 1655, JUDITH, daughter of SIR WILLIAM HERVEY, Bart., of Ickworth, co. Suffolk (she was twenty years his senior), and had issue:—

WILLIAM REYNOLDS, first son. Died 17th Dec., 1675, and was buried at Ickworth.

CAPTAIN ROBERT REYNOLDS, second son, of Bumpstead Helions, co. Essex. Born in 1658. Married his cousin, KEZIAH TYRREL, daughter of THOMAS TYRRELL, of Gipping, by his wife, Keziah, a younger daughter of Sir William Hervey, Bart., of Ickworth Hall. Mrs. Reynolds is mentioned as “a beautiful and virtuous lady in the dissolute age of Charles II., by whom she was admired.” She died the 5th April, 1694, aged 36. She had issue:—

SIR JAMES REYNOLDS, knt., Chief Justice of the common pleas in Ireland. Born 1684, admitted to Lincolns Inn 27th February, 1704. Died 20th May, 1747. Buried at Castle Camps, co. Cambridge, where a monument exists to his memory.

THOMAS REYNOLDS, entered as second child. Died November 22nd, 1686. Buried at Ickworth.

THOMAS REYNOLDS, entered as third child. Buried at Ickworth. 17th December, 1687.

<sup>1</sup> By his *second* wife, the daughter of Sir Robert Mordaunt, he had a son, General Sir John Reynolds, a celebrated general of the Army, of the Parliament, and Member of Parliament for the County of Galway, and Mayo in 1654, knighted by Cromwell at Whitehall 11th June, 1655, lost in a storm at sea in 1657.

ISABELLA REYNOLDS, entered as first child. Born 6th April, 1681. Married JOHN HATLEY, esquire, of London and Kirkby Hall, co. Essex, the 10th November, 1696. Had issue:—

SUSANNAH HATLEY, married SHEPPARD FRERE, of Roydon Hall, co. Norfolk. Held Thurndeston Hall in 1764. This gentleman is said to have possessed an original portrait of the Lord Chief Baron Reynolds. Had issue:—

JOHN FRERE, F.R.S., eldest son and heir of Roydon, co. Norfolk, and Addington, co. Surrey, High Sheriff of co. Suffolk, 1776. M.P. for Norwich, 1800. Married JANE, daughter and heiress of JOHN HOOKHAM by his first wife the daughter of STEPHEN POMFRET. He had issue:—

1. JOHN HOOKHAM FRERE, son and heir.
2. EDWARD FRERE. Married MARY ANNE, daughter of JAMES GREENE, esquire, of Turton Tower, and Clayton Hall, co. Lancaster. M.P. for Arundel, 1759. He had issue seven sons and five daughters (*See Burke's Landed Gentry*).

SIR HENRY BARTLE EDWARD FRERE the fifth son. Created baronet May, 1876, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., born 1815. Married 10th October, 1844, CATHERINE, second daughter of Major General the Right Hon<sup>ble</sup> SIR GEORGE ARTHUR, Bart., G.C.H. Died 29th May, 1884, at Wressil Lodge, Wimbledon, age 69. Had issue:—

SIR BARTLE COMPTON ARTHUR FRERE, only son. Born 24th October, 1854. Captain and brevet-major 1st battalion

Rifle Brigade. Succeeded his father in 1884.

MARY ELIZA ISABELLA FRERE.

CATHERINE FRANCES FRERE.

GEORGINA HAMILTON CHICHESTER FRERE.

ELIZA FREDERICA JANE FRERE.

SUSAN REYNOLDS, entered as fourth child.

Buried at Ickworth, 24th March, 1696.

JUDITH REYNOLDS, living 1738-47.

He married *secondly* at Grays Inn Chapel, London, 29th June, 1682, BRIDGET daughter of . . . . . PARKER. She died in 1723 and was buried at Castle Camps, and had issue:—

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE JAMES REYNOLDS, Lord Chief Baron of England (he was the only child of this marriage). Born at Clerkenwell the 6th January, 1686. Admitted into Lincolns Inn 19th January, 1705; Serjeant-at-Law, 20th December, 1714; Judge of the Queen's Bench 2nd March, 1724; Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer 28th April, 1730, which he resigned in 1738. Died 9th February, 1738/9, aged 53. Buried at St. James's church, Bury, co. Suffolk. Thuandeston Hall was his seat in 1734. Married *first* MARY, daughter of THOMAS SMITH, esquire (the former possessor of Thuandeston Hall), she died the 18th July, 1736. He married *secondly*, ALICE, daughter of . . . . . RAINBIRD. This lady married *secondly*, Robert Plampin, esquire, of Chadacre Hall, co. Suffolk. She died a widow in 1776, and was buried at Farnham St. Genevieve, Suffolk.

SIR ROBERT REYNOLDS, second son.

THOMAS REYNOLDS, third son, clerk in holy orders.

. . . . . REYNOLDS, daughter. Married Sir Selwin Parker . . . . of . . . . . co. Sussex.

RALPH MILBOURNE, yeoman of Roxwell, in co. Essex, 26th June, 1584, second son. He was also of Great Braxted, the 19th November, 1611. He sold all his tenement called "Hamonds" in Church End, Great Dunmow, and the lands called "Unyons," etc., bequeathed to him by his father, by his will dated the 13th December, 1569, to his brother, John



Milbourne, of Great Dunmow, for the sum of £420—deed dated the 26th June, 1584. He died in 1595. He married . . . . . daughter of . . . . . and had issue :—

RICHARD MILBOURNE, son and heir of Rivenhall, co. Essex.

He was a minor at the death of his father in 1595, and under the guardianship of his uncle, Thomas Milbourne. He was a legatee under his grandmother's will, dated the 9th November, 1589. The 19th November, 1611, 9 James I., he sold to Charles Chibore, esquire, of Messing, for £120 a parcel of land in Messing, containing 1 acre, 1 rood, more or less. (There were evidently other children issue of this marriage besides Richard).

THOMAS MILBOURNE, yeoman, of Lindsell, co. Essex. He was a legatee under his mother's will, dated the 9th November, 1589. He was assessed at 8s. on goods, £3, at Lindsell in 1598, and was living, the 19th November, 1611, at Wigborough, co. Essex. He was defendant in a chancery suit, of which the Rev. William Harrys, of Messing, co. Essex, was plaintiff, whose petition, dated 9th June, 1600, 42 Elizabeth, had reference to a "Burgas" tenement in Messing and divers parcels of land, etc., under a deed of mortgage from Eliazar Ardeley to Ralph Milbourne of Great Broxted. He married FRANCES, daughter of . . . . . and had issue :—

SARAH MILBOURNE. She was a legatee under her grandmother's will dated the 9th November, 1589.

WILBOROWE MILBOURNE, first daughter, legatee under the will of her mother dated 9th November, 1589. Married THOMAS POMFRETT, of South Bemfleet, co. Essex. [The 22nd September, 1579, Thomas Pomfrett, of South Bemfleet, co. Essex, obtained a licence out of the bishop of London's office to marry Wybore Melbourne, of Great Dunmow.] Had issue :—

ELYNOR POMFRETT.	}	Elynor Milbourne, the mother
THOMAS POMFRETT.		of Wilborowe, left legacies to
GEORGE POMFRETT.		Elynor, Thomas, and George Pomfrett by her will dated 9th November, 1589.

MARY MILBOURNE, second daughter, legatee under will of her mother dated 9th November, 1589.

PHILLIPA MILBOURNE, third daughter. Married . . . . . Had issue :—

1. . . . .	}	Legatees under their grandmother's will dated 9th Nov. 1589.
2. . . . .		
3. . . . .		
4. A CHILD UNBORN.		

ELYNOR MILBOURNE, fourth daughter, legatee under the will of her mother, 9th November, 1589. Married WILLIAM PARKER. Had issue:—

EDWARD PARKER, legatee under will of grandmother dated 9th November, 1589.

JOHN PARKER, legatee under will of grandmother dated 9th November, 1589.

MARTHA PARKER, called Mary in second copy of grandmother's will. Legatee under will of grandmother dated 9th November, 1589.

MARGERY MILBOURNE, fifth daughter, legatee under will of her mother dated 9th November, 1589.

**A.**—JOHN MILBOURNE, gentleman, eldest son and heir, of the manor of Markes in Great Dunmow. He married JOANE, daughter of JOHN SLADE, of Coventry in co. Warwick, and niece of Richard Weston, of Skrynes in Roxwell, co. Essex, judge of the Common Pleas.<sup>1</sup> The marriage settlement was enrolled on the Recovery Rolls in Easter term, 1570, 12 Elizabeth (*this deed is in a very decayed state*). He died the 17th May, 1594, 36 Elizabeth, at Great Dunmow. His will bears date the 14th May, 1594, and was proved at Stebbing the 13th January following (1594 *stilo angliæ*). The inquisition post-mortem was held at Stratford Langthorne the 8th June, 1594, 36 Elizabeth. Joane Milbourne, his widow, died and was buried at Great Dunmow the 10th January, 1621. Her will nuncupative was made in December or January, 1621. He had issue:—

ROBERT MILBOURNE, son and heir, of whom hereafter. SEE **B.**

JAMES MILBOURNE, of whom hereafter. SEE **C.**

JOHN MILBOURNE, died and was buried at Great Dunmow the 11th February, 1585.

ELIZABETH MILBOURNE, first daughter. Married (before 1594) EDWARD STOKES, of Beauchamp Roding, co. Essex. He is mentioned in his father-in-law's will dated 14th May, 1594. She had issue:—

THOMAS STOKES, living 1594, being a legatee under the will of his grandfather, John Milbourne, 14th May, 1594.

PHILLIPA MILBOURNE, second daughter (? if married in 1593). Married RICHARD BARNARD, of Dunmow, co. Essex. This

<sup>1</sup> Her mother was the sister of the judge. The grandson of this Judge Weston, viz., Sir Richard Weston, knight, of Skrynes, was Knight of the Shire for co. Essex, 1614; Ambassador to the States of Germany 7th July, 1620; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1622; Ambassador to Bohemia subsequently Brussels, *temp* James I.; elevated to the peerage as Baron Nayland, 13th April, 1628; Lord Treasurer of England and invested with the Garter; created Earl of Portland 17th February, 1633. Died 13th March, 1634. He was twice married, and had issue by both wives.

gentleman had a patent grant or licence dated 2nd December, 1593, 36 Elizabeth, to convey his manor, lordship, grange or farm, called Deynes *alias* Deanes House, anciently called Depden Grange, with its appurtenances in Depden, co. Essex, to John Milbourne and Thomas Milbourne, for the use and benefit of him and his wife Phillipa, and the heirs of him, the said Richard by the said Phillipa created, etc.

ANNE MILBOURNE, third daughter, under age and unmarried in 1594. Married THOMAS AYLETT, gentleman, co. Essex (first son of Robert Aylett, of Coggeshall). This gentleman signed the Herald's Visitation in 1634. She had issue:—

THOMAS AYLETT, of Lincolns Inn, London, son and heir apparent. Married LETTICE, daughter and heiress of THOMAS WILLIAMS, Serjeant to Queen Elizabeth and King James I. He had issue:—

THOMAS AYLETT, age about seven years in 1634. Born about 1627.

PENELOPE AYLETT, first daughter.

LETTICE AYLETT, second daughter.

ROBERT AYLETT, second son.

JOHN AYLETT, third son.

WILLIAM AYLETT, fourth son.

NICHOLAS AYLETT, fifth son.

JAMES AYLETT, sixth son.

JHEROMY AYLETT, seventh son.

ANNE AYLETT, first daughter. Married WILLIAM BRAGG.

DOROTHY AYLETT, second daughter. Married CHRISTOPHER ELLIS, of London.

MARY AYLETT, third daughter. Married JOHN SORRELL, gentleman, of Waltham parsonage, co. Essex, living 1634 [second son of Robert Sorrell, of Writtle, co. Essex], and had issue:—

MARY SORRELL, only daughter, age about five years in 1634.

JUDITH AYLETT, fourth daughter.

ELIZABETH AYLETT, fifth daughter.

ALICE AYLETT, sixth daughter.

MARY MILBOURNE, fourth daughter (under age and unmarried in 1594). Married GEORGE AYLETT, of Dunmow, co. Essex.

JUDITH MILBOURNE, fifth daughter (under age and unmarried in 1594). Married EDWARD COOKE, of London.

ELYNOR MILBOURNE, sixth daughter (called Ellen in her father's will); under age and unmarried in 1594. Married JOHN VINCENT, of Dunmow, co. Essex.

**B.**—ROBERT MILBOURNE,<sup>1</sup> gentleman, of Markes in Dunmow. Born 2nd June, 1587. He is stated to have been of full age of 21 years on the 2nd June, 1608. He signed the Herald's Visitation, 1634—"Robert Milbourne." He was one of the trustees of the estate of William Lord Maynard under his will dated the 20th August, 1638, 14 Charles I. His first recorded view of Frankpledge and Court Baron of the manor of Markes was held the 17th October, 1625. He married ALICE, daughter of WILLIAM BRAGG, gentleman, of Bulmer, co. Essex. He bequeathed £5 to the poor people of Dunmow, to be distributed amongst them when his body was buried. He died 1659. His will bears date the 18th September, 1658, to which he added a codicil dated the 20th of the same month. Both the will and codicil were proved at London the 1st April, 1659.

<sup>1</sup> In his will dated the 18th September, 1658, he left bequests to his cousin James Clarke and James, the son of the said James Clarke; also a bequest to his cousin Robert Milbourne, son of his cousin James Milbourne, and a bequest of £5 to his cousin Sarah Milbourne, who was also witness to his will.

James Milbourne, the cousin before mentioned, must have been the son of either Thomas or Ralph Milbourne: this I have yet to ascertain; but cousin Sarah Milbourne, to whom he bequeathed £5, was probably the grandchild of either of the said Thomas or Ralph,—and also the Sarah Milbourne who married Andrew Jenoure; but it is quite certain that if her father was Robert Milbourne, he was not the Robert Milbourne of Markes, although stated to have been his daughter.

ROBERT MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow. Married . . . . daughter of . . . .

This gentleman is called Robert Milbourne of Markes in Dunmow, but he cannot be the Robert Milbourne who held the manor of Markes from 1625—1659. He had issue:—

SARAH MILBOURNE (? if the cousin Sarah Milbourne to whom Robert Milbourne, gentleman, by his will dated the 18th September, 1658, bequeathed £5). Sir Andrew Jenoure, bart., her father-in-law, by his will dated the 26th February, 1690, bequeathed her £50, to be paid unto her one year after his decease. She married ANDREW JENOURS, esquire, of Biggots, co. Essex (son of Sir Andrew Jenoure, bart.), who predeceased his father. She had issue:—

SIR MAYNARD JENOURS, baronet, of Great Dunmow (succeeded his grandfather). Born about 1672. Married ELIZABETH, only daughter and heiress of SIR JOHN MARSHALL, knt., of Sculpins and Finchingfield, co. Essex, and had issue:—

SIR JOHN JENOURS, son and heir, of whom hereafter. SEE \*

MAYNARD JENOURS, second son, an officer in the Army

JOSEPH JENOURS, third son. Married ELIZABETH, daughter of JOHN SANDFORD, esquire, of Bishops Stortford, co. Essex.

MARY JENOURS. Married The Honourable CAPTAIN JAMES BELLENDEN, fourth son of John Lord Bellenden, and brother of Mary Bellenden, who married Colonel John Campbell, afterwards fourth Duke of Argyle. She had issue:—

LIEUTENANT JAMES BELLENDEN. Died unmarried. Will proved the 28th January, 1763.

ELIZABETH BELLENDEN. Married EDWARD KELLEY.

JEMIMA BELLENDEN.

MARY BELLENDEN. Married SIR RICHARD MURRAY, bart.

MARGARET JENOURS. Baptised at Great Dunmow 5th May, 1666.

\* SIR JOHN JENOURS, bart., of Biggots. Died 17th April, 1739. In his will described as of Great Dunmow. Married JOANE, only daughter and heiress of RICHARD DAY, gentleman, of North Weald, co. Essex. Had issue:—

SIR RICHARD DAY JENOURS, baronet. Died *sine prole*. March, 1744.

SIR JOHN JENOURS, baronet, second son. Captain of the Guards. Died *sine prole*. the 15th August, 1755, when the baronetcy became extinct.

**C.**—JAMES MILBOURNE, gentleman, youngest son, of (? Little) Canfield, co. Essex, afterwards of Markes in Great Dunmow. His first Court Baron of the manor of Markes was held the 11th April, 1659, 11 Charles II. He married by licence the 28th April, 1618, at St. Dionis, Backchurch, London ANNE, daughter of WILLIAM BURR, yeoman, of Little Canfield, co. Essex, and had issue:—

ROBERT MILBOURNE,<sup>1</sup> eldest son and heir, 13 years old in 1634.

Born in 1621 (probably died young).

JAMES MILBOURNE, of whom hereafter. SEE **D.**

AGNES MILBOURNE, baptised the 27th February, 1619.

ANNE MILBOURNE, first daughter (in the original Visitation, 1664, she is called Anna, daughter of Robert, but this is evidently an error). Married THOMAS POMPHRETT, gentleman, of Butesbury, co. Essex. Had issue:—

GEORGE POMPHRETT, of Dunmow, co. Essex. He married ANN, daughter of ANTHONY WEAVER, gentleman, of London, and had issue:—

THOMAS POMPHRETT, gentleman, of Butesbury, co. Essex, 1664.

SUSAN MILBOURNE, second daughter.

ALICE MILBOURNE, third daughter.

**D.**—JAMES MILBOURNE, esquire, second son, of Great Dunmow. Born 1625. Captain of the Trained Band, and Gentleman of his Majesty's Privy Chamber Extraordinary. He died in 1683. His will bears date the 4th February, 1680, and was proved at Great Dunmow the 8th April, 1683. He directed his executors to distribute to the poor of Dunmow, £5. He married (after 23rd January, 1648-9) MARGARET, daughter of GEORGE PRICE, esquire, of Esher, in the county of Surrey. This lady was aged 18 years the 25th January, 1648-9. Her will bears date the 11th September, 1701, in which she is described as of Great Canfield, and with a codicil dated the 23rd January, 1706, was administered to under a Commission issued to Mary Carter, widow, the executors named in the will having died. He had issue:—

ROBERT MILBOURNE, esquire, son and heir, of Great Dunmow.

Age 15 in 1664. Died unmarried in 1687. His will, which bears date the 20th February, 1687, was proved at London 2nd March, 1687. He left his manor of Markes to be sold.

In accordance with the said will the estate of the manor was

<sup>1</sup> It is evident he did not succeed to the estate. Unfortunately I have no record of the date of death of his father, or at what date his brother, Captain James Milbourne, succeeded to the manor.

sold to James Hallet, citizen and goldsmith, of London, for the sum of £5,650. Deed dated the 22nd June, 1698, 10 William III.

JAMES MILBOURNE, second son. He is not named in his father's will, dated 4th February, 1680, having probably pre-deceased him.

POMPHRETT MILBOURNE, third son, sole executor to his brother Robert. This gentleman inherited property under the will of his uncle and godfather, Thomas Pomphrett, gentleman, of Butesbury, co. Essex. He was A. Trin., L.L.B., 1683, Cambridge.

MARGARET MILBOURNE, eldest daughter. Born 1650. Baptised at Great Easton, co. Essex, the 25th December in the same year. Living 11th September, 1701. Married . . . . .

ESSINGTON. Had issue:—

Names of issue not given but her mother, by her will dated 11th September, 1701, bequeathed her her "wrought" bed for life, and after her death to such one of her grand-children as she, her daughter, should think fit by will or otherwise; I infer this to mean the children of the said Margaret.

ANN MILBOURNE, second daughter. Born 1654, and baptised the 30th March in the same year at Great Easton. Named in the Herald's Visitation, 1664, as second daughter. Married the 9th February, 1674, at Great Dunmow, EDWARD TAVERNER, esquire, of Felstead, in co. Essex. This gentleman, as trustee jointly with Edward Vernon, the husband of Elizabeth Milbourne, sold Markes manor and estate the 22nd June, 1698, to James Hallett, citizen and goldsmith, of London, for £5,650. She had issue:—

JAMES TAVERNER. Living 11th September, 1701. Married . . . . . daughter of . . . . . Had issue:—

WILLIAM TAVERNER. Living 23rd January, 1706.

JAMES TAVERNER. Living 23rd January, 1706.

EDWARD TAVERNER. Living 11th September, 1701.

BENJAMIN TAVERNER. Living 11th September, 1701.

ANNE TAVERNER. Living 11th September, 1701.

MARTHA MILBOURNE. Baptised at Great Easton, 1655.

ELIZABETH MILBOURNE, entered in the original Visitation 1664 as third daughter. She died before 23rd January, 1706. Married EDWARD VERNON, Merchant, of London, and had issue:—

HENRY VERNON. Living 11th September, 1701.

JAMES VERNON. Living 11th September, 1701.

ELIZABETH VERNON. Living 11th September, 1701.

MARY MILBOURNE. Born 1667. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 25th February in the same year. Married JOHN CARTER, gentleman, of Braintree, co. Essex. This gentleman was appointed under the will of his mother-in-law her executor, but having pre-deceased her, Mary his wife had letters of administration to the estate the 27th January, 1709. She had issue:—

MARTIN CARTER, esquire, of Witham, co. Essex. This gentleman was lord of the manor and patron of the church of Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall. He died the 23rd July, 1754, in the 63rd year of his age, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall. He married *first* . . . . . He married *secondly* ANN, only daughter and heiress of WILLIAM FEAKE, esquire, late of Stafford. This lady died the 29th January, 1756, in the 53rd year of her age, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall.

MILBOURNE CARTER, esquire, of Black Notley, co. Essex. Died the 10th August, 1773, age 68 years, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall. He married . . . . daughter of . . . . and had issue:—

MARTIN CARTER. He died the 21st March, 1803, aged 48 years, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall.

REV. MILBOURNE PETER CARTER, A.M. He died the 31st March, 1813, aged 54 years, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall. He was rector of the parish and lord of the manor of Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall.

ANN CARTER, eldest daughter (and last surviving child). Died the 22nd January, 1835, aged 84 years, and was buried at Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall, co. Essex. She married LAYZEL BRUNWIN, esquire, of Braintree, co. Essex.

JOHN CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

JANE CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

MARGARET CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

MARY CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

ANNE CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

ELIZABETH CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

HENRIETTA CARTER. Living 11th September, 1701.

## SECOND FAMILY OF MILBOURNE OF GREAT DUNMOW.

WILLIAM MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow, co. Essex. Assessed at 20s. on goods and chattells, 100s., 12th November, 1543, 35 Hen. VIII., and again assessed at 4s. on goods, £6, 1545-6, 37 Hen. VIII. He was one of the homage at a Court of the manor of Markes 19th

May, 1559, 1 Elizabeth. At this Court he came and acknowledged that he held by charter two crofts of land lying next Copping's Lane (late John Clarke) by the rent of 5s. per annum, and also by copy of Court Roll one tenement and ten acres of land called "Birds," at the rent of 10s. and two capons, at a view of Frank-pledge with General Court the 18th October, 1559, 1 Elizabeth, he paid the lord 6d. for the feed of three hogs and six pigs. At a view of Frank-pledge and Court held the 18th October, 1560, 2 Elizabeth, the homage presented that since the last court being feeble and near the end he surrendered into the hands of the lord one tenement and ten acres of customary land called "Birds," then divided into four parcels and inclosed, to the use of Alice, his wife, for her life, with remainder after her death to John Milbourne, his son, and the heirs of the said John for ever, and according to the form of his testament, the said Alice prayed to be admitted to the said premises, and was admitted accordingly for the term of her life. It was further presented at this court by the homage that the said William Milbourne had, at the time of his death, two crofts of land containing six acres, lying next Copping's Lane (late John Clarke's), which he gave and bequeathed to Alice, his wife, for term of her life, with remainder to Robert Milbourne, his son, and his heirs for ever. He appears to have died between the 18th October, 1559, and the 18th October, 1560. He married ALICE, daughter of . . . . . At the court of the manor held the 18th October, 1560, she was admitted tenant for life of the two crofts containing six acres, and at the court held the 30th November, 1586, 29th Elizabeth, the homage presented that she had died since the last court held the 29th October [1585.] (She appears to have married *secondly* John Notage, for at a court with Leet held the 29th October, 1569, the said John Notage held as tenant one customary messuage called "Birds," and ten acres of land together one parcel of land called "Birds hoppet," in right of Alice, his wife: and at a court held . . . . . October, 1570, 12 Elizabeth, the said John Notage acknowledged that he held in right of his wife one tenement and ten acres of land called "Birds" by rent of 10s. and two capons, one parcel of land of twelve acres called "Hobbes" by charter and by rent of 16s. 8d., and two crofts of land called "Clarke's Crofts," lying next Copping's lane by rent of 5s.). He had issue:—

JOHN MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow, son and heir, of whom hereafter. SEE E.

ROBERT MILBOURNE, second son. At a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron of the manor of Markes held the 30th November, 1586, 29 Elizabeth, he was admitted on death of his mother to the two crofts containing six acres, next adjacent to Copping's



Lane. He was one of the homage at a court held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., and again at a court held the 17th October, 1625, 1 Charles I. He married . . . daughter of . . . and had issue:—

WILLIAM MILBOURNE. At a court held the 11th April, 1659, it was presented by the homage that this William Milbourne held two crofts with houses and buildings thereon built, lying in Dunmow near a certain lane called Copping's Lane at a rent of 5s., and that he had died since the last court, and that Rachel was his sister and next heir and of full age. This would give his death about 1658-9.

RACHEL MILBOURNE. Married ANTHONY WACKFIELD,<sup>1</sup> at Great Dunmow, 24th May, 1628. This Anthony Wackfield was admitted to the two crofts before-mentioned in right of his wife at the Court Baron held the 11th April, 1659. She had issue:—

RICHARD WACKFIELD. Baptised at Great Dunmow 24th January, 1635.

RICHARD MILBOURNE, third son, of Great Dunmow. At a view of Frank-pledge and a Court Baron held the 30th November, 1586, 29 Elizabeth, he was admitted after the death of his mother to one meadow called "Onyons" mead, with one small parcel of land adjoining, containing twelve acres held by the rent of 10s. per annum. At the same court he had a grant of one parcel of waste land of the manor next and adjoining to his house. He was one of the homage at a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., also at a court held 17th October, 1625, 1 Charles I., at this court he came and surrendered to the lord one piece of waste ground to the use of Thomas Milbourne and his heirs, this is evidently the piece of waste land he had by grant made at the Court held the 24th October, 1614. At a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron held the 17th October, 1625, 1 Charles I., he was presented as having sold one tenement with one-and-a-half acres of land with appurtenances called "Onyons," since the last court by charter to Thomas Milbourne<sup>2</sup> and his heirs, and the said Thomas Milbourne was admitted to the same.

ROGER MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow, fourth son. At a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron held the 30th November, 1586, 29 Elizabeth, after the death of his mother, he was admitted to

<sup>1</sup> "Wakefield" on Court Roll.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Milbourne was one of the homage at a Court Baron 6th March, 1626, 1 Charles I. and again at a Court Baron 30th June, 1646, 22 Charles I., also at a Court Baron 11th April, 1659.

one parcel of land called "Hobbes" containing twelve acres with appurtenances by rent of 16s. 8d., being the remainder from Alice given in the charter dated 10th April, 1562, 4 Elizabeth. In 1598 he was assessed at 4s. on land in great Dunmow, 20s., and again in 1600 at 4s. on lands in Dunmow of a like value. At a court held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., it was presented that he had died since the last court seized of one tenement with sixteen acres of land to the same appertaining called "Hobbes," and at the annual rent of 16s. 8d. He married . . . . daughter of . . . . and had issue:—

JOHN MILBOURNE, son and heir, of Great Dunmow. At the court held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., it was presented that this John Milbourne was son and heir of Roger, and that after the death of his father and before the date of this court he had sold and alienated the said tenement and lands to Richard Foulshame, gentleman.

**E.**—JOHN MILBOURNE, son and heir, of Great Dunmow. At a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron held the 30th November, 1586, 29 Elizabeth, he petitioned to be admitted to one tenement and ten acres of customary land called "Birds," then into four parcels divided and inclosed, his mother being dead, and was accordingly admitted on payment of a fine of £3 6s. 8d.; at this court he also paid the lord 3s., being the annual rent of the feed for three pigs in the woods of the manor. In 1598 he was assessed at 4s. on 20s. in land and goods at Great Dunmow, and again in 1600 in a like sum. At a court held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., it was presented that he had died since the last court, and that by his will he gave his son George Milbourne his house and tenement wherein he then lived for the term of his life, and after his decease to his wife Elizabeth, with remainder to Joseph (Josua), their son. He married . . . . daughter of . . . . and had issue:—

GEORGE MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow. He was one of the customary tenants of the manor of Markes the 15th September, 1572, 14 Elizabeth.<sup>1</sup> At a view of Frank-pledge and Court Baron held the 24th October, 1614, 12 James I., he, with Elizabeth, his wife, and Joseph (Josua), their son, attended and petitioned to be admitted to the said premises, and were admitted accordingly on payment of a fine to the lord of £12. He was returned as one of the customary tenants at a court held the 25th January, 1619, and again at a court held the

<sup>1</sup> There was a Thomas Milbourne a customary tenant of the manor at this date, viz., 15th September, 1572.

29th May, 1623, and was one of the homage at a court held the 17th October, 1625, 1 Charles I. At a court held the 30th June, 1646, 22 Charles I., he was presented for having allowed the premises, viz. "Birds," to fall into decay: but was given time to repair. And at a Court Baron held the 11th April, 1659, it was presented that he, the said George Milbourne, had held for the term of his natural life by copy of Court Roll, one tenement and ten acres of customary land called "Birds" tenement, then into five parcels divided; and further, that he had died since the last court, and it was found that the immediate reversion and remainder of the said premises after his death had long since been settled on Joseph Milbourne, his son and his heir, who was long since dead; and lastly, it was presented that Ralph Milbourne was brother and heir of the said Joseph Milbourne, deceased, and of full age; and at this same court—in full and open court—the said Ralph Milbourne, in his proper person, prayed to be admitted tenant of the said premises, and was admitted accordingly, paying £18 10s. to the lord as a fine for his admission. He married ELIZABETH, daughter of . . . . and had issue:—

JOSEPH MILBOURNE, eldest son, of Great Dunmow. At a court held the 11th April, 1659, the reversion to the tenement and ten acres of customary land called "Birds" was found to have been settled on him and his heirs, but it was presented that he was long since deceased.

RALPH MILBOURNE, second son, of whom hereafter. SEE **F**. SUSANNA MILBOURNE. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 11th September, 1614.

JAMES MILBOURNE, youngest son. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 4th May, 1617.

**F** — RALPH MILBOURNE, yeoman, of Great Dunmow, second son. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 20th December, 1612. At a Court Baron held the 11th April, 1659, he was admitted to his right and inheritance in the tenement and ten acres of land called "Birds" as brother and heir to Joseph Milbourne. He died in 1691. His will bears date the 13th May, 1691, and was proved the 5th October in the same year. He married ROSE, daughter of . . . . . She evidently died before her husband. He had issue:—

ROBERT MILBOURNE, eldest son and heir, of whom hereafter.

SEE **G**.

RALPH MILBOURNE. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 24th September, 1643. Buried at Great Dunmow the 7th February, 1644.

THOMAS MILBOURNE,<sup>1</sup> third son. Nominated and appointed the sole executor of his father's will dated the 13th May, 1691.  
HELENOR MILBOURNE.<sup>2</sup> Baptised at Great Dunmow the 22nd July, 1638.

MARTHA MILBOURNE. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 12th September, 1641. This daughter is not mentioned in her father's will, therefore the inference is that she predeceased him.

MARGARET MILBOURNE, legatee under her father's will dated the 13th May, 1691, being a bequest of £60, to be paid her one year after his decease.

ROSE MILBOURNE. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 26th July, 1651. Predeceased her father. Married . . . . . Wood, of . . . . . and had issue:—

MATTHEW WOOD, legatee under the will of his grandfather dated the 13th May, 1691.

ROSE WOOD, legatee under the will of her grandfather dated the 13th May, 1691.

MARGARET WOOD, legatee under the will of her grandfather dated 13th May, 1691.

**G.**—ROBERT MILBOURNE, eldest son and heir, of Great Dunmow. Baptised at Great Dunmow the 29th October, 1648. By his father's will dated the 13th May, 1691, and proved the 5th October following, inherited the parcel of customary land called "Birds Hoppet,"<sup>3</sup> then into two closes divided, containing three acres more or less, on the condition that he paid his nephew, Matthew Wood, and his two nieces, Rose and Margaret Wood, £3 10s. each; he also had a further bequest of 5s.

### THIRD FAMILY OF MILBOURNE OF GREAT DUNMOW.

ROBERT MILBOURNE, of Great Dunmow. He was assessed at 4d. on goods, 20s., 1524, 15 Hen. VIII., and again for a like amount in 1525, 16 Hen. VIII. He was one of the homage at a Court Baron of the manor of Markes held the 15th May, 1559, 1 Elizabeth, at which same court the same day he came and acknowledged that he held by charter of the said manor one tenement, late Robert Palgraves, by rent of 9½d. per annum. At a view of Frank-pledge

<sup>1</sup> ? if the Thomas Milbourne, who married Elizabeth Norris by licence the 9th October, 1688.

<sup>2</sup> ? if the Helenor Milbourne, who married George Reggils at Great Dunmow, 6th March, 1657.

<sup>3</sup> I have not been able to search the Manor Rolls in continuation of those preserved in the Additional Charters, British Museum, but it would be very interesting to know who inherited "Birds Hoppet" after the decease of this Robert Milbourne.

and Court Baron held the 18th October, 1560, 2 Elizabeth, it was presented that he had died since the last court (18th October, 1559), and that by his will he had given and bequeathed one tenement with garden adjoining, situate in Church End and late Robert Palgraves, to Matilda, his wife, for the term of her natural life, with remainder to John Milbourne, his son and heir; and the said Matilda came into this court and attorned as tenant. He married MATILDA,<sup>1</sup> daughter of . . . . . At a view of Frank-pledge with court held . . . . . next after the Feast of SS. Simon and Jude, 29th October, 1571, 13 Elizabeth, it was presented that she had died since the last court (29th October, 1570, 12 Elizabeth), and that John Milbourne, the son, was also dead. He had issue:—

JOHN MILBOURNE, son and heir. He appears to have died between the 29th of October, 1570, and the 29th of October, 1571, 13 Elizabeth. He married . . . . . daughter of . . . . . and had issue:—

LEONARD MILBOURNE, son and heir. At a view of Frank-pledge with court held on . . . . . the next after the 28th October, 1571, 13 Elizabeth, this Leonard Milbourne petitioned to be admitted to one tenement in Church End, consequent upon the death of his father, John Milbourne, as son and heir and of full age.

#### FOURTH FAMILY OF MILBOURNE OF GREAT DUNMOW.

ROBERT MILBOURNE (senior), of Great Dunmow. Married . . . . . daughter of . . . . . and had issue:—

ROBERT MILBOURNE,<sup>2</sup> junior, of Great Dunmow, in co. Essex, husbandman. He died in November, 1629, and on the Friday, and also on the Sunday next before his death, being the 22nd November, 1629, before Thomas Crick, also Elizabeth Woodward and Gregory Milbourne (his brother), made a disposition of his goods by will nuncupative in favour of his said brother, this will was proved the 23rd December, 1629.

GREGORY MILBOURNE, yeoman, of Great Dunmow. Died . . . . . October, 1651. His will bears date the 11th October, 1651, and

<sup>1</sup> It is probable that Matilda the widow of Robert Milbourne re-married, as at a view of Frank-pledge with Court held on Monday next after the Feast of SS. Simon and Jude the 29th October, 1570, 12 Elizabeth, Matilda Raye, widow, came into court and acknowledged that she held one tenement, late Robert Milbourne's, by rent 9<sup>d</sup>., and at a previous view of Frank-pledge and Court held on Thursday next after the Feast of SS. Simon and Jude, 1569, 11 Elizabeth. Geoffrey "Milborne" attended to excuse the attendance of Matilda Raye, widow. (? Was this Geoffrey Milbourne her son.)

<sup>2</sup> "Melborne," "Melbourne."

was proved at Dunmow the 8th November, 1651. By his said will he gave to his son-in-law, Leonard Knight, and his heirs for ever all that his customary messuages and lands with appurtenances called "Sedcoppes," situate in Dunmow, and holden of the manor of Bigwoods, and all his other lands, tenements, and hereditaments, etc., upon condition that the said Leonard Knight, his heirs or assigns should discharge the legacies named in the will, and desired his "lovinge friendes Mr. Robert Melbourne and James Raymond" to be overseers, and bequeathed them 20s. each to buy them rings. He married ANNE, daughter of . . . . . She survived her husband. He had issue :—

JOANE MILBOURNE, first daughter. She married LEONARD KNIGHT (the sole executor of will of his father-in-law, Gregory Milbourne) the 24th December, 1634, by licence at Great Dunmow. It is probable that she predeceased her father. She had issue :—

THREE CHILDREN. Legatees under their grandfathers will dated the 11th October, 1651, but their several names are not given.

ELLEN MILBOURNE, second daughter. Married RALPH EVE, of . . . . . the 6th December, 1631, by license, at Great Dunmow. It is probable that she also predeceased her father. She had issue :—

SEVEN SONS and TWO DAUGHTERS. Legatees under the will of their grandfather, dated the 11th October, 1651, but their several names are omitted in the will.

#### FIFTH FAMILY OF MILBOURNE OF GREAT DUNMOW.

. . . . . MILBOURNE,<sup>1</sup> of Great Dunmow, co. Essex. Married JOANE, daughter of . . . . . She is described in her will as a widow of Great Dunmow. This will bears date the 10th November, 1636. To Jeromy (? Jerome), her son, she bequeathed certain household stuff, which she stated she gave him in consideration of a certain legacy which was given to him by his father's will; to Edward, her son, she gave a legacy of household stuff, and he is stated in the will to have gone for a volunteer soldier, and that there was no certainty as to whether he was dead or alive, or would ever return; to Mary, her daughter, the wife of William Babbes, she also bequeathed a legacy and half of the said goods left to Edward if he

<sup>1</sup> "Melborne."

did not return. The will was proved at Dunmow the 11th January, 1636. She had issue:—

JEROME MILBOURNE (? eldest son). Proved his mother's will the 11th January, 1636.

EDWARD MILBOURNE, absent from home the 10th November, 1636, having gone as a volunteer soldier, and no certainty if alive or dead.

MARY MILBOURNE, only daughter. Married WILLIAM BABBES of . . . . . Legatee under her mother's will dated the 10th November, 1636.

It would be interesting to know if copies of the wills of tenants are preserved amongst the Manorial Archives of the manor of Markes, also if the rolls are perfect from 1659 to the present time, as they would probably give the descent of the following properties, viz. :—

The tenement in Church End from Leonard Milbourne, who, at a Court held in October, 1571, petitioned to be admitted to the same.

The tenement and land called "Onyons" from Thomas Milbourne, who was presented at a Court Baron held the 17th October, 1625, as having purchased the same of Richard Milbourne.

And the tenement and land called "Bird's Hoppet" from Ralph Milbourne, who was admitted to the same at a Court Baron, held the 11th April, 1659, and who, by his will dated the 13th May, 1691, bequeathed the same to his son, Robert Milbourne.

The last Court entered on the roll preserved in the British Museum, viz., Additional Charters, No. 26,825, is dated the 11th April, 1659.

Besides the before-mentioned manor of Markes, there appears to be seven other manors in Great Dunmow, viz., The manor of Great Dunmow, Bigoods manor, Rectory manor, Clapton manor, Shingle Hall *alias* Olives manor, The manor of Dunmow (late the Priory), and Brickhouse manor, and which if the manor rolls exist would no doubt furnish a considerable and interesting addition to the before-recited pedigrees.

## ESSEX FIELD-NAMES.

COLLECTED AND ARRANGED BY

WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

---

### *Part VI.*—THE HUNDRED OF HINCKFORD.

---

THE Hundred of Hinckford, abutting north and east on the county of Suffolk and lying wholly inland, is the biggest of all the Essex Hundreds. It comprises hardly less than one hundred and ten thousand acres, divided up into forty-seven parishes. Each of these, with but few exceptions, has yielded a considerable number of field-names, which, all together, furnish enough to make up this sixth instalment of our Essex list. A glance over it reveals the wide range of diversity which is attained in a region of commonplace. Striking names are rare, although some few are conspicuous by their oddity—Body Horses, Boodgerams, Jackolden Jackling, and Jacksolon; Jews Vent and Judas; Mellis Toes; Make Beggars and Mock Beggars; Ox Vineyard and Pipe Shanks,—to cite a few instances; while Gallows, Perry, Peartree, Penny, Dole, and others, are again numerously represented. A single 'Dane Pit' is found in Belchamp St. Paul.

The soil of the Hundred appears to have been congenial to the growth of hops, 'hop-grounds' and 'hop-gardens' being often named. But, for some reason or another, the value of the tithe of hops was very differently assessed in different parishes. The maximum was attained in the case of Panfield, where it was fixed at 17*s.* *per* acre; in Gosfield and Halsted it descended to 8*s.*, the intermediate stages being as follows:—Finchingfield, 13*s.* 6*d.*; Shalford, 13*s.* 4*d.*; Wethersfield, 12*s.*; Sible Hedingham, 10*s.*; and Great Maplested, 9*s.* The award for Finchingfield contains provisions with regard to hop-gardens existing, future, and disused; and in Halsted their value was put on the same level as that of land used for market-gardens. The whole area definitely stated to be under hops was something under three hundred acres, of which sixty-two were in Wethersfield parish; fifty-two in Castle Hedingham; and fifty-one in Halsted.



One instance of a corn-modus emerges. In Great Maplested the inappropriate glebe is stated to pay to the Vicar a modus of six quarters of wheat, six of barley, two of oats, and a sum of *1l. 6s. 8d.*, in lieu of small tithes.

Under Belchamp-Otten a note is made of the glebe of the Chapelry of Allbright, the tithe from twenty acres of which goes to the Rector of Ovington, while that from nine acres is paid to the Rector of Belchamp-Otten. Newcourt, *s. v.* Ovington, says: "Near this Ovington is a place called Beauchamp S. Ethelbert, S. Alberic, or S. Albright, in old times a parish of itself, now a hamlet in part of this parish of Ovington, and the church belonging thereto being annexed to it ever since 1473." A terrier of 1637 shews that a house and barn were then still attached to the chapelry. The church of Belchamp-Otten was, according to Newcourt, dedicated to St. Ethelbert and All Saints.

Our Honorary Secretary, with the helpful kindness to which we have grown pleasantly accustomed, has recently lent me, out of his collection, an elaborate and beautifully executed *Extent*, or detailed survey, of the manor of Henny-Magna, taken in the forty-second year of Queen Elizabeth—in June, 1600, to wit,—together with a charming map, or plan, on vellum, of the same date. The lands of the manor extended into several parishes, and the field-names are freely given. Where any of these coincide with those found in the Tithe Award lists, I have indicated the fact in a footnote, giving there the name as it was spelt in A.D. 1600. In some cases a name, though not occurring in the identical parish, is still to be found in an adjacent one; but the footnotes are confined to instances in which the same name survives in the same parish after the lapse of three centuries.

#### PARISHES.

(Continued from Vol. VII., p. 327.)

(Hinckford Hundred)

244	Alphamstone	252	Borley
245	Ashen	253	Braintree
246	Ballingdon	254	Bulmer
247	Belchamp-St. Paul	255	Bures
248	Belchamp-Otten	256	Felsted
249	Belchamp-Walter	257	Finchingfield
250	Birdbrook	258	Foxearth
251	Bocking	259	Gestingthorpe
		260	Gosfield
		261	Halstead

PARISHES—*continued*.

262 Hedingham, Castle	277 Saling, Great
263 Hedingham, Sible	278 Shalford
264 Henny, Great	279 Stambourne
265 Henny, Little <sup>1</sup>	280 Stebbing
266 Lamarsh	281 Steeple-Bumpsted
267 Liston	282 Stisted
268 Maplested, Great	283 Sturmer
269 Maplested, Little	284 ( <i>Blank</i> )
270 Middleton	285 Tilbury-juxta-Clare
271 Ovington	286 Toppesfield
272 Panfield	287 Twinsted
273 Pebmarsh	288 Wethersfield
274 Pentlow	289 Wickham-St. Paul
275 Rayne	290 Yeldham, Great
276 Ridgewell	291 Yeldham, Little

## LIST OF FIELD-NAMES OCCURRING IN THE FOREGOING PARISHES.

NOTE:—In the following list the numerals put after each name indicate the parishes (see above) in which the name occurs. Where the same name occurs twice or oftener *in the same parish*, one numeral serves for all instances.

Abbey Croft, 261; — Field, 273; — Meadow, 262	— Hale Field, 263; — Mead, 256; — Meadow, 251; — Meadow Plantation, 249; — Piece, 261; — Slips, 256
Abbot Field, 275; — Shrubs, 261	Alderlands .. .. . 270
Abbotts Pasture .. .. . 267	Alders, 266; — Ley, 272
Abingdon Piece .. .. . 257	Ale Croft .. .. . 263
Abley Field .. .. . 277	Algers Pasture .. .. . 256
Acton Croft .. .. . 249	Allans Field .. .. . 256
Adams Croft .. .. . 282	Allens Field .. .. . 256
Agnes Field .. .. . 256	Almond Wood, 257; — Meadow, 257
Alberry .. .. . 280	Alms Croft .. .. . 244
Alcot .. .. . 280	Almshouse Spring .. .. . 256
Alder Carr, 244, 251, 261, 263, 266, 268, 273, 278, 280, 288; — Car Field, 261; — Field, 251, 257, 260, 279, 282; — Field, Great & Little, 261;	Alracks, Upper and Lower, 259
	Alstead Meadow .. .. . 247

<sup>1</sup> The Award for Henny Parva furnished but three or four names.

- Alteration Field . . . . . 261  
 Ambly Field . . . . . 280  
 Amblys, Long . . . . . 280  
 America Field . . . . . 275, 282  
 Ancients Meadow . . . . . 276  
 Andrews Croft, 259; — Field,  
 263; — Motts Field, 261  
 Annals Hyde . . . . . 291  
 Annas, Upper and Lower, 278  
 Anny's Spring . . . . . 256  
 Anton Common, On, . . . . . 270  
 Apple Pie Field, 273, 289; —  
 Row, 266; — Tree Croft,  
 280; — Tree Field, 260,  
 261, 280; — Tree Meadow,  
 251, 261  
 Appleton Field . . . . . 280  
 Arbour, Long and Little, 288;  
 — Mount, 288  
 Archers Field . . . . . 256  
 Arches Field . . . . . 256  
 Arcing Field . . . . . 288  
 Ardens, Great . . . . . 272  
 Ardleys Newborns 5-acre Ley,  
 254  
 Argeants Pasture . . . . . 258  
 Arkwood, Great and Little 280  
 Armsea, The (18a.), 254, —  
 Field, 254  
 Armsey Road Piece . . . . . 246  
 Arnolds . . . . . 257, 276  
 Arsnock . . . . . 256  
 Arundells . . . . . 277  
 Ash Field, 259; — Ground, 244,  
 246, 247, 248, 250, 251, 253,  
 255, 256, 260, 261, 263, 269,  
 278, 279, 281, 282, 283, 289;  
 — Grove, 264, 274; —  
 Pasture, 270; — Pole, 251;  
 — Ground Field, 268; —  
 Grove Pasture, 251; —  
 Meadow Garden, 272  
 Ashburrows, Great & Little 262  
 Ashen Field, Great and Little,  
 261; — Hays, 245; — Hill  
 Pasture, 245; — Meadow,  
 245; — Park, 250; —  
 Piece, 276  
 Ashley Acre, 276; — Ley, 257;  
 — Piece, 261  
 Ashleys, Great and Little, 276;  
 — Field, 259  
 Ashwell Field . . . . . 257  
 Aspage . . . . . 247  
 Aspens . . . . . 268  
 Astons, Lower . . . . . 272  
 August Land . . . . . 247  
 Auskins, Great and Little 261  
 Austen Field . . . . . 257  
 Awkward Ley . . . . . 262  
 Aylands, Great and Little 256  
 Aylers . . . . . 268  
 Ayletts, Great and Little, 261;  
 — Croft, 280; — Field,  
 262  
 Aylwards Mead . . . . . 260  
 Bachelors, Middle, &c. . . . . 259  
 Back Ley . . . . . 245, 262  
 Backhouse Croft, 244, 248, 254,  
 258; — Field, 257; —  
 Meadow, 267  
 Backnage, 272; — Further, 272;  
 — Home, 272  
 Backs Field . . . . . 244  
 Backside Field, 247; — and  
 Foreside Clare Downs,  
 247  
 Bacon . . . . . 274  
 Bacons, 257; — Hither, 282;  
 — Close, 262, 263; — Field,  
 268, 276, 279; — Pasture,  
 280; — Piece, 257  
 Bad Lands Field . . . . . 286  
 Baddows, Upper and Lower 283  
 Bagdens . . . . . 278

- Baggs Land, 266; — Hill Common, 248; — Hill Meadow, 248  
 Baghurst . . . . . 282  
 Bailey Hill Ley . . . . . 250  
 Bakers Close, 263; — Croft, 280; — Field, 244, <sup>1</sup> 251, 254, 256, 269, 273<sup>2</sup>; — Grove, 255; — Hill, 261; — Mead, 257; — Pasture, 275  
 Baking Croft . . . . . 281  
 Balance Wood . . . . . 281  
 Baldwins Ley . . . . . 280  
 Ballards, 276; — Pasture, 276  
 Balls, 266; — Ley, 280; — Pasture, 263  
 Banchester . . . . . 257  
 Bar Croft, 256; — Field, 256; — Meadow, 266  
 Barbers Close, 253; — Marsh, 270  
 Bardfield, 280; — Mead, 257; — Shot, 280  
 Bare Hill . . . . . 266  
 Barkers Field, 244, 247; — Pasture, 256  
 Barley Field, 244; — Fen Field, 288  
 Barmans Hill . . . . . 268  
 Barn Grove . . . . . 283  
 Barnards Field, 275; — Ley, 280  
 Barnes Hill . . . . . 266  
 Barrack Field, 251, 280; — Yard, 259  
 Barrells Wood . . . . . 248  
 Barren Ley . . . . . 256, 276  
 Barrows, Upper and Lower 275  
 Barrs, 259; — Great and Little, 277; — Common, 248; — Field, 256; — Marsh, 258; — Wood, 259  
 Bartletts, Great . . . . . 278  
 Barton Field . . . . . 272  
 Bartons, Little . . . . . 258  
 Basel Croft . . . . . 249  
 Basketts, Long . . . . . 290  
 Bassetts . . . . . 250, 272  
 Bassingboun Wood . . . . . 251  
 Bassingford, Great . . . . . 247  
 Bassledown, Great . . . . . 247  
 Bass's Field . . . . . 256  
 Bastard Ley . . . . . 260, 261, 278  
 Bastards . . . . . 256, 282  
 Bath Ground, 257; — Pasture, 256; — Piece, 288  
 Battles, 272, 276; — Meadow, 272  
 Baynards, First and Second, 275; — 8-acre, 275  
 Baysland Field . . . . . 269  
 Beaks Field . . . . . 255  
 Beals . . . . . 256  
 Bealings, Great . . . . . 255  
 Bean Croft, 245, 254, 257, 262, 263, 289; — Brooms, 280; — Lands, Great and Little, 266; — Ley, 257  
 Beans Croft . . . . . 247  
 Beards, Great and Little, 291; — Field, 263; — Pasture, 290; — Wood Field, 260  
 Bearlam . . . . . 258  
 Bears Ley, 263; — Mead, 275  
 Beazell End, Great . . . . . 288  
 Beck Field, 257; — House Field, 266  
 Beddalls Meadow, 253; — End Field, 253; — Wells, 253  
 Bedstead Field . . . . . 261  
 Bedwell, Further, &c., 271; — Part of, 245  
 Beeks Pasture . . . . . 283  
 Beekley Ley . . . . . 261

<sup>1</sup> 'Bakers,' A.D. 1600.

<sup>2</sup> 'Bakers *alias* Peirsfield,' A.D. 1600.

- Beggar Mead . . . . . 257  
 Beggars Ley . . . . . 256  
 Belchams, Upper & Lower 250  
 Belchamp Field, 449, 274; —  
 Meadow, 247, 254  
 Belcher Field . . . . . 263  
 Belchers Wood . . . . . 282  
 Beldoms . . . . . 282  
 Bell Field, 261, 262, 269, 272,  
 273, 282; — Field, Great  
 and Little, 266; — Field,  
 Long, 272; — Meadow,  
 269; — Pasture, 262; —  
 Rope Field, 261; — Rope  
 Meadow, 258; — Ropes,  
 264<sup>1</sup>, 270  
 Bells Blackley . . . . . 256  
 Belly Bones . . . . . 258  
 Belsham Wood Field . . . . . 288  
 Belshams . . . . . 288  
 Ben Appletons . . . . . 278  
 Bengles Ley . . . . . 274  
 Bennetts, 269; — Garden, 278;  
 — Wood, 268  
 Bennington, Little . . . . . 249  
 Bens Pasture . . . . . 279  
 Bent Field . . . . . 259  
 Bentalls, Upper . . . . . 261  
 Berners Mead . . . . . 257  
 Berwick Hawthorn . . . . . 286  
 Betts Field . . . . . 276  
 Betseys Ley . . . . . 274  
 Betty Brag . . . . . 263  
 Beventon . . . . . 258  
 Bevington, Little . . . . . 248  
 Big Field, Great and Little 257  
 Biggin, Lower, 263; — Field,  
 257  
 Biggs, 272; —, Great, 272; —  
 Piece, 263; — Field, 257
- Bigswood Close . . . . . 261  
 Bilands, Part of, . . . . . 245  
 Bilans . . . . . 245  
 Bilermans Piece . . . . . 274  
 Birch Ley, 260, 288; — Wood,  
 253, 259  
 Bird Field . . . . . 259  
 Birdbrook Field . . . . . 250  
 Birds, Great, 249; — Croft, 245;  
 — Eye, 288; — Field, 288;  
 — Pasture, 261  
 Bishop, Little, 257; — Field,  
 257; — Ley, 256; —  
 Pasture, 257  
 Bishopric, Great and Little, 280  
 Bishops, 247, 263, 286; —  
 Corner, 280; — Field, 261;  
 — Leys, 264<sup>2</sup>  
 Bittermus Piece . . . . . 281  
 Blabbers Field . . . . . 273  
 Black Acre, 244, 255; — Acre  
 Pasture, 282; — Apple  
 Tree, 258; — Bots, 260;  
 — Boy, 285; — Breads,  
 253; — Bush, 257; — Bush  
 Field, 277; — Croft, 256,  
 273<sup>3</sup>, 288; — Field, 248,  
 251, 257; — Hawkes,  
 273<sup>4</sup>; — House Field, 249,  
 263; — Pasture, 258; —  
 Patch, 263; — Patch Wood,  
 263; — Plotts, 290; —  
 Pot Mead, 262  
 Blackden . . . . . 286  
 Blacking, Long . . . . . 256  
 Blackland, 248; — Bottom, 254,  
 256; — Mead, 280  
 Blacklands, 264<sup>5</sup>, 276; — Great  
 and Little, 254; — 7-acre,  
 249

<sup>1</sup> 'Bellrope,' A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Busshieleaze *alias* Bishoppes,' A.D. 1600.<sup>3</sup> 'Blackcroft,' A.D. 1600.<sup>4</sup> 'Budges Hawke,' A.D. 1600.<sup>5</sup> 'Blacklond' A.D. 1600.

- Blackley, Great and Little, 256;  
— Wood, 256
- Blacksmiths Field, 252, 256, 271,  
283
- Blackwater . . . . . 288
- Blackwood . . . . . 257
- Blake End Field . . . . . 280
- Blakelands . . . . . 253
- Blakes, Great and Little, 262,  
288; — Field, 280
- Blands Field, 247; — Wood  
Field, 271
- Blass Green . . . . . 257
- Blewitts, 280; — Garden, 280
- Blind Acre, 274; — Meadow,  
283; — Pasture, 274
- Blobbers, Great and Little, 273
- Blois or Bloys, 257; — New  
Ground, 281; — Pightle,  
263; — Wood, 263
- Bloody Pightle . . . . . 281
- Bloom Field . . . . . 280
- Blossoms Ley . . . . . 256
- Blowers Field . . . . . 283
- Blue Bat Lane, 248; — Bridge  
Field, 261; — Door Field  
281; — Doors, 281; — Gate,  
257; — Gate Pasture, 260;  
— Gates, Great and Little,  
260; — Ley, 258
- Boarded Barn Field . . . . . 256
- Boars Field, Sandy . . . . . 289
- Boat Piece . . . . . 255
- Bob Pond Field . . . . . 253
- Bocking Field . . . . . 251
- Body Horses, 288; — Horses,  
Little, 288
- Bog Meadow, 251; — Pasture,  
256
- Boggs, 274; — Field, 263, 286
- Boilers . . . . . 276, 285
- Bois Pasture . . . . . 261
- Bolden Field . . . . . 257
- Bolingbrooks . . . . . 256
- Boles Croft . . . . . 249
- Bolingbroke Pasture . . . . . 256
- Bollen Alley . . . . . 278
- Bomans Field . . . . . 262
- Bond Meadow . . . . . 263
- Bonds Meadow . . . . . 258
- Bone Bridge Meadow, 257; —  
Field, 273; — Meadow,  
First and Second, 274
- Bones Orchard . . . . . 244
- Boodgerams . . . . . 244
- Book Mead, Hither & Further,  
261
- Booseys, 261; — Mead, 261
- Border Field . . . . . 256
- Bores Field . . . . . 245
- Borley Field, 281; — Ground, 254
- Borleys Piece . . . . . 248
- Borses, Long and Short . . . . . 247
- Boses . . . . . 261
- Bosket Ley . . . . . 286
- Botany Bay Close . . . . . 282
- Botnay Field . . . . . 253
- Botsford . . . . . 279
- Bottles, Hither and Further, 263
- Bottoms, The . . . . . 251
- Bottwoods . . . . . 256
- Bounce . . . . . 288
- Bovington, Upper and Lower,  
251; — Wood, 251
- Bower Field, 264<sup>1</sup>; — Hall  
Wood Field, Long, 250
- Bowers, 282; — Field, 270
- Bowditch . . . . . 269
- Bowlands . . . . . 251
- Bowlers Plain . . . . . 261
- Bowling Green Field . . . . . 253
- Bowtells, Great . . . . . 286
- Box Croft, 244; — Mill Mead, 261
- Boxted Field . . . . . 280

<sup>1</sup> *Id.*, A.D. 1600.

- Boytons, 257; — Field, 251;  
     — Meadow, 257  
 Braddels, Great and Little 258  
 Braddock, Pond, 290; —, 12-  
     acre, 291  
 Braddocks Field .. .. 286  
 Bradfield Ley .. .. 274  
 Bradfields Ley .. .. 258  
 Bradley Field .. .. 274  
 Bradleys Mead .. .. 263  
 Bradshaws .. .. 290  
 Braggs, 259; — Hill, 270; —  
     Field, 289  
 Braintree Pightle .. 251, 253  
 Brake Hill, Great and Little 260  
 Brakes Hempsted .. .. 259  
 Braky Bottom, 254; — Hall,  
     251; — Path, 264  
 Bramble Croft, 257; — Field,  
     256; — Shot, Great and  
     Little, 256  
 Branches Mead .. .. 256  
 Brands Pasture .. .. 258  
 Bravenards .. .. 255  
 Brabrooks Meadow .. .. 267  
 Braybrook .. .. 270  
 Brays Hill, 263; — Mead, 277  
 Braxted Field .. .. 279  
 Bread Croft, 263; — Croft, Holy,  
     263; — Field, 261, 280; —  
     Lands, Great and Little,  
     256; — Mead, 268; —  
     Meadow, 283  
 Breeches .. .. 282  
 Breeks Pasture .. .. 257  
 Breslins .. .. 257  
 Bressett .. .. 245  
 Brewers Field, 280; — Ley,  
     251  
 Brewhouse Croft, 247; — Field  
     262  
 Brews Field .. .. 291  
 Brewsters, Great .. .. 280  
 Brick Clamp, 290; — Clamp,  
     Upper and Lower, 278; —  
     Field, 253, 256, 281; —  
     Earth Ley, 257; — Earth  
     Pasture, 261; — Ground,  
     251; — Grove Field, 260;  
     — Hills, 285; — Kiln, 259,  
     260, 290; — Kiln Field, 244,  
     251, 256, 281, 283, 289; —  
     Kiln Mead, 253; — Kiln  
     Meadow, 263; — Kiln Piece,  
     278; — Kilns 246; — Land,  
     282; — Ley, 251, 263, 272;  
     — Yard Pasture, 279  
 Bricks, Great and Little, 263;  
     — Pasture, 269  
 Bricksted .. .. 257  
 Bridge Field, 245, 253; — Mead,  
     252; — Meadow, 253  
 Bridles, 280; — Field, 280  
 Brie Field .. .. 261  
 Bright Field .. .. 244, 257  
 Brights Pond Field .. 278  
 Brigswood Close .. .. 260  
 Brills .. .. 249  
 Brimley Wood .. .. 247  
 Brin Meadow .. .. 266  
 Brise Field .. .. 257  
 Brittons Field .. .. 256  
 Broad Oaks .. .. 257  
 Broadland .. .. 248  
 Broadley .. .. 253  
 Broaks Wood .. .. 260, 263  
 Brock Field .. .. 244, 288  
 Brockills .. .. 206  
 Brockle .. .. 255  
 Brockley, Great and Little, 273  
 Brockmoor .. .. 270  
 Brocks, 250; — Great, 283; —  
     Meadow, 282  
 Brockwiths Farm Field 251  
 Broke-up, 249; — Piece, 274  
 Bronchiers Wood .. .. 282

- Brook Field, 250, 251, 255, 256,  
 263, 275; — Lees, 282; —  
 Mead, 256; — Piece, 278  
 Brooks, 277; — Field, 272, 273;  
 — Meadow, 245; — New,  
 247; — Pasture, 251  
 Broolands .. .. . 262  
 Brooley .. .. . 262  
 Broom, Lower, 264<sup>1</sup>; — Close,  
 278; — Croft, 259; — Field,  
 251, 253, 255, 256, 257, 261,  
 263, 264, <sup>1</sup> 275, 278, 280, 282,  
 283; — Field, Great and  
 Little, 266; — Hill, 254,  
 270; — Hill Hoppet, 288;  
 — Hills, 257, 273; — Land,  
 263; — Ley, 251, 259, 260,  
 263, 273, 288, 290; — Ley,  
 Great and Little, 254; —  
 Mead, 280; — Poppy, Great  
 and Little, 254; — Portney,  
 254  
 Brooms, Little, 255; — Great  
 and Little, 256; — Bottom,  
 258; — Croft, 280  
 Brown Field 257, 261, 280  
 Browns Field, 244, 258, 280; —  
 Marsh, 264<sup>2</sup>; — Meadow,  
 261, 283  
 Brownings .. .. . 247  
 Brows Field .. .. . 274  
 Broxbury Field .. .. . 261  
 Bruisland, Part of .. .. . 269  
 Bryants Field.. .. . 268, 279  
 Bubber Field .. .. . 274  
 Bubbridge .. .. . 280  
 Bubleby, Great and Little, 276  
 Buck Field, 261; — House  
 Field, 257  
 Buckells Croft .. .. . 267  
 Bucket Croft .. .. . 258  
 Buckland.. .. . 259  
 Bucklands .. .. . 282  
 Bucks Croft, 256; — Field, 251  
 Budding Croft .. .. . 260  
 Budds, Little .. .. . 249  
 Budge Meadow .. .. . 276  
 Budgets<sup>3</sup>.. .. . 273  
 Budlands .. .. . 276  
 Buets .. .. . 263  
 Buffets Croft .. .. . 258  
 Buffles, 280; — Mead, 280  
 Bugaland .. .. . 266  
 Bugland Field .. .. . 273  
 Bull Field.. .. . 251, 253, 263  
 Bullens Field.. .. . 277  
 Bullock Meadow .. .. . 266  
 Bullocks Field, 245; — Howe,  
 244; — Wood Field, 261  
 Bulls Bottom, 249; — Field,  
 290; — Meadow, 283  
 Bulmer Croft, 254, 264, 289; —  
 Tye, 254  
 Bunce Ley .. .. . 280  
 Bungers Field .. .. . 278  
 Bunns Meadow .. .. . 276  
 Bunters Ley, 280; — Nap, 280  
 Buntings .. .. . 274  
 Burchers, Little.. .. . 254  
 Burches .. .. . 254  
 Bures, Great and Little .. 272  
 Bures Field .. .. . 244  
 Burgess .. .. . 251  
 Burkitts .. .. . 281  
 Burlong Sty Green Pasture 256  
 Burnlocks .. .. . 254  
 Burneys, Great and Little, 256  
 Burnt Cottage Piece, 267;  
 — Field, 261, 289; —  
 House, Great, 259; —  
 House, Field, 244, 252, 261,  
 263, 268, 269, 289; —

<sup>1</sup> 'Broom Croft' and 'Oldbroome,' A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Brownes Tenement,' A.D. 1600.<sup>3</sup> 'Budges Hawke,' A.D. 1600.



- House Ley, 260; — House Pasture, 244, 280; — Ley, 247, 260; — Orchard, 254; — Pasture, 286; — Yards, 282
- Burrells Field . . . . . 249
- Burtons . . . . . 269
- Bury Field . . . . . 263
- Burying Pond Field . . . . . 251
- Bush Close, 259; — Field, 251; — Lees, 256; — Pasture, 254; — Turner, Lower, 289
- Bushels . . . . . 291
- Bushes Pasture . . . . . 259
- Bushfords Field . . . . . 288
- Bushets . . . . . 253
- Bushy Barn, 253; — Bottom, 251; — Broad Oaks, 257; — Cranney, 288; — Field, 256; — Ley, 251, 253; — Pasture, 247, 248, 249, 255, 285; — Pasture Field, 256
- Buss Acre . . . . . 272
- Butcher Meadow . . . . . 251
- Butchers, 276; — Close Mead, 248; — Field, 259, 273, 278
- Butlers, 250; — Great and Little, 290
- Butney Field . . . . . 257
- Butneys Field . . . . . 286
- Butt Field, 259, 275; — Field, Great and Little, 247
- Buttle Garden . . . . . 264
- Butts Close, 283; — Piece, 253
- Button Hill . . . . . 250
- Bye Nashes . . . . . 263
- Byham Hall Field . . . . . 268
- Cabbage Meadow . . . . . 274
- Cadley Cross . . . . . 269
- Cadmans Acre . . . . . 262
- Cage, 253; — Croft, 291; — (or Caze) Croft, 263
- Cails Close . . . . . 263
- Caley Croft . . . . . 245
- Callouse Ley . . . . . 280
- Calves Cote, 279; — Hill, 270; — Pasture, 244, 249, 253, 256, 259, 261, 262, 263, 268, 279, 283, 285, 286; — Pasture Field, 273; — Pightle, 257, 271, 278, 281, 290
- Camoise Meadow . . . . . 286
- Camp Meadow . . . . . 283
- Camping Close 247, 248, 254, 281
- Campions Field . . . . . 256
- Canage Pasture . . . . . 247
- Candlestick Meadow . . . . . 251
- Candys, Great and Little . . . . . 282
- Cane Field, 278; — Hill Field, 278
- Canes Field . . . . . 247
- Caney Close, 263; — Field, 286; — Meadow, 290
- Cangle, Great and Little . . . . . 261
- Cangley, Part of . . . . . 260
- Canhams, 281; — Meadow, 281
- Canterbury, Great and Little, 263; — Field, 263
- Cants Hill . . . . . 273
- Cap Dole, Little . . . . . 270
- Capcomb Ley . . . . . 291
- Capons, 280; —, Great & Little, 262
- Cappis Pasture . . . . . 247
- Captains Dole, 270; — Field, 262
- Card Croft . . . . . 244
- Carpenters . . . . . 252
- Carr, The . . . . . 282
- Carroway Field, 256, 257, 260, 261, 272
- Carriaway Piece . . . . . 256
- Carstops . . . . . 257

- Carters, Great and Little, 250;  
 — Croft, 257; — Field, 244,  
 290; — Ley, 276; — Mea-  
 dow, 274; — Piece, 257;  
 — Wood, 280
- Casons Ley . . . . . 286
- Cast Up . . . . . 281
- Casting Jenny . . . . . 281
- Castle Field . . . . . 262, 272, 291
- Cats Bridge, 261; — Croft, 274;  
 — Field, 250; — Land, 255
- Cattle Down . . . . . 247
- Causeway Field, 251; — Mead,  
 249
- Caven Field . . . . . 248
- Caysons Ley . . . . . 271
- Chadwell Fowel . . . . . 250
- Chaff Croft. . . . . 285
- Chaffer Down . . . . . 263, 286
- Chaffix Meadow. . . . . 256
- Chaldron, 268; — Hither and  
 Further, 269
- Chaldrons, Upper & Lower, 257
- Chalk-Pit, 246; — Ley, 260;  
 — Piece, 259
- Challis Field, 256; — Pasture,  
 283
- Chammocks Meadow . . . . . 247
- Champins Ley . . . . . 248
- Chandlers . . . . . 263
- Chandlers, 280; — West and  
 North, 263; — Piece, 247
- Change Field . . . . . 247
- Chap Meadow . . . . . 274
- Chapel Croft, 251, 277; — Field,  
 245, 246, 248, 250, 251, 253,  
 254, 256, 261; — Field,  
 Lower, 275; — Hill, 272;  
 — Mead, 257; — Meadow,  
 262; — Pasture, 247, 262;  
 — Shot, Great and Little,  
 257; — Yard, 248, 261
- Chaplin Croft. . . . . 245
- Chapmans, 256; — Field, 257
- Chappits Field, 244; — Wood,  
 244
- Charcoal Field . . . . . 263
- Charcroft Common . . . . . 283
- Charity Pasture and Field 281
- Charles Ley . . . . . 281
- Charley Mead. . . . . 229
- Chase, 253, 256, 257, 259, 261,  
 262, 268, 269, 276, 278; —  
 Field, 255, 280, 288; —  
 Field, The, 244; — Field,  
 Little, 256; — Pasture,  
 The, 271; — Ley, 266; —  
 The, 246, 282; — Lane  
 Field, 251
- Chaseway, 250, 251, 257, 262,  
 263, 273, 279, 280, 283, 286,  
 288, 290, 291
- Chatters Spring . . . . . 250
- Chats, Part of, 276; — Field,  
 285
- Checks Croft . . . . . 262
- Cheeks Field . . . . . 262, 263
- Cheer Field, 250, 276, 279, 281;  
 — Field Bottom, 250; —  
 Wood, 257
- Cheerful Ley . . . . . 288
- Chelmsoe Wood . . . . . 268
- Cherry Garden, 251; — Garden  
 Field, 288; — Ground, 283;  
 — Orchard, 253, 255, 262;  
 — Pasture, 276
- Chessey Field . . . . . 261
- Chiming Croft . . . . . 260
- Chip Marks Field . . . . . 289
- Chiswicks, Further, 251; —  
 Little, 260
- Choat Mead . . . . . 251
- Christmas, Great and Little,  
 257; — Field, 261, 288
- Chumps . . . . . 257
- Chunks . . . . . 257

- Church Croft, 248; — Field, 244, 245, 248; — Field Grove, 250; — Hakeley, 248; — Hook, 289; — Path Field, 288; — Piece, (*2r. 10p.*, belonging to Church Clerk *pro. tem.*) 266; — Went, 289
- Churchard, Old (*3r. 7p.*, included in a farm) 286
- Churn Field . . . . . 244
- Circle (Wood) . . . . . 276
- Clamp, The, 253; — Earth Pits, The, 259; — 8-acre, 272; — Field, 281; —, 4-acre, 274; — Meadow, 247, 248; — Piece, 259; — Trees, 288
- Clamps, 244; —, Hither, 257
- Clany Field . . . . . 258
- Clap Croft . . . . . 290
- Clapgate Field, 289; — Meadow, 251; — Wood, 251
- Claphead Ley . . . . . 266
- Clappetts . . . . . 245
- Clappit Field, 251, 288; — Pasture, 281
- Claps, 257; — Hither and Further, etc., 263
- Claptons, Great . . . . . 285
- Clare Meadow . . . . . 254
- Clarks Fen, 266<sup>1</sup>; — Field, 256, 261, 262, 263; — Meadow, 245; — Piece, 253; — Wood, 253
- Clavering Wood . . . . . 261
- Claverings Spring Wood . . 261
- Clay Chimney, (near Three Chimneys Farm) 276; — Field, 266; — Gate Ley, 282; — Pasture, 263
- Clay-pit, 261; — Field, 247, 252, 253, 254, 260, 261, 280; — Ley, 250, 251, 290; — Meadow, 262, 267
- Clay-pits, 244, 268, 269, 276, 280, 283
- Claydens Croft, 248; — Field, 281
- Clear Pond Field . . . . . 289
- Clements Ley . . . . . 251
- Clerks Field, 245; — Meadow, (Church-clerk *1a. or. 9p.*) 274
- Clicket Field . . . . . 259
- Cliffs, Great and Little . . . 289
- Clift Field . . . . . 278
- Clinch Pin . . . . . 258
- Clink Wood . . . . . 266
- Clinkspun, 258; — Green Meadow, 258
- Clippins Pond . . . . . 256
- Clock Field . . . . . 261
- Clopham . . . . . 245
- Clophoppers Pasture . . . . . 263
- Close Field . . . . . 258
- Clover Hills . . . . . 261
- Clubbs Wood . . . . . 251, 282
- Clump Meadow . . . . . 248
- Coal Croft, 247, 258; — Hearth, 281; — Hearth Field, 263, 279; — Field, 261, 280; — Pit Field, 253 (*see also* Cole)
- Coarse Moors, 257; — Piece, 278
- Coates Meadow . . . . . 288
- Cobhams, 256; — Croft, 257; — Mead, 257
- Coblers Field, 256; — Hill, 253
- Cobbs, 255; — Field, 266
- Cobs Croft, 273; — Garden, 263; — Ground, 263
- Cock Field, 253, 256, 269; — Field Croft, 257; — Hills, 278; — Hurdles, 253; — Ley, 251; — Piece, 282; — Pightle, 273; — Piers, 282; — Piers Meadow, 282; — Pond, 252; — Reading, 283; — Shot, 257

<sup>1</sup> Clarkeslonde, A.D. 1600.

- Cockle Field .. .. . 253  
 Cockles .. .. . 247  
 Cocks, 277; — Broom, 280; —  
     Croft, 276, 281; — Field,  
     256; — Ley, Part of,  
     260; — Meadow, 267; —  
     Pasture, 256, 276  
 Coffe Down .. .. . 290  
 Coffery Mead.. .. . 280  
 Coggeshall Field, Upper and  
     Lower, 261  
 Cogsins .. .. . 263  
 Cokers .. .. . 253  
 Colander Field .. .. . 257  
 Cold Field, 257; — Nail Hurst  
     Homestead, 251  
 Coldfan Hills.. .. . 247  
 Cole, Long, 291; — Earth, 286;  
     — Field, 263, 291 (*see also*  
     Coal)  
 Colemans Ley .. 257, 270  
 Coles, Little, 247, 248; — Croft,  
     245, 248; — Ley, 257  
 Collar Ley .. .. . 254  
 College (ar. 1a.), 259; — Wood,  
     270; — Wood Field, 246  
 Colletts, Further and Hither,  
     253  
 Colley Field, 275; — Gate Field,  
     256; — Meadow, 256  
 Colliers Field, 260; — Ley,  
     259, 263  
 Collins Field, 261, 269, 280; —  
     Park, 288; — Pasture, 257  
 Collis Wood .. .. . 263  
 Collops Field.. .. . 280  
 Colne Field, 261; — Ley, 273  
 Colt Ley, Little .. .. . 260  
 Colyers Wrights .. .. . 263  
 Combers Croft .. .. . 264  
 Combwells, Hither and Further  
     263  
 Comings .. .. . 263  
 Common, The, (ar.) 257; —, On  
     Great, 270; — Field, 246,  
     247, 254, 256, 258, 263, 268,  
     269, 273, 290; — Mead,  
     Part of, 245; — Meadow,  
     252, 266, 270, 282, 285; —  
     Meadow Ash Ground, 262;  
     — Meadow Seamers, 262;  
     — Piece, First, 256, 276,  
     286  
 Conduit Field, 246; — Pasture,  
     256  
 Coney Bowers, 245; — Burrow,  
     288; — Burrow Field, 251;  
     — Burrows, 261; — Fare,  
     256, (ar. 4a.) 263, 243, 280;  
     — Farrow, 266; — Field,  
     268, 286; — Fir, 257; — Fir  
     Pasture, 249; — Furrow,  
     Great, 254; — Mere, 281;  
     — Wood Spring, 282  
 Coneyford, Little .. .. . 254  
 Constables Meadow .. 262  
 Cooches .. .. . 256  
 Cook Field .. .. . 257  
 Cooks, 250, 251, 271, 276; —  
     Appleton, 259; — Croft,  
     249, 262; — Field, 250,  
     263, 273, 288; — Pasture,  
     285; — Pightle, 250  
 Coole Croft .. .. . 261  
 Coomb, New .. .. . 290  
 Coombs Hill .. .. . 254  
 Coopers and Woodleys, 268; —  
     Croft, 261, 280; — Garden,  
     256; — Pasture, 276  
 Cootes Meadow, 281; — Pas-  
     ture, 281  
 Coothill, Great and Little 256  
 Copland Croft .. .. . 290  
 Coppdown .. .. . 262  
 Coppens Field .. .. . 251  
 Coppice Field.. 245, 247, 285

- Coppin Hill<sup>1</sup> .. .. . 264  
 Coppings Field .. .. . 253  
 Copstones .. .. . 280  
 Copy Croft, 280; — Field, 262;  
 — Land, 256; — Ley, 263,  
 273  
 Copyhold Piece .. .. . 256  
 Corburn Field .. .. . 247  
 Corken, 281; — Field, 278  
 Corn Field .. .. . 260  
 Cornells, 278; — Field, 256,  
 272; — Long Pasture,  
 250  
 Corner Field .. .. . 251  
 Cornwallis .. .. . 253  
 Cort Field .. .. . 259  
 Cot Croft .. .. . 248  
 Cottons, Great and Little, 263;  
 — Acre, 257  
 Court Field, 256; — Field, 13-  
 acre, 274; — Piece, 275  
 Covens and Covens Meadow  
 282  
 Coverdale .. .. . 266  
 Cow Fen, 266; — Pasture,  
 247, 248; — Plain, 272;  
 — Shadows, 257  
 Cowens .. .. . 272  
 Cowlands .. .. . 248  
 Cows Bottom .. .. . 279  
 Cows Marsh .. .. . 251  
 Cox Croft, 290; — Field, 247,  
 262, 277; — Leys, 262  
 Coxall Piece Pasture .. 261  
 Coxhill, Eleven Acre .. 261  
 Coxs Field .. .. . 271  
 Crab Croft, Little, 270; — Field,  
 261; — Hill, Old, 257; —  
 Hill, Upper, 281  
 Crab-tree, Little, &c., 258; —  
 Hither, 262; — Chaseway,  
 258; Croft, 266; — Field,  
 251, 256, 288; — Ley, 278;  
 — Meadow, 257, 286; —  
 Piece, 270  
 Crabbs, 248; — Close, 261; —  
 Croft, 253  
 Cracklings .. .. . 263, 290  
 Cracknalls, 251, 261; — Field,  
 257  
 Cradle Field .. .. . 256  
 Craggs, 276; — Lower, 279  
 Cranes, Upper and Lower, 254  
 Crannoeks .. .. . 281  
 Cranoke .. .. . 248  
 Cranny, Upper and Lower, 288  
 Crag, Upper .. .. . 279  
 Creeting Mead .. .. . 280  
 Creeting Hyde .. .. . 289  
 Cressells .. .. . 266  
 Cressing Field .. .. . 253  
 Cricket Ground (ar. 3a.) 256  
 Crickland .. .. . 290  
 Cricks, 249; — Field, 256  
 Crinch Croft .. .. . 283  
 Crippling Hall (10a.) ... 244  
 Crisels, Part of, 258; — Croft,  
 248; — Meadow, 274  
 Crock Land .. .. . 261  
 Croft, The, 247, 248, 257, 268,  
 279; — Hither & Further,  
 251; — Short and Long,  
 248; — Field, 274; —  
 Meadow, 248  
 Croftins, Little .. .. . 259  
 Croftons, Further and Middle 259  
 Crokers, Little .. .. . 256  
 Crone Hill .. .. . 288  
 Crook Field, 285; — Meadow,  
 276  
 Crooked Croft, 278; — Ley,  
 290; — Ridge, 263  
 Crooks Field, 279; — Wood,  
 279

<sup>1</sup> 'Cospishill,' 'Cospingho,' 'Coppingtrowe' in Dogfen, A.D. 1600.

- Cross Cows, 282; — Croft, 244, 253; — Croft Park, 273; — Field, 257, 259, 277, 280; — Gates, 262, 288; — Needlings, 282; — Path Field, 248, 249, 251, 253, 256, 259, 260, 261, 263, 269, 274, 280, 281, 282, 288, 290; — Path Field, Doly, 255; — Path Meadow, 261; — Path Weavers, 267; — Path Ley, 254; — Road Field, 256; — Shot, 263, 288
- Crossings, First & Further 253
- Crotch Ponds . . . . . 256
- Crouch Acre, 263; — Field, 268; — Green Field, 262
- Crow Field, 280; — Ley, 249; — Mead, 280; — Stones, 280
- Crows Field 256; — Parlour, 251
- Crowbridge Field . . . . . 261
- Crowley, Little, 247; — Field 247
- Croydmore, Great & Little, 263
- Cuckow Chase . . . . . 263
- Cucumber Field 288; — Ley, 260
- Culvedons, Great and Little, 266
- Culverdown<sup>1</sup> . . . . . 244
- Cupids Garden . . . . . 257
- Curbits . . . . . 276
- Cut Field, Great, 257; — Maple Field, 263
- Cutbridge Field Park . . . . . 260
- Cutbush . . . . . 257
- Cutters, Great and Little . . . . . 254
- Dagens . . . . . 244
- Dagons Field . . . . . 273
- Dagworth Wood . . . . . 269, 273
- Dairy Wood . . . . . 244
- Daisy Brooms . . . . . 255
- Dallow, Great and Little . . . . . 262
- Damas Croft<sup>2</sup> . . . . . 264
- Damsel Ley . . . . . 286
- Damons Wood . . . . . 274
- Danbury Field . . . . . 273
- Dane Pit . . . . . 247
- Danglely Field . . . . . 257
- Daniels, Upper and Lower, 285
- Dansies Pasture . . . . . 280
- Dare Field . . . . . 278
- Darnels . . . . . 274
- Daveys Field, 288; — Pasture, 254
- Daw Field, 278; — Field Ash Ground, 278
- Dawes, 248, 276; — Field, 288
- Dawsalls, Great and Little, 278; — Mead, 278
- Dead Acre, 244; — Lane Field, 251; — Womans, 250 (*see also* Dedmans); — Wood Field, 260
- Deal Field . . . . . 261, 268
- Dean Field, 254; — Ley, 263; — Lodge, Great & Lower, 247; — Meadow, 281
- Deanery Meadow . . . . . 251
- Deans Wood Field . . . . . 269
- Dearsleys, Upper & Lower, 283
- Deaths Meadow . . . . . 267
- Decoy Pasture . . . . . 256
- Dedmans Oak . . . . . 272
- Deeks . . . . . 250
- Dees Bottom . . . . . 261
- Delight, New . . . . . 256
- Delsey Pasture . . . . . 291
- Delvyn (Delvin) Field 259, 263
- Dennis Ley . . . . . 282
- Dents . . . . . 527
- Devils Grove Pightle, 281; — Hole, 278

<sup>1</sup> 'Culvertone,' A.D. 1600; and 'Culvertons' in Lamarsh.

<sup>2</sup> 'Damas Croft *alias* Damaries,' A.D. 1600.

- Dews Garden . . . . . 280  
 Dial Field . . . . . 270  
 Dick Croft, Long . . . . . 257  
 Dickett . . . . . 290  
 Dicks Field . . . . . 268, 282  
 Dig Field . . . . . 251  
 Digbys Mead, 279; — Orchard,  
 257  
 Dilsey, Great and Little . . 291  
 Dimagates . . . . . 281  
 Din Acre . . . . . 280  
 Dines, Little, 257, 276; —  
 Field, 278, 282  
 Dinkalls . . . . . 256  
 Dish House Field . . . . . 281  
 Dishes Mead, 281; — Pasture,  
 281  
 Ditch Acre . . . . . 246  
 Dobs Croft . . . . . 263  
 Dobsons, Great and Little, 251  
 Dock Acre, 257; — Croft, 250,  
 268, 277; — Fens, Upper,  
 &c., 252; — Meadow, 256;  
 — Pasture, 261  
 Doctor . . . . . 259  
 Doddens, Great and Little, 285  
 Dodders . . . . . 291  
 Dodds Field, 256, 259, 288; —  
 Ley, 250  
 Doe Hill . . . . . 288  
 Does Meadow . . . . . 261  
 Dog Meadow, 245; — House  
 Field, 256; — House,  
 Grove, 268  
 Dogs Field, 245; — Pasture, 262  
 Dole, Broad, 247; — Croft, 280;  
 — Field, 251, 257, 260, 262,  
 263, 274, 281, 289, 291; —  
 Ley, 248; — Piece, 286  
 Doll Pit, 8-acre, 248 (*see also*  
 Dool)  
 Dolery, Little, 247; — Wood 247  
 Doly Cross Path Field . . 255  
 Dool, Stony, 249; — Field, 256,  
 259, 266, 268, 272, 273, 277,  
 278, 279, 280, 288; — Hev-  
 ington, 267; — Meadow,  
 281; — Path Field, 266  
 (*see also* Dole)  
 Dooley, Great and Little, 266;  
 — Fen, 261; — Field, 261,  
 282; — High Field, 285;  
 — Mitchells, 272  
 Dools, Great and Little, 264  
 Don Croft . . . . . 281  
 Donjohns, 261; — Field, 261  
 (*see also* Dungeons)  
 Dordells Meadow . . . . . 286  
 Dove Field, 288; — Shots, 282  
 Dovehouse Croft, 256, 283, 288;  
 — Close, 248, 250; — Field,  
 244, 249, 252, 253, 256, 257,  
 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264,  
 266<sup>1</sup>, 267, 268, 269, 270, 273,  
 276, 279, 281, 285, 286, 288,  
 290, 291; — Ley, 250, 251,  
 274; — Ley Wood Pasture,  
 247; — Pasture, 247, 254,  
 263, 278, 281; — Wood, 261  
 Dow, Upper and Lower, 261  
 Down, The, 263; — Great and  
 Little, 251, 280; — Field,  
 244, 259, 280; — Hill Field,  
 256; — Hilly, 245; —  
 Slade, 259  
 Downs, 252, 277; — Upper and  
 Lower, 288  
 Downside Hill . . . . . 254  
 Downwood Mead . . . . . 269  
 Double Shots . . . . . 253, 257  
 Dovers, Upper and Lower 259  
 Doxeys . . . . . 249  
 Dragons Hill . . . . . 262  
 Drags Croft . . . . . 245

<sup>1</sup> 'Dovehouse Croft,' A.D. 1600.

- Drains, 272; — Croft, 256  
 Drift, 247, 248, 249, 253, 267, 285  
 Driftway . . . . . 254  
 Drift Meadow . . . . . 258  
 Drindles . . . . . 250  
 Dripping Pan Field . . . . . 280  
 Drivers . . . . . 276  
 Drugs . . . . . 252  
 Duck End Field, 257, 275, 282;  
 — End Mead and Pasture,  
 280; — Field, 288  
 Ducks Croft, 273; — Field, Great  
 and Little, 256; — Pits, 272  
 Duds Meadow . . . . . 258  
 Duncell . . . . . 257  
 Duncers . . . . . 288  
 Dungeon . . . . . 277  
 Dungeons, 277 (*see also* Don-  
 johns)  
 Dunkirk . . . . . 268, 288  
 Dunmow Gate . . . . . 280  
 Dunny Meadow . . . . . 261  
 Dunstables . . . . . 290  
 Dunstalls, 256; — Field, 256  
 Dunstons . . . . . 250  
 Durks Pightle . . . . . 247  
 Duskins, Great and Little 260  
 Dutch Croft . . . . . 290  
 Dutches, Great and Little, 256;  
 — Field, 286  
 Dyers, Great and Little, 244; —  
 Little, 273; — Field, 257;  
 — Pasture, 256  
 Dysters . . . . . 254  
 Eagle Ley . . . . . 257  
 Earth Pits Pasture . . . . . 280  
 East Croft, 249; — Field, 247,  
 256  
 Easty, Little . . . . . 269  
 Ebbitts, Long . . . . . 255  
 Ebling . . . . . 255  
 Eddles Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Edge Turners Field . . . . . 289  
 Edmunds Down, 248; — Mea-  
 dow, 288  
 Edmondsey Ley, 260; — Wood  
 Ley, 260  
 Edy Field . . . . . 290  
 Eeds Field . . . . . 259  
 Egg Field, 263; — Meadow, 272  
 Eggmore Field . . . . . 256  
 Eglands . . . . . 247  
 Elder Gate, 255; — Stubbs, 276  
 Ell Field, 280; — Piece, 263  
 (*see also* L)  
 Eleys Ley, 263; — Field, 278;  
 — Meadow, 263  
 Ellen Acre . . . . . 279  
 Elizas, 252, 258, 274; — Great  
 and Little, 248  
 Elm Grove, 250; — Field, 251,  
 257, 276, 281; — Ley, 245,  
 — Vents, 273  
 Elmer . . . . . 281  
 Elms, Great and Little, 263; —  
 Upper and Lower, 266; —  
 Meadow, 288; — Wood, 279  
 Elsdon, Home . . . . . 279  
 Emberson, Great . . . . . 256  
 Emsons . . . . . 250, 281  
 Englands, First & Second, 254;  
 — Field, 264  
 Entry, Long, 245, 274; — Hill,  
 254; — Meadow, 254, 263  
 Essex Field, 245; — Ley, 276,  
 279; — Pasture, 245; —  
 Went, 276  
 Etch, Broad, 259; —, Pea, 268;  
 — Ley, 263  
 Etch—*see* Polleys  
 Etches, Lower and Short 249  
 Ethridge Field . . . . . 268, 269  
 Everitts . . . . . 244  
 Eves Close . . . . . 260  
 Exeters . . . . . 278



- Fair Field . . . . . 253, 282  
 Fairbanks . . . . . 248  
 Fairy Croft . . . . . 261  
 Falgate Field . . . . . 246  
 Fallshams . . . . . 269  
 Fanny Ley . . . . . 278  
 Fany Field . . . . . 253  
 Far Field . . . . . 255  
 Farthing Oak . . . . . 255  
 Fearts, Great and Little, 258  
 Felsted Field . . . . . 256  
 Fen, The, 259; — Lower, 261;  
 — Croft, 266; — Croft  
 Dobbys Field, 259; — Field,  
 251; — Meadow, 263  
 Fence Croft . . . . . 248  
 Fenners Chaseway, 263; —  
 Field, 268  
 Fenns Field . . . . . 246  
 Fern Field . . . . . 279  
 Ferry Field . . . . . 263  
 Ferriers Meadow . . . . . 255  
 Fibs Field . . . . . 263  
 Fidlers Fen . . . . . 268  
 Finch Field . . . . . 263  
 Finches Field . . . . . 283  
 Finchs Field . . . . . 282, 283  
 Firmins Hill, Great & Little, 274  
 Fish Pond Ley . . . . . 253  
 Fishers Croft, 257; — Field, 257  
 Fitches, 272; — Field, 288;  
 — Ley, 281  
 Fitzjohns Grove . . . . . 261  
 Five-Corners . . . . . 256  
 Flackmans Field . . . . . 281  
 Flag Meadow . . . . . 251, 285  
 Flaggy Field, 289; — Meadow,  
 281  
 Flakes Field . . . . . 251  
 Flanders . . . . . 251  
 Flash Field, 262; — Meadow  
 Field, 262  
 Flat Ley . . . . . 259  
 Flax Ley . . . . . 247  
 Flee Hall Field . . . . . 247  
 Fleeting Woods . . . . . 283  
 Fletchers . . . . . 251  
 Flodderweck (or wick) . . . . . 281  
 Floodgate Field, 261; — Mea-  
 dow, 258, 278  
 Flowers Field . . . . . 247  
 Flowlings . . . . . 248  
 Flux Field . . . . . 272  
 Folly, 263; — First, etc., 261;  
 — The, 282; — Field, 251,  
 261, 268  
 Foot Croft . . . . . 258  
 Footpath Field . . . . . 266  
 Foots Field, 269; — Pasture  
 Field, 285  
 Ford Pasture . . . . . 256  
 Fords Piece . . . . . 262  
 Fore Croft, 285; — Field, 251;  
 — Ley, 262; — Roydon, 283  
 Forefar Field . . . . . 266  
 Forsters Mead . . . . . 257  
 Fosters Field . . . . . 261  
 Fountains . . . . . 257  
 Four Ash Field and Piece, 280;  
 — Corners, 251; — Journies  
 Pasture, 263  
 Fowel Piece . . . . . 250  
 Fowes Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Fowlers . . . . . 283  
 Fowls Wood . . . . . 260  
 Foxburrow Hills, 260; — Wood,  
 255  
 Fox Burrows, Great, 263, 268;  
 — Great and Little, 275; —  
 Earth Field, 267; — Earth  
 Meadow, 258; — Field,  
 289; — Hill, Home, 271;  
 — Holes, 250, 270  
 Foxs Croft, 268; — Pasture, 245  
 France, 276; — Field, 245  
 Frankland Field . . . . . 276

Franklins Ten ( <i>5a.</i> ) . . . . .	288	Garlands Bottom, 273; — Croft,	
Franks Field . . . . .	261, 276, 279	273; — Wood, 283	
Freemans Croft . . . . .	288	Garmoor . . . . .	270
French Field . . . . .	278, 283	Garrett Field, High, 251; — Ley,	
Frenchs Ley . . . . .	257	285; — Pasture, High, 260	
Friars Field, 251; — Grove, 251		Garretts Ley . . . . .	276
Frizes . . . . .	282	Garrods, Great and Little, 280;	
Frogs Ley . . . . .	257	— Field, 249; — Ley, 273;	
Frost Field, 249; — Meadow,		— Mead Field, 280	
260, 263; — Pasture, 248		Gartridge Meadow . . . . .	263
Frowards . . . . .	261	Gatewoods Field . . . . .	263
Fruit Pasture . . . . .	261	Gauls . . . . .	263
Fryars Field . . . . .	281	Gensford . . . . .	257
Fullers, 248; — First, etc., 247;		Gentlemen Close . . . . .	261
— Field, 257, 261, 278		Gentneys . . . . .	256
Furners Field . . . . .	256	Gentry Field <sup>2</sup> . . . . .	273
Furrels . . . . .	279	Gentrys . . . . .	280
Furze Field, 254; — Piece, 278		George Field . . . . .	256
		Georges, Long and Great, 253;	
Gable Meadow . . . . .	261	— Ley, 274	
Gage Field . . . . .	277	Gestingthorpe Field . . . . .	259
Gages, Long and Great . . . . .	259	Gibbons, 249; — End Field,	
Gains <sup>1</sup> , Great, 278; — Little,		253; — Wood, 281	
278; — Small, 247, 280		Gibraltar . . . . .	263
Galley Field, Great and Little,		Gidding Field . . . . .	263
259; — Field Pasture, 261;		Giddy Field . . . . .	277
— Hill, 255		Gilbeys Field . . . . .	257
Gallow Field, 249, 280; — Field,		Gilders, Great and Little . . . . .	262
Great and Little, 250, 262;		Gilding Acre . . . . .	262
— End Field, 249		Giles Croft . . . . .	259
Gambly Field . . . . .	244	Gillions Field . . . . .	273
Ganges Field . . . . .	251	Ginners Bowers . . . . .	274
Gannex . . . . .	280	Gingerbread Field . . . . .	280
Ganny Croft . . . . .	244	Gipsy Field . . . . .	244
Gant Field . . . . .	278	Gipseys, Great . . . . .	282
Gardeners (Gardner or Gardi-		Gladwells . . . . .	248
ner), 253; — Field 262, 268;		Glan Field . . . . .	277
— Ley, 251; — Spring,		Glazen Wood Field . . . . .	282
260; — Wood, 245		Glebe Field . . . . .	255

<sup>1</sup> "Hide and Gain did anciently signify arable land. For of old, to gain the land was as much as to till it."

Gainage (Lat. *wainagium*. Fr. *gainage*) sometimes meant the materials for tillage, sometimes the land itself, sometimes the profit raised by cultivating it (Cowel's *Law Dictionary*).

<sup>2</sup> 'Gentries Croft *alias* Crowchcroft,' A.D. 1600.

Gloretts, Great and Little, 277; — Pasture, 277	Gossbolts, First and Second, 273; — Pasture, 273
Glover Pasture . . . . . 280	Gosses . . . . . 263
Glys Leys . . . . . 257	Gotty Croft . . . . . 281
Gobbarbs . . . . . 263	Govers . . . . . 249
Godfreys . . . . . 263	Gowers Field . . . . . 291
Godlys Field . . . . . 244	Goweses Meadow . . . . . 290
Godlings, First and Second, 253	Goyes Piece, Great . . . . . 263
Gods Garden . . . . . 274	Grandon Hall Pasture . . . . . 254
Gold Lands . . . . . 273	Grange, Seven Acre . . . . . 288
Goldamers . . . . . 253	Grass Moor, 244; — Park, 286
Golden Field, Great, &c., 254; — Field, Middle, 254; — Ley, 254; — Meadow, 257; — Hall Field, 281	Grassberrys . . . . . 286
Goldens . . . . . 257	Grashalls Wood . . . . . 290
Golding Field, 283, 289; — Further, 274	Grave Etch . . . . . 261
Goldings, 261; — Charity, 288; — Great and Little, 263	Gravel Lees . . . . . 280
Goldners . . . . . 251	Gravel-Pit, 268; — Field, 249, 251, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 263, 264 <sup>1</sup> , 267, 271, 272, 274, 275, 276, 279, 281, 282, 288; — Meadow, 285; — Ley, 278; — Moor, 280
Golds Field, 277; — Grove Field, 275	Gravel-Pits . . . . . 290
Goldsticks Field . . . . . 278	Graynes Hill . . . . . 253
Goldstones, Great & Little, 248	Grays, 257, 263; — Field, 288
Goles . . . . . 263	Greatheads . . . . . 258
Gollingale . . . . . 283	Grecian Grove . . . . . 257
Good Allens, 254; — for nothing Field, 251	Gregs Field . . . . . 256
Goodleys Meadow . . . . . 261	Green Bottoms, 257; — Croft, 262; — Field, 255, 256
Goodmans, 251; — Rows, 259	Greenfields . . . . . 256
Goodsons Ley . . . . . 260	Greenland . . . . . 266
Goold Field . . . . . 273	Greens Ley . . . . . 276
Goose Aire, 248; — Dung Field, 279; — Ley Field, 286; — Leys, Upper and Lower, 250; — Leys Field, 281; — Neck, 290	Greenstead, Great & Little, 261
Gooseberry Field . . . . . 268	Greenways . . . . . 252
Gore, The . . . . . 256	Greenwoods, Late . . . . . 270
Gosfield Pasture . . . . . 288	Grey Wheat Field . . . . . 256
	Griggs, 266 <sup>2</sup> ; — Great and Little, 263; — Upper and Lower, 266; — Croft, 263
	Grimes, 256; — Part of, 280
	Grinsells . . . . . 268

<sup>1</sup> 'Gravell Hill,' A.D. 1600.

<sup>2</sup> 'Griggs' in Henny Magna, A.D. 1600.

- Grove, The, 245, 248; — Field, 247, 250, 251, 254, 256, 257, 258, 261, 269, 273, 279, 288; — Ley, 286; — Meadow, 257; — Pasture, 246, 256
- Grubs Field, 278; — Ley, 288
- Guinea Field . . . . . 251
- Gull Field . . . . . 254
- Gulls, 282; — Hither & Further, 282; — Croft, 253
- Gun Sloughs . . . . . 279
- Guns Field . . . . . 280
- Gunshot . . . . . 256
- Gunnels, Great . . . . . 277
- Gunners Croft . . . . . 244
- Gunns Pasture . . . . . 281
- Gunsteads Field . . . . . 261
- Gurtens Meadow . . . . . 263
- Hagbush Field: . . . . . 264
- Hales . . . . . 291
- Halfpenny Piece . . . . . 249
- Hall Croft, 280; — Field, 257; — Greens, 252; — Went, Great and Little, 276
- Halstead Field . . . . . 263
- Ham, Long and Short . . . . . 272
- Hamblins, 251; — Great and Little, 251
- Hamlets, Great and Little, 273
- Hammonds, 248; — Meadow, 274
- Handpit Field . . . . . 282
- Hanging Field, 244, 253; — Hill, 247, 251
- Hangings, First and Second, 282
- Hankins Field . . . . . 282
- Harbers Land . . . . . 288
- Hard Water Field . . . . . 251
- Hardens . . . . . 286
- Hardings Pasture . . . . . 281
- Hare Croft, 278; — Hill Pasture, 267; — Pit, 256; — Pond Field, 251
- Hares Field, 247; — Pasture, 248, 263
- Harlow Hill . . . . . 269
- Harlinghams . . . . . 262, 268
- Harmas, Little . . . . . 260
- Harvus's Bottom . . . . . 262
- Harp, The (glebe), 258; — Pond, 281
- Harrington Field . . . . . 282
- Harris Field . . . . . 279
- Harrisons Pasture . . . . . 267
- Harrow, First and Further, 268; — Field, 263
- Harrowdown, Long, 250; —, Stone, 250
- Harry Smiths Field<sup>2</sup> . . . . . 257
- Hart Beams, 268; — Grove, 285
- Harts, Upper and Lower, 255; — Close, 279; — Field, 273; — Ley, 262; — Meadow, 262
- Harvest Croft . . . . . 254, 286
- Harveys, Great and Little, 256; — Middle, &c., 272; — Field, 288; — Pasture, 256
- Haseley, Great and Little, 248
- Hatch Field . . . . . 255, 257
- Hatches Fore Field . . . . . 253
- Hatchett Fore Field . . . . . 282
- Hatts Field . . . . . 288
- Hauses . . . . . 253
- Hautboys . . . . . 244
- Haven Wood, 254; — Croft, 254
- Haverhill Field . . . . . 281
- Haw Field . . . . . 286
- Hawbush, 251; — Field, 261
- Hawes, Old . . . . . 257
- Haweys Croft . . . . . 264
- Hawk, Carters, 254; — Meadow, Great, 246; — Moors, 278

<sup>1</sup> *Id.* A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Harry Smithes Acre' in Althamstone, A.D. 1600.

- Hawking Bags . . . . . 256  
 Hawkins, 244, 257; — Pasture,  
 273<sup>1</sup>  
 Hawks Nest, 281; — Nest  
 Wood, 282  
 Haws, First and Further 280  
 Haycock, Long and Short, 250;  
 — Field, 256  
 Haydens . . . . . 257  
 Hayleys . . . . . 244  
 Hays, Great and Little, 263; —  
 Pasture, 253  
 Hazel Croft, 248, 257; — Field,  
 251; — Spring, 278  
 Hazeley . . . . . 256  
 Hazels . . . . . 252  
 Hazletons . . . . . 251  
 Head Acre . . . . . 246  
 Heapney Field . . . . . 261  
 Heards Pasture, 255; — Pightle,  
 257  
 Hearn Field . . . . . 259  
 Hearse, The, 278; — Croft, 261  
 Heart Beam . . . . . 288  
 Heater Field . . . . . 260, 261  
 Heathen Ley . . . . . 264  
 Heathens . . . . . 277  
 Hebriges, Further, etc. . . 248  
 Heckford Ley . . . . . 261  
 Hedge Field . . . . . 251  
 Hedingham Field, 263; — Ley,  
 262  
 Hedwins Hop Ground . . 277  
 Helens Croft . . . . . 254  
 Hemp Cote Londes . . . 257  
 Hemplings . . . . . 257  
 Henim Wood Field . . . 281  
 Henny Common Mead . . 264  
 Herbages . . . . . 248  
 Herbs Field . . . . . 244  
 Herring Shot . . . . . 257  
 Herrings Land . . . . . 257  
 Herriots, Further & Hither, 251  
 Hertford End Pasture . . 256  
 Hetby Ley . . . . . 286  
 Heving Wood . . . . . 254  
 Hew Field . . . . . 263  
 Heybridge Ley . . . . . 274  
 Heymer . . . . . 257  
 Hickrights, 277; — Boxted, 277  
 Hicks Garden, 288; — Ley,  
 250; — Pasture, 256  
 Hide — see Hyde  
 High Croft Wood, 254; — Wood  
 Field, 263; — Woods, 262  
 Highlanders . . . . . 290  
 Hilbury Field . . . . . 249  
 Hills Field, 273, 285; — Ley,  
 263; — Pasture, 273  
 Hillyards, Great . . . . 273  
 Hirst, Great; —, Lee, 286  
 Hithergoods Croft . . . 281  
 Hobbie Field, Great & Little, 249  
 Hobbes, 275; — Great and  
 Little, 275  
 Hobby Binds Pasture . . 280  
 Hoblets . . . . . 273  
 Hoblin Field . . . . . 261  
 Hobs (Hobbs) Hall, 256; —  
 Field, 278; — Ley, 280;  
 — Wood, 261; — Croft,  
 251; — Meadow, 288  
 Hockett . . . . . 272  
 Hoddy Corner . . . . . 263  
 Hodges Field, 251; — Lane  
 Field, 251; — Pasture, 261  
 Hoe Field, 278; — Lane Field,  
 Great and Little, 250  
 Hogs Cote, 290; — Cote Field,  
 251, 257; — Court, 256;  
 — Croft, 263  
 Hogget Field . . . . . 283  
 Hogshead Vent . . . . . 247  
 Hoicks, Great . . . . . 288

<sup>1</sup> 'Hawkins Croft,' A.D. 1600.

- Holborn . . . . . 282  
 Holbrews, Great and Little, 288  
 Holdens Wood . . . . . 244, 266  
 Holders Field . . . . . 289  
 Hole Meadow, 257; — Pasture,  
     251  
 Holeyards, Great and Little, 261  
 Holland Bottom, 254; — Field,  
     288  
 Hollands, Upper and Lower, 253  
 Hollard Field . . . . . 245  
 Hollinghams . . . . . 262  
 Hollow Bottom, 247; — Land,  
     Long, 245; — Piece, 279  
 Holly Bush . . . . . 256  
 Holmes, 248, 285; — Little,  
     266; — Mead, 253; —  
     Pasture, 276  
 Holy Bottoms, 268; — Yards,  
     (ga. ar.) 280  
 Holts Croft . . . . . 280  
 Homely, Old, 278; — Field,  
     Old, 260  
 Homestall, 249, 253; — Chase,  
     256  
 Homestalls (ar. 10a.) . . . . . 281  
 Homs Field . . . . . 285  
 Honey Field . . . . . 259, 281, 282  
 Honeysuckle Field . . . . . 253  
 Hook Field, 263; — Mead, 263;  
     — Wood, 257; — Wood  
     Field, 257  
 Hooked Land . . . . . 261  
 Hooks, 257; — Meadow, 249, 274  
 Hoopers Drift . . . . . 274  
 Hop Field, 278; — Kiln, 262;  
     — Lands, 248; — Ley, 273;  
     — Meadow, 248, 271; —  
     Pieces numerous in 257; —  
     Pole Field, 262  
 Hop-Garden, 251, 253, 256, 272,  
     277; — Field, 261; —  
     Meadow, 251  
 Hop-Ground, 244, 247, 248, 249,  
     250, 251, 252, 257, 258, 259,  
     260, 262, 263, 264, 266, 270,  
     272, 274, 275, 276, 278, 179,  
     282, 285, 288, 290, 291; —  
     Old, 244, 253, 289; — Bock-  
     ing, 272; — Fen, 261; —  
     Chase, 268; — Field, 244,  
     245, 260, 263, 266, 273, 278,  
     280, 282, 286; — Flash  
     Field, 262; — Ley, 282;  
     — Mead, 244, 249, 257; —  
     Moor, 256; — Pasture, 256;  
     — Piece, 267, 280  
 Hopkins, Little . . . . . 244  
 Hoppet, 244, 249, 256 (4), 258,  
     269, 270, 275, 278, 281, 282,  
     285, 288, 290; — Meadow,  
     253; — Piece, 261  
 Horasey Moor . . . . . 283  
 Horn Croft, 275; — Green  
     Wood, 255  
 Hornbeam, Border Wood 278  
 Hornets, 258; — Wood, 274  
 Horns Piece . . . . . 262  
 Hornsey Moor . . . . . 283  
 Horse Croft, 251, 253; — Bean  
     Fen, 256; — Fair Field,  
     253; — Garden, 272; —  
     Hills, 288; — Lands, 256,  
     286; — Ley Crofts, 263; —  
     Marsh, 249, 254; — Pasture,  
     246, 285; — Race, 244  
 Horsen Blackwood, 251; —  
     Block Field, 251  
 Horstuds, Great and Little, 281  
 Hose, The . . . . . 257  
 Hosier Field . . . . . 248  
 Houblon . . . . . 264  
 Houchens . . . . . 282  
 Hough, The . . . . . 259  
 Houkins Hill . . . . . 280  
 Houndsbrook . . . . . 254

- Hounslows . . . . 280  
 Hovel Field, 256; — Ley 257  
 Hovells, Upper and Lower, 257;  
 — Piece, 257  
 How, The, 280; — Upper, 280;  
 — Field 255, 280; — Land,  
 280; Ley, 263; — Mead,  
 256, 280; — Meadow, 256;  
 — Street Ley, 257; —  
 Wood, 257, 274  
 Howards Field, 245; — Mead, 280  
 Howes Went . . . . 276  
 Howletts, 262; — Great, 247;  
 — Meadow, 276  
 Hows Acre . . . . 258  
 Howsey, Hither and Further,  
 257; — Wood, 257  
 Hoy Bush . . . . 263  
 Hubbards, 254, 270; — Field, 245  
 Huchcons Spring . . . 275  
 Hull Croft, 256; — Field, 278;  
 — Hill, 263; — Pasture, 278  
 Hulla Field, First & Second, 288  
 Hullats Field . . . . 274  
 Hums Field . . . . 261  
 Humphreys, 270; — Field, 256,  
 263  
 Humpback Field . . . 257  
 Hundred Acres, The (*oa.* 3*r.*  
 31*p.*), 272; — Acre Piece  
 (*ia.* 3*r.* 32*p.*), 268  
 Hundreds (*2a.* 3*r.* 5*p.*) . . 258  
 Hungary Hills, Great & Little,  
 275  
 Hungerdown, 250, 256, 281; —  
 Great and Little, 244  
 Hungerdowns . . . . 257  
 Hungry Field, 288; — Down,  
 278; — Hill, 288  
 Hunts, 255; — Croft, 257; —  
 Field, 257; — Wood, 262  
 Hunwick Mead<sup>1</sup> . . . . 273  
 Hurdle Bed . . . . 253  
 Hurrells 268; — Field, 259; —  
 Pasture, 257; — Pent, 269  
 Hurry Hills, 260; — Hills  
 Pasture, 261  
 Hutch Ley, Great & Little, 257  
 Hyde,<sup>2</sup> 264, 270; — Barren, 291;  
 —, Bean, 291; —, Glebe,  
 264<sup>3</sup>; — Great, 290, 291;  
 — Little, 264<sup>3</sup>; — Long,  
 291; — Lower, 277; —  
 Middle and Great, 247; —,  
 Nine-acre, 291; — Croft,  
 253; — Pasture, 277; —  
 Wood, 291  
 Hynes Croft . . . . 253  
 Hysons Field . . . . 245  
 Ice House Mead . . . . 260  
 Iceland . . . . 258  
 Idols . . . . 256  
 Ilderole or Flat Acre . . 248  
 Iltling, Great and Little . . 248  
 Impudent Garden (*3a.* 2*r.* 20*p.*)  
 278  
 Ines, Six . . . . 266  
 Inhams . . . . 263  
 Imners Field . . . . 257  
 Innings, Ploughed . . . 250  
 Ippes Ley . . . . 281  
 Ippys Field . . . . 281  
 Isaacs Meadow and Wood 279  
 Isgens . . . . 257  
 Islets, Great and Little . . 263  
 Ives, Middle and Further, 272;  
 — Field, 262  
 Jack Field, 244; — Hop, 256  
 Jackanapes Piece . . . . 275  
 Jackdaw Hop Ground . . 278

<sup>1</sup> 'Little Hunerwick,' A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> See footnote on p. 94 *ante*.<sup>3</sup> 'Le Hide,' A.D. 1600.

- Jackmans, 278; — Great, 28  
 Jackolden Jackling .. .. 288  
 Jacks, Little, 261, 281; — Croft,  
 291; — Grove, 248  
 Jacksolon .. .. 244  
 Jacksons Pasture .. .. 282  
 Jacobs Field, 258, 274; — Well,  
 251  
 James, 263; — Field, 244, 247,  
 268, 286; — Smiths Field,  
 276  
 Jankins .. .. 254  
 Jardine Field .. .. 250  
 Jarget (? Target) Ley .. 260  
 Jargetts, Great and Little, 251  
 Jarmans Field .. .. 281  
 Jarvis Field and Pasture 280  
 Jays, 291; —, Upper, 247, 291;  
 — Pasture, 268  
 Jeakmans .. .. 281  
 Jefferys Mead.. .. 275  
 Jeggings, Upper and Lower 262  
 Jenkins, 291; — 5-acre, 252;  
 — Field, 264<sup>1</sup>  
 Jennings, Great, etc. 247, 285  
 Jenny Berry Ley, 247; — Field,  
 289  
 Jerninghams .. .. 261  
 Jeromes .. .. 251  
 Jerry Wood .. .. 289  
 Jerrys Field .. .. 286, 290  
 Jews Vent, Great & Little, 259  
 Jilts Acre .. .. 280  
 Jobsons Field.. .. 281  
 Jockeys Croft .. .. 280  
 Joes Field .. .. 268  
 Johns Field.. .. 256, 282  
 Johnsons Acre, 257; — Field,  
 278  
 Jones Field .. .. 263, 274  
 Jordans Pasture.. .. 276  
 Josephs Field .. .. 286  
 Josling Field .. .. 251  
 Journies (? Tournies) Lower, 263  
 Joyces, 278; — Field, 280  
 Joyes .. .. 269, 274  
 Jubbs .. .. 262  
 Judas .. .. 257  
 Judd Field .. .. 256  
 Jugs Mead .. .. 280  
 Juices .. .. 280  
 Jump Tree Pasture .. 261  
 June Pasture .. .. 280  
 Junipers Field .. .. 277  
 Kedge Croft .. .. 290  
 Keldon, Great .. .. 259  
 Kellar .. .. 259  
 Kelsea Field .. .. 286  
 Kemp Croft .. .. 257  
 Kemplands Meadow .. 285  
 Kemps Downs, 254; — Field,  
 285  
 Keobles Field .. .. 253  
 Kendalls Croft .. .. 262  
 Kentish Field, 261; — Wood, 282  
 Ketley Field, 278; — Wood, 290  
 Ketrow Field .. .. 263  
 Kettle Field .. .. 247  
 Key Field .. .. 286  
 Keybrew or Marks Mead Pas-  
 ture, 260  
 Kibbles .. .. 258  
 Killikels .. .. 274  
 Kiln Croft, 263, 291; — Field,  
 244, 245, 246, 247, 251, 252,  
 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258,  
 259, 260, 261, 262, 264, 266,  
 267, 268, 270, 273, 275, 278,  
 280, 288, 290; — Field Moor,  
 268; — House Field, 257;  
 — Meadow, 249, 263; —  
 Pasture, 256, 268; — Pit  
 Field, 275

<sup>1</sup> 'Jenkins' and 'Jankins Marsh,' A.D. 1600.



- Kimbrook . . . . . 266  
 King Field, 251, 263, 286, 288;  
 — Ley, 275  
 Kings, 276; — Great, Lower, &c.,  
 245; — Upper and Lower,  
 271; Croft, 278, 280; —  
 Croft, Upper and Lower,  
 257; — Field, 244<sup>1</sup>, 262;  
 — Corner Field, 251; —  
 Fern Field, 266; — Ley,  
 251; — Hill Pasture, 274;  
 — Wood, 260  
 Kinseys . . . . . 285  
 Kirbies . . . . . 285  
 Kitchen Croft, (2a.) 257; (8a.)  
 255; — Field, (1a. 3r. op.)  
 249; (7a. 1r. 13p.) 250;  
 (19a., 7a.) 251; (5a., 7a.)  
 253; (5a., 5a., 3a., 1a. 1r.,  
 5a., 11a., 7a., 8a.) 256; (4a.)  
 260; (6a., 3a.) 261; (4a., 10a.)  
 262; (6a.) 263; (11a.) 272;  
 (8a., 7a.) 273; (12a., 14a.,  
 9a., oa. 2r. 5p.) 275; (1½a.,  
 12a., 5a., 5a.) 277; (15a.)  
 278; (2¼a.) 279; (7½a., 8a.,  
 10a., 8a., 5a., 2½a., 15a.) 280;  
 (6a.) 281; (9a., 12a., 8a.)  
 282; (5a., 4a.) 288; 290; —  
 Ley, (11a. and 11a.) 254;  
 (6a.) 257; — Meadow,  
 (2½a.) 291; — Pasture,  
 (11a.) 245  
 Kitleys Field . . . . . 261  
 Kitlings Field . . . . . 272  
 Knaves Acre . . . . . 268  
 Knightlands . . . . . 282  
 Knightleys, Great and Little,  
 282  
 Knights, Great, 260; — Pasture,  
 259  
 Knot Field . . . . . 254  
 L—see Ell  
 Lacklan, Long and Short, 255  
 Lackley . . . . . 249  
 Ladder Stile Field . . . . . 261  
 Lady Field, 249, 280; — Grove,  
 285; — Ley, 245; — Mea-  
 dow, 290; — Piece, 262;  
 — Wood, 251  
 Lady's Meadow, First & Second,  
 246; — Night Pasture, 274;  
 — Field, 245  
 Lamarsh Field, 244; — Ley,  
 244, 264, 266  
 Lamb Field, 273; — Pit Field,  
 275  
 Lambert Field . . . . . 281  
 Lamberts, 245, 282; — Croft,  
 245; — Field, 263; —  
 Orchard, 251  
 Lambourn Meadow . . . . . 289  
 Lambs Hill . . . . . 252  
 Lamper, Upper and Lower,  
 256; — Pasture, 256; —  
 Spring, Upper, 256  
 Lampit Ley . . . . . 279  
 Lampitts (Lampits), 257, 288;  
 —, Great and Little, 263;  
 — Field, 289; — Meadow,  
 263  
 Lamsey Meadow . . . . . 254  
 Landditch Field . . . . . 257  
 Lands Yard Field . . . . . 245  
 Langley, 262, 266, 291; —  
 Close, 280; — Field, 247;  
 — Mill Field, 261; —  
 Wood, 247  
 Langleys . . . . . 275, 280  
 Languages, Great & Little, 257  
 Lanham . . . . . 257  
 Larches . . . . . 261  
 Larder Ley . . . . . 257  
 Lark Ley . . . . . 290

<sup>1</sup> Kingscroft, A.D. 1600.

- Larkes Hill Pasture . . . . . 263  
 Lassetts . . . . . 251  
 Latchings Field . . . . . 275  
 Latchley Ley . . . . . 257  
 Latches Hop Ground . . . . . 261  
 Lauanders . . . . . 271  
 Lawn, 263, 273; — The, 277;  
   — Long, 257; — North,  
   East, and West, 260; —  
   Pasture, 285  
 Lawyers Field . . . . . 256  
 Lazells, Great, 272; — Orchard,  
   256  
 Leach Field, 259; — Ponds,  
   261, 281, 282  
 Leaden Croft . . . . . 244  
 Lean Croft . . . . . 285  
 Leaping Bar, 280; — Bar Pas-  
   ture, 258  
 Lease Lands Pasture . . . . . 280  
 Leases, Hither and Further, 280  
 Lee Hirst . . . . . 286  
 Leighs Pasture . . . . . 256  
 Leiston Ground . . . . . 267  
 Lemon Croft . . . . . 283  
 Leppingwelles Ground, 262; —  
   Pasture, 269  
 Leston Croft . . . . . 248  
 Let Field, First and Further,  
   245  
 Levelly Wood and Field, 278  
 Lewis Field . . . . . 256, 261  
 Lewsay Field . . . . . 261  
 Lewsays Wood . . . . . 280  
 Ley, The, 248, 253, 255; —  
   Great and Little, 257, 285;  
   —, Long, 250; — New,  
   247, 285; — Old, 245, 247;  
   — Field, 256; — Planta-  
   tion, 261; — Reedings, 281;  
   — Wood, 254  
 Leydens . . . . . 279
- Leys, The, 254; — Field, 256;  
   — Meadow, 285  
 Lie Field, 253; — Wood, 253  
 Lies Field, 263, 273; — Wood,  
   263  
 Light Land Field, 253; — Land  
   Piece, 244, 266; — Waters,  
   288  
 Lightfoot Wood . . . . . 263  
 Lilly Field, 263, 281; — Ley, 260  
 Lime, Upper and Lower, 259;  
   — Pightle, 281  
 Lime-Tree Field, 263; — Pas-  
   ture, 261  
 Lime-Kiln Field . . . . . 251, 277  
 Lims Ley . . . . . 278  
 Linch Field<sup>1</sup> . . . . . 270  
 Lindredge, Digbys, 249; —  
   Kiln, 249; — Pit, 249; —  
   Middle, 249  
 Lindredges . . . . . 249  
 Ling Fen, 256; — Ley, 273<sup>2</sup>; —  
   Wood, 273<sup>2</sup>  
 Lingford Meadow . . . . . 274  
 Lings, Hilly, 288; — Field, 250,  
   257; — Mere (grass), 276;  
   — Pasture, 261  
 Lingwood Field<sup>2</sup> . . . . . 273  
 Linhey Field . . . . . 268  
 Link Field, 263; — Hills, 268;  
   — Ley, 261; — Wood,  
   273<sup>2</sup>; — Wood Field,  
   288  
 Linkey Ley . . . . . 261, 268, 289  
 Links, Hither and Further, 263;  
   — Long and Short, 273<sup>2</sup>; —  
   Field, 263  
 Linnet Field . . . . . 261  
 Linsteds, Upper and Lower, 285  
 Lions, Little, 251; — Ley, 256  
 Lisson Hall Wood . . . . . 263  
 Liston Croft . . . . . 258

<sup>1</sup> 'Le Linch,' A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Le Linke,' A.D. 1600.

Listons Field .. .. .	257	Loseleys .. .. .	277
Littles Field .. .. .	247	Losh House Meadow <sup>2</sup> ..	264
Livermors .. .. .	257	Lost Field, 251; — Land, (2 $\frac{1}{2}$ a.)	
Livinges .. .. .	272	282	
Lizards <sup>1</sup> .. .. .	264	Loundes .. .. .	257
Lock Meadow .. .. .	270	Lovells, 251, 257; — Croft, 250	
Lockerhams .. .. .	286	Lowell .. .. .	266
Locks Field, 261; — Wood,		Lowly Plantation .. ..	260
261; — Pasture, 247		Lowsdale, On, .. .. .	270
Locusts Field.. .. .	256	Lubberhedges Long Croft, 280;	
Lofts Wood .. .. .	263	— Wood, 280	
Lomar Bottom .. .. .	268	Lubbers .. .. .	248
London Croft, 281; — Field,		Lubbies .. .. .	248
269; — Field, Upper and		Lucan Shot .. .. .	278
Lower, 252, 257; — Ley,		Lucerne Field, 257; — Meadow,	
259, 283		247; — Pightle, 288	
Londons .. .. .	262	Lucken, Further .. ..	268
Lonely and Upper Stonley	278	Luckins .. .. .	247
Lones Hale, 263; — Hole, 278		Lucklers .. .. .	281
Longlands .. .. .	247	Lucky Ley .. .. .	282
Longmore .. .. .	270	Lukers Shot .. .. .	278
Longs Field .. .. .	285	Lukin Shot .. .. .	278
Longstones Field .. ..	261	Lullaways .. .. .	267
Loompits .. .. .	257	Lulley Field .. .. .	258
Loop Field .. .. .	278	Lumms, Great and Little,	247
Lophams Ley .. .. .	257	Lurch Field .. .. .	257
Lords Acre, 262; — Croft, 262;		Lye Land .. .. .	256
— Land, 246; — Land		Lymarsh, Great & Little,	258
Wood, 282; — Meadow,		Lynetts .. .. .	272
288; — Orchard, 262		Lysabs .. .. .	258

(To be continued.)

<sup>1</sup> 'Le Lizard,' A.D. 1600.

<sup>2</sup> 'Loshes Leyes,' 'Loshes Mill,' A.D. 1600.

## ARCHÆOLOGICAL NOTES.

---

**Fyfield Church.**—In Morant's account of Fyfield we read that the tithes of that parish were 'confirmed' to the monastery of Bermondsey in 1107 by "Maud wife of Asculph and her son Graald de Tany; who at the same time gave them this church of Fyfield; which grant was confirmed by K. Henry I. and II.<sup>1</sup> Notwithstanding, before the year 1331, this church was taken again from them, by whom doth not appear: and, luckily, before they had got the tithes appropriated to themselves." There has lately come to light a record which throws light on the matter.

In 1342 the prior of Bermondsey brought an action against the parson of Fyfield for payment of an annuity of forty shillings due to his house, and produced in court three documents.<sup>2</sup> These were a deed of Hasculf de Tany—of the family which gave name to Stapleford Tany, a confirmation of the arrangement it contained by the bishop of London in St. Paul's Cathedral, and a fine levied at the Exchequer, after Michaelmas, in 1183. I have examined the transcripts of all three on the rolls of the Court,<sup>3</sup> and find that their purport was this: Prior Bertram and his house released to Hasculf the presentation and advowson of the church, which has been given them by his grandmother Maud, and confirmed by his father Graaland, in return for which Hasculf confirmed to them two-thirds of the tithes from his demesne, together with those from his demesne essarts (that is, forest clearings) made or to be made, and undertook to give them an acre of land on which to erect a tithe barn, and further to secure them a perpetual annuity of forty shillings payable by the parson of Fyfield. Incidentally these documents illustrate the pedigree of the Tanis, a family then of baronial rank in the county, on whom I have said something in my "Geoffrey de Mandeville." It has been said that the Roger who originally gave the Fyfield tithes to Bermondsey was a Tani, but I think it more

<sup>1</sup> See also *Monasticon Anglicanum*, v. 88.

<sup>2</sup> See *Year-Books* (Rolls Series) 16 Ed. III. (2), pp. 550-556.

<sup>3</sup> *Placita de Banco Mich* 16 Ed. III., Ro. 595.

likely, from the action of Hasculf's grandmother, that she was an heiress who brought Fyfield to the family. "1107" which is the date assigned for her gift of the advowson to Bermondsey, seems to me too early to be probable.

The above-mentioned fine of 1183 will prove an important addition to those which the Society has published; for the only fine of the reign among them relates but in part to the county. The original of the Fyfield fine is now lost.

J. H. ROUND.

**The Chapel at Havering-atte-Bower.**—"A Survey of, &c. . . late parcell of the Possessions of Charles Steward late Kinge of England possessed and enjoyed by Henretta Maria his Queen in Right of her Dower taken . . . in the Months of March and Aprill 1649 and 1650," . . . contains some interesting particulars relative to the chapels at Havering.

"The Inhabitants and Parishioners of Haveringe doe clayme the Chappell & Chappell-yard lying betweene the Courtyard on the South part and the Gardens of Havering house on the North parte Abbutting upon the Court yard towards the West and upon Haveringe Greene towards the East contayning in all thirtythree Perches. The Inhabitants tender these ensueng reasons for the continuance of theyre enjoyment of the foresayd Chappell and Chappell-yard, *vizt.* :—

"(1) First. They have quietly enjoyed the said Chappell and Chappell-yard for fower hundred yeares last past and have had free accesse thereunto for Divine service without any lett or Interruption.

"(2) Secondly. Whereas it is alledged that it was the late King's Chappell, wee say that the Kinge had and hath an other chappell adioyning and belonging unto his house, and that this Chappell and the ground is separated from the King's house and chappell with a Pale. Besides The King's Chappells have noe Bells, no High Pewes, and seats, no Churchwardens, no overseeres of the Poore, no vicaridge house, which this Chappell hath and which the Inhabitants Repayred and Reedified upon there owne cost and Charges with the assistance of the vicar of Hornchurch, who ought of right to have repayred the same it being a Chappell belonging tyme out of minde unto Hornchurch Whereupon Mr. Manne was compelled to give forty pounds or thereabouts for repayreing and new building of the sayd Vicaridge house besides heretofore the vicar of Hornchurch did every month Preach in this

Chappell himselfe, and was bound to find a Preaching minister. And tyme out of minde the sayde Vicar did allowe and gave mayntenance towards a Minister unto this Chappell. And for further confirmation, the Inhabitants of Haveringe and Nokehill in tymes past weare wont to goe theyre perambulation or procession to continue and distinguish their proper bounds belonging to theyre Warde and this Chappell from other Wardes and Churches.

“(3) Thirdly. Wee alledge an Act of Parliament in the one and twentieth of Kinge James, Chapter the second, which sayth, That the Kinge, his Heyres, or successors, shall not att any time hereafter sue, implead, or question, any person or persons that have for three score yeares quietly enjoyed any lands, &c.

“(4) Fowerthly. By an ordinance of this present Parliament dated the nine and twentieth of January, 1647, for the settling of Classicall Presbiteries and Congregationall Eldershipps, This Chappell had Mr. Dod, theyre Minister, and Sir Thomas Cheeke, Mr. Pickering, and Mr. Preston approved and allowed of by the Parliament (for their Elders).”

*(Parliamentary Surveys: Essex—13.)*

w. c. w.

**Warr-lands—Customary Junior-right.**—In a rental of the manor of Great Holland in Essex, dated 1679, there were, among other tenants, three copyhold tenants holding *Warr-lands*, namely, John Sandford and Eliz. his wife who paid for Holland Warr and Great Howe Warr 14/9; Joseph Cox who paid for a tenement and 15 acres of Warr-land called Overash alias Wash-house land 7/6 and John Till who paid for a Messuage and 20 acres of Warr-land called Dowmans 3/4. These properties, like most of those held by the remaining 43 copyhold tenants, were each subject to a heriot.

At the end of the rental are these notes, the first of which is interesting as shewing the extent of a Warr-land in Holland: “Every acre of Warr-land containeth two acres of land of the standard measure and all Warr-land is heriotable.

The copyhold lands of this Mannor descend to the youngest sonne, youngest daughter, youngest brother, youngest sister and youngest uncle.”

G. F. BEAUMONT.

## GENERAL MEETING OF THE ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY, HELD AT COLCHESTER CASTLE ON THURSDAY, THE 19th APRIL, 1900.

G. ALAN LOWNDES, ESQ., M.A., PRESIDENT, IN THE CHAIR.

The Secretary read the Annual Report, and the Treasurer's Financial Statement was laid before the meeting, and the same were approved.

It was resolved that the thanks of the meeting be accorded to the President, Vice-Presidents, Council and officers for their services during the past year, and that they be re-elected, with the addition of Sir M. E. Grant-Duff, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S., of Lexden Park, Colchester, as a vice-president, and the Revs. L. N. Prance, M.A., F.S.A., and A. F. Curtis, M.A., as members of the Council, the one to fill a vacancy and the other in the place of Mr. J. F. T. Wiseman, who, having removed to a distant county, was unable to attend the meetings of the Council.

A vote of thanks was passed to Mr. James Round, M.P., for the use of the Castle Library.

It was resolved that Mr. Douglass Round, Mr. Charles Benham, and Mr. P. G. Laver be appointed the Society's representatives on the Museum Committee of the Corporation of Colchester.

Mr. Miller Christy made some interesting remarks on two incised slabs (*see ante* p. 1), and Mr. J. H. Round read a note upon Fyfield church (*see ante* p. 104).

The following candidates were elected members of the Society :—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—

GRANT-DUFF, Sir M. E., P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S., Lexden Park, Colchester.	}	Mr. H. Laver.
BIRMINGHAM CENTRAL FREE LIBRARY.		
CHETHAM'S LIBRARY, Hunt's Bank, Manchester	}	M. G. F. Beaumont.
SYMMONS, FRANCIS RANFORD, Lexden Road, Colchester.		
FOWLER, R. C., Record Office, Chancery Lane, W.C.		Mr. J. H. Round.

In the afternoon a large party, by brake and cycle, proceeded to West Bergholt and thence, under the direction of Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., traced an ancient rampart running from the Bergholt Road down to the river Colne, and onward through and beyond Lexden Park.

On their arrival at Lexden Park, the visitors were welcomed by Sir Mountstuart Grant-Duff, who accompanied the Society through his beautiful grounds, and on returning to the house the company was entertained at tea by Lady Grant-Duff.

Mr. Laver read the following paper :—

ANCIENT RAMPART THROUGH LEXDEN PARK.

“ When last I addressed this Society, about two years ago, on the earthwork between Newbridge on the Colne and the Roman river near Stanway Hall, I was able from various authorities to show that it was known by the name of Grymes Dyke; and I was also able to suggest the probable period of its construction and the object for which it was raised. In the present instance I fear I shall be unable to give you much information on any of these points. I can neither give any special name by which this earthwork has been known nor who were the people that raised it, nor can I give any satisfactory theory as to why it was erected. That there was some very good cause for the enormous amount of work the raising of this bank would have entailed there can be no doubt. It may have been for defence, or it may have been a road of Roman making, starting as it does from a point—the end of Bluebell Grove—where the old road, possibly the British road, from Camulodunum to Verulamium passed.

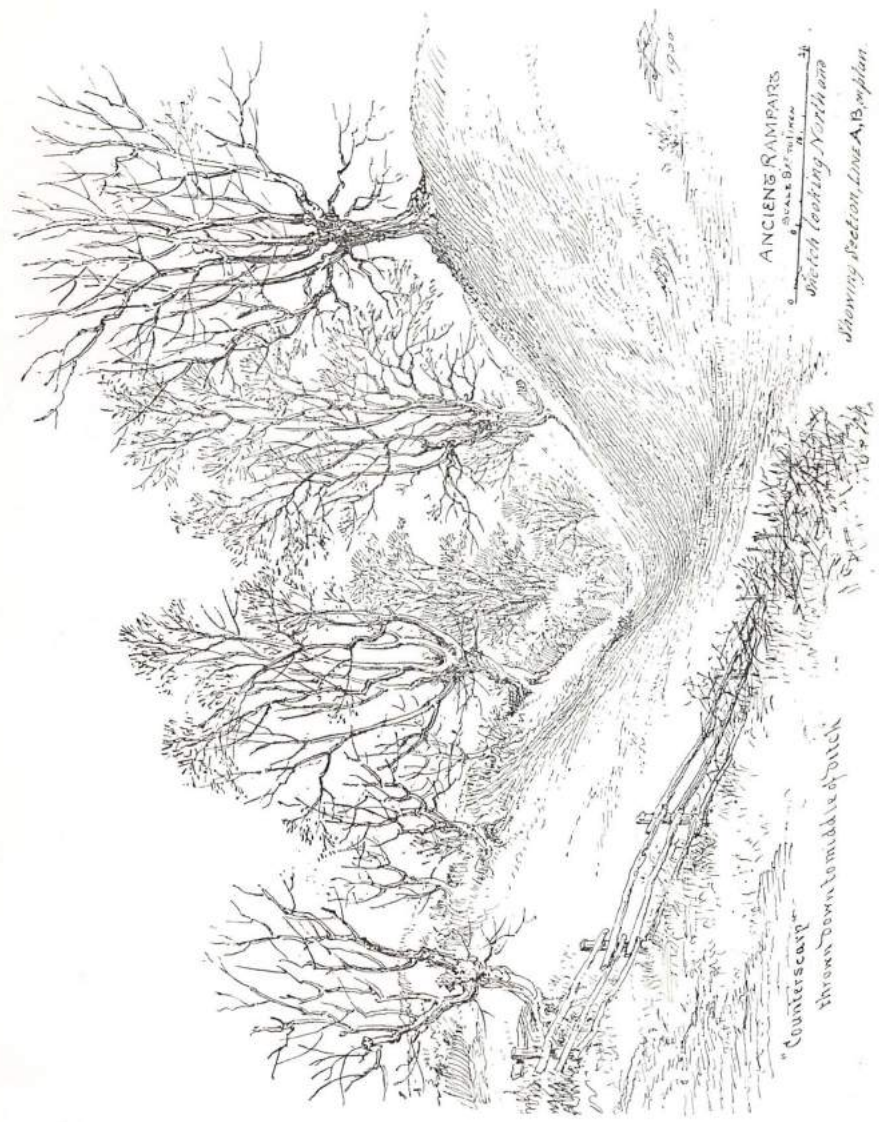
It has been stated that this trench formed the eastern boundary of British Camulodunum, a conclusion arrived at when the Royal Archæological Institute visited Colchester some years ago. But this erroneous idea must have been formed, not by examination of the locality, but by reference to maps only, aided probably by the description of the site of British Camulodunum by the Rev. Henry Jenkins in vol. xxix. of *Archæologia*, which must have been misread and misunderstood from want of knowledge of the site.

In referring to this paper by the Rev. Henry Jenkins in *Archæologia* it must not be supposed that I mention it with the wish for any member of this Society to accept it as any authority for the correctness of the theory as to the position of British Camulodunum. On the contrary I think it is in every respect incorrect and misleading.

The facts adduced are distorted beyond recognition to suit the reverend gentlemen's theories; and this was, unfortunately, not the only case in his writings, as a similar distortion occurs in his description of Colchester Castle as a temple of Claudius.

In a note on page 245 of his paper in *Archæologia*, is an example of his making facts and theories accord. In speaking of the name Vent Field, he says Venta was a place where the Britons convened





ANCIENS RAMPARS  
 DRAWN BY THE AUTHOR  
 Sketch looking Northward  
 Showing Section, Lines A, B, & plan.

"Counterscarp  
 thrown down to middle of ditch"

or met in their several states ; and then from this definition of the term *Venta* (which is not the correct explanation of the term), he argues that the gravel pit known as King Coel's Kitchen, being situate in a field called *Vent Field*, was a British theatre, and that it was from this British theatre the ominous sounds were heard, before the destruction of Roman *Camulodunum*, as recorded by *Tacitus*.

I mention this simply as an example of the distorted facts of which this most mischievous and misleading paper is full.

*Vent Field* means, as any *Essex* person would know, the field in the angle of two or more roads. 'Vent' is simply synonymous with the word 'want,' as in the term 'a three-want way'; or 'want' in this sense may be, and is probably, a corruption of the word 'vent,' arising probably from the habit *Essex* people have of transposing the letters 'v' and 'w.'

In the plan which I have placed in your hands, you will find I have described this trench as 'An Ancient Rampart through *Lexden Park* to *Bergholt Road*,' and in the absence, as I have said before, of any special and well known designation, this must be our name for it. But in this description of it I propose reversing the direction and beginning my remarks from the *Bergholt Road* end, from which we started.

In turning out of *Bergholt Road* into the lane, marked *Baker's Lane* on the plan, a depression will be observed on the right hand ; this is all that remains of the ditch, the lane running on what is left of the earthwork, which is continued to the south, the lane, at the turning, crossing from the rampart to the ditch side. For the next three fields towards the railway it forms their boundary on the east, and is much more perfect, although the outer edge of the ditch has been levelled. It is then cut through by the railway, and continues fairly perfect past the *Lodge Farm*, and from thence to the river exists only as traces, but these are easily followed ; crossing the river, the remains are readily found up to the high-road. Until about 1836 this portion was almost perfect, but *Mr. Preston*, who was then rector of *Lexden*, destroyed it by levelling both bank and ditch.

It was the same gentleman who built the extremely ugly church and rectory-house we now see, and from these we may quite understand that he had not sufficient taste to appreciate any beauty in the diversity and irregularities of the surface this mound produced.

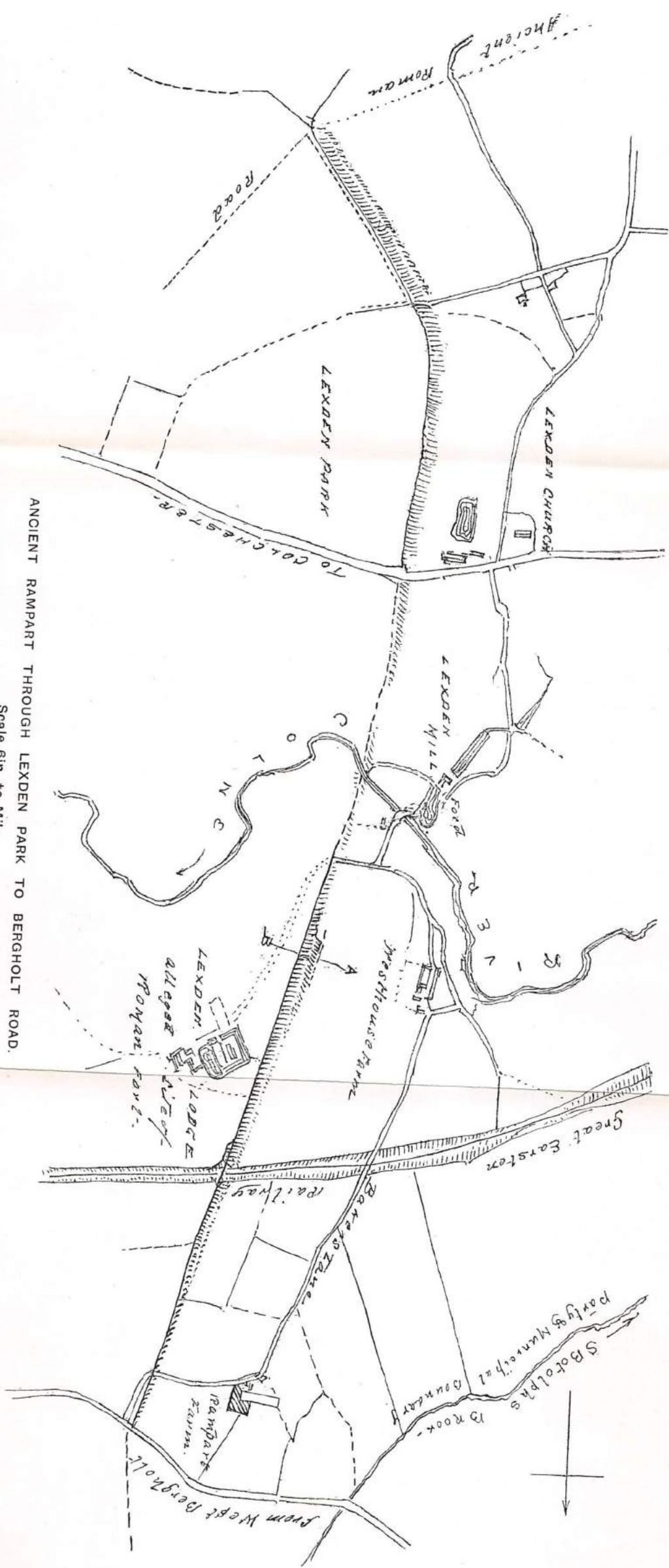
If we follow on the same line and cross the road into *Lexden Park*, we shall find the bank running along the brow of the hill. In the greater part of its course through the park the trench is absent, as, from the steepness of the hill, it was not required.

Outside the park the trench and bank are somewhat overgrown with trees, and this part, from the park fence to the end where it joins the earliest London road, is known as Bluebell Grove. The bank here is gradually being levelled by the plough, but no effort, fortunately, is made to fill the ditch.

The London road from Colchester to the east end of Bluebell Grove is not very apparent, but many more signs of it were to be seen years ago. Its course, however, may be easily traced by excavations across its track, and I was informed by an old man who worked for Miss Knight, that he helped remove many loads of large stones from the remains of this road. A footpath exists to the south, and on looking over the style it will be seen to run over a raised bank towards Pretty-gate Lane. This is the continuation of the road from the direction of Colchester. If we were to follow this raised bank we should reach the Straight Road on Lexden Heath, and standing on the bank there, and looking backwards towards Balcerne Gate, in every part of this line traces of the old road are to be found.

We will now retrace our steps, returning to the Bergholt Road end of this earthwork, where we started from. At this point I can find no traces on the northern side of the road, but there are reasons for supposing that this rampart continued in this direction, that is, towards the north, probably into the Causey at Horkeley, for in one field near the brook there was, a few years ago, a hard road remaining, and this was in the direct line of this rampart towards the Causey.

There is nothing in the appearance of this earthwork incompatible with the supposition that it might have been a road, in fact there is much in favour of this idea; at the same time we cannot be sure it was not raised for defensive purposes, and its position, parallel to, and inside Grymes Dyke, both having their ditches to the west, strengthens this idea, as does also the appearance and size of the bank in the first field adjoining Bergholt road, where it has been to some extent thrown down. The remains here appear to indicate that it was much larger than at any other part of its course and that it might possibly be a portion of a camp built for the defenders of this line of trench. Unless the plan of an earthwork can be fully made out, it becomes sometimes, in this county, extremely difficult to say for what purpose it was designed, as there has been very often so much obliterated by the plough and other agricultural operations that you cannot be sure how much of the original work is apparent and how much has disappeared. And in this one now under consideration, perhaps, if we could see more of



ANCIENT RAMPART THROUGH LEXDEN PARK TO BERGHOLT ROAD.  
Scale 6in. to Mile.

it, that is, of parts now destroyed, we might find that many of our ideas of the purpose and plan would have to be considerably modified.

It has been stated that the Moat farm was originally a Roman block house or fort for the protection of this road, it may be that this view is correct, but it is quite as likely the moat was made at a much later date. But so little is known of these moated houses, of which there are so many in Essex, that it will be as well not to attempt to assign a date for its construction.

Earthworks in the past have been very much neglected by antiquaries, a fact much to be regretted, as we have no remains from earlier ages which can do more to illustrate the history of a district than the banks, mounds, and trenches which occur so frequently in many parts of this country, and which are more than gradually disappearing in all directions. If we have done but little to-day in assigning a date and so on to this fine earth-work we have just visited, we shall at least place on record its condition at the present time, for the use of future students.

The accompanying plan,<sup>1</sup> kindly made for me by Major Bale, from the six-inch Ordnance Map, will give a correct idea of the course and length of this fine earthwork. The dots placed near the river indicate where only traces of the bank are to be found.

The sketch, also by Major Bale, of the bank, ditch, and counterscarp, at the point marked by a line from A to B on the plan, will serve to shew what appearances are presented by this earthwork, where the remains are in a fairly perfect condition."

Before the party dispersed hearty thanks were accorded to Mr. Laver for his paper, and to Sir Mountstuart and Lady Grant-Duff for their kindly welcome.

---

<sup>1</sup> The Society is indebted to Mr. Laver for kindly supplying the blocks for the reproduction of Major Bale's plan and sketch. Ed.

## REPORT FOR 1899.

---

THE steady growth in the numerical strength of the Society which the Council has had the pleasure of recording for some years past, still continues. From a total of about 200 members in 1893, the numbers have risen annually as follows: 1894, 267; 1895, 323; 1896, 329; 1897, 346; 1898, 355; and to-day the roll stands as under:—

Annual Subscribers	...	...	294
Life Compounders	...	...	50
Honorary Members	...	...	9
			—
			353
Elected to-day	...		5
			—
			358
			—

The Council recommends the re-election of the Vice-Presidents, with the addition of Sir Mountstuart E. Grant Duff, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S., of Lexden Park, Colchester; and also that the Reverends L. N. Prance, M.A., F.S.A., and A. F. Curtis, M.A., be elected members of the Council—the one to fill a vacancy, and the other in the place of Mr. J. F. T. Wiseman, who, having removed to a distant county, is unable to attend the meetings of the Council.

Mr. H. Laver, who has kindly examined the accounts of the Society for several years past, having expressed a desire to be relieved from the duties of auditor, the Council has appointed Mr. W. Chapman Waller, F.S.A. in his place.

The revenue received from Subscriptions during the past year exceeded that of any previous year; but the increased expenditure on behalf of the Society more than counterbalances the augmented income, with the result that the balance in hand at the commencement of the account, namely: 44*l.* 19*s.* 2*d.* has been reduced to 23*l.* 4*s.* 8*d.*, and there are out-standing bills amounting to 93*l.* 8*s.* 5*d.* A statement of the receipts and expenditure during the year is appended.

The *Transactions* issued during 1899 extended to upwards of 200 pages and contained numerous illustrations. The drawing of Edwin's Hall was the gratuitous work of our Member Mr. A. B. Bamford; and the block for its reproduction in the pages of the journal was the gift of Mr. I. C. Gould. In thanking these gentlemen for their donations, the Council takes the opportunity of reminding others that similar contributions towards illustrating the journal will from time to time be gladly welcomed.

In addition to the two half-yearly parts of the *Transactions* already mentioned, the Council issued the first instalment of the *Feet of Fines for Essex*. Another instalment of this useful work is in the press and will be issued to members shortly.

*The General Index to the First Ten Volumes of the Transactions*—a work to which the Council attaches great importance—is in type, and will be issued to the subscribers, of whom there are already over 100, at an early date. It is hoped that many members of the Society who have not already subscribed for a copy of the work may yet be induced to do so.

The Index to the recently completed 7th volume of the *Transactions* is in hand and will, with the title pages, be issued in July.

A list of donations to the Society is subjoined.

During the year excursions were made in the neighbourhoods of the Notleys, Hadstock, and Woodham Ferrers, and in all cases were well attended.

It is proposed that the Society shall this year visit Bemfleet, and Stanstead, Haverhill and the neighbouring parishes.

## DONATIONS TO THE SOCIETY.

---

*From the Author.*

- Mr. Dudley Baxter, B.A.—  
Copford Church, An illustrated description of.  
St. Martins, Leicester, The Reformation at  
East Anglian Notes and Queries, Editor of—  
Vol. VIII., Jan. to Dec., 1899.  
Index to Vol. VI.

*From various donors.*

- Lieut.-Col. Breton, R.E.—  
Portions of Skulls, some Bones and Teeth and the remains of an  
iron Knife found during building operations within the  
Ancient Camp at Shoeburyness.

*In aid of the Transactions.*

- Mr. A. B. Bamford—  
Drawing of Edwin's Hall, Woodham Ferrers.  
Mr. I. C. Gould—  
Block of the same.

*From Societies in union for the exchange of publications.*

- The Society of Antiquaries of London—  
Proceedings, Vol. XVII., part 2.  
Society of Antiquaries of Scotland—  
Proceedings, Vol. —  
Royal Archæological Institute—  
Archæological Journal, Vol. LVI.  
British Archæological Association—  
Journal. Vol. V. (New Series).  
Royal Institute of British Architects—  
Journal, Vol. VI., parts 2, 3 and 4 and Vol. VII. parts 1 and 2.  
Kalendar for 1899-1900.



- London and Middlesex Archæological Society –  
Nothing received.
- Saint Paul's Ecclesiological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. IV. part 4.
- Bristol and Gloucester Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. XXI. parts 1 and 2.
- Cambridge Antiquarian Society—  
Proceeding, Vol. IX. (3rd series) part 4.  
List of Members of the Society, 1899.  
The Sources of Archbishop Parker's Collection of MSS.  
Report of the Library Syndicate 1898.
- Chester Archæological Society –  
Transactions Vol. VI. part 3.
- Essex Field Club –  
Essex Naturalist Vol. XI. Nos. 1-3 (Jan. to Mar. 1899).
- East Herts Archæological Society—  
Transactions 1899.
- Leicestershire Architectural and Archæological Society –  
Transactions Vol. VIII. part 6.
- Powys-Land Club—  
Collections Vol. XXXI. part 1.
- St. Albans and Hertfordshire Architectural & Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. 1 (New Series) part 2, (1897 and 1898).
- Somerset Archæological Society—  
Proceedings, Vol. XLV.
- Suffolk Institute of Archæology—  
Proceedings, Vol. X. part 2.
- Surrey Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XIV. part 2.
- Sussex Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XLII.
- Thoresby Society—  
Miscellanea, Vol. IX. part 2.  
Leeds Parish Registers, Vol. X. part 1.
- Wiltshire Archæological Society—  
Magazine Vol. XXX. Nos. 91 and 92.  
Abstract of Wiltshire Inquisitions Post Mortem, part 7.  
Additions to the Society' Library.  
Appendix, 3.



## ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE

Incised Slab to Sire James Samson, 1349, Middleton ...	Frontispiece
Fragment of Incised Slab to a Priest, 1349, Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall ... ..	6
Matrix of Soldier and Priest, about 1425, Belchamp Walter ...	16
Matrix of Priest, about 1435, Belchamp Walter ... ..	17
Matrices of Two Priests on Bracket, now utilized for Dame Alice Beriffe and her daughter Margaret, 1536, Brightlingsea ...	20
Brasses and Matrices of John Beriffe and Family, 1496, Brightlingsea ... ..	22
Brass of Mary Beriffe and Children, 1505, Brightlingsea ...	23
Brass of Margaret Beriffe, 1514, Brightlingsea... ..	24
Brass of John Beriffe and Family, 1521, Brightlingsea ...	25
Brass of William Beriffe and Family, 1525, Brightlingsea ...	27
Brass of William Beriffe, 1578, Brightlingsea ... ..	30
Brass of a Civilian, about 1515, Great Chesterford ... ..	30
Brass of William and Katheryn Holden, Great Chesterford ...	31
Brass of a Civilian and Family, about 1450, Chrishall... ..	32
Brass of a Civilian and Family, about 1530, Chrishall... ..	33
Brass of — Songar and Family, about 1485, Clavering ...	34
Brass of a Woman in Shroud, about 1490, Debden ... ..	36
Brass of a Civilian, about 1510, Debden... ..	37
Brass of a Civilian, Wife and Children, about 1530, Hempstead	38
Brass of a Lady and Children, about 1455, Heydon ... ..	39
Brass of a Lady, about 1515, Heydon ... ..	40
Brass of a Civilian and Family, about 1475, Littlebury ...	42
Brass of a Civilian and Wife, about 1510, Littlebury ... ..	44
Brass of a Priest, about 1510, Littlebury ... ..	45
Brass of a Civilian, about 1520, Littlebury ... ..	46
Brass of a Lady with Two Husbands, about 1520, Littlebury	46
Brass of an Inscription to James Edwards, 1522, Littlebury ...	47
Brass of William Bradbury, 1551, Littlebury ... ..	48
Brass of Jane Bradbury, 1571, Littlebury ... ..	50
Brass of Anne Byrd, 1624, Littlebury ... ..	52
Brass of a Civilian and Wife, 1470, Newport ... ..	53
Brass of a Lady, about 1475, Rainham ... ..	53
Sketch of an Ancient Rampart at Lexden ... ..	108
Plan of an Ancient Rampart at Lexden... ..	111

# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

## MUSEUM, COLCHESTER CASTLE.

### OFFICERS AND COUNCIL FOR 1900.

#### President.

GEORGE ALAN LOWNDES, Esq., M.A.

#### Vice-Presidents.

The Right Hon. LORD EUSTACE CECIL.	The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF COLCHESTER, D.D.
The Right Rev. The LORD BISHOP OF ST. ALBANS, D.D.	Sir M. E. GRANT-DUFF, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S.
The Right Hon. LORD BRAYBROOKE, M.A.	Sir H. SEYMOUR KING, K.C.I.E., M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD RAYLEIGH, M.A., F.R.S.	JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD ROOKWOOD, M.A.	Colonel A. R. M. LOCKWOOD, M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD HAWKESBURY, F.S.A.	Major F. C. RASCH, M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD CLAUD HAMILTON.	GEORGE COURTAULD, Esq.

#### Council.

The PRESIDENT ( <i>ex-officio</i> ).	I. C. GOULD, Esq.
G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.	HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.
Major-General B. R. BRANFILL.	WILLIAM MACANDREW, Esq.
FREDERIC CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.	FRANCIS M. NICHOLS, Esq., F.S.A.
MILLER CHRISTY, Esq., F.L.S.	The Rev. CANON NORMAN, M.A.
The Rev. A. F. CURTIS, M.A.	The Rev. L. N. PRANCE, M.A., F.S.A.
The Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, D.D.	G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.
The Rev. CECIL DEEDS, M.A.	DOUGLASS ROUND, Esq., M.A.
The Rev. H. L. ELLIOT, M.A.	J. HORACE ROUND, Esq., M.A.
E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.	C. F. D. SPERLING, Esq., M.A.
The Rev. F. W. GALPIN, M.A., F.L.S.	J. R. VAIZEY, Esq., LL.M.
A. R. GODDARD, Esq., B.A.	W. C. WALLER, Esq., M.A., F.S.A.

#### Treasurer.

JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.

#### Honorary Secretary.

G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Lawn, Coggeshall.

#### Honorary Curator.

HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Collector.

Mrs. PARISH,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Sub-Curator.

Mr. F. SPALDING,  
The Museum, Colchester.

#### Local Secretaries.

Braintree—Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY, M.A.	Colchester—H. LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.
Brentwood—F. LONDON, Esq.	Loughton—I. C. GOULD, Esq.
Billericay—Major-Genl. B. R. BRANFILL.	Halstead—J. R. VAIZEY, Esq., LL.M.
Bishops Stortford—G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.	Maldon—E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.
Chelmsford—F. CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.	Saffron Walden—
Coggeshall—G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.	Southend—W. H. DRAPER, Esq., B.A.

Free to Members; Price to Non-Members, 7/-.

# TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

**Essex Archæological Society.**

---

VOL. VIII., PART II.

NEW SERIES.

---



COLCHESTER :

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY AT THE MUSEUM IN THE CASTLE.

1901.

CONTENTS OF PART II., VOL. VIII.

	PAGE
I. <i>Mediæval Colchester—Town, Castle and Abbey—from MSS. in the British Museum.</i> By the Rev. H. J. DUKINFIELD ASTLEY, M.A.... ..	117
II. <i>Wallbury Camp, Great Hallingbury.</i> By I. CHALKLEY GOULD ... ..	139
III. <i>The Castle of Stansted Montfitchet.</i> By HENRY LAVER, F.S.A., F.L.S. ... ..	141
IV. <i>An Extinct County Family: Wroth of Loughton Hall.</i> I. By WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. ...	145
V. <i>The Order of the Hospital in Essex.</i> By J. H. ROUND, M.A.	182
VI. <i>Helion of Helion's Bumpstead.</i> By J. H. ROUND, M.A.	187
VII. <i>The Manor of Colne Engaine.</i> By J. H. ROUND, M.A.	192
VIII. <i>Essex Field Names.</i> Collected and arranged by WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. <i>Part VI.—The Hundred of Hinckford</i> ... ..	199
IX. <i>Colchester Bays, Says and Perpetuanas.</i> By ELIOT HOWARD	223
<i>Archæological Notes</i> ... ..	226
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Saturday, 9th June, 1900</i> ...	231
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Wednesday, 22nd August, 1900</i>	239
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Tuesday, 25th September, 1900</i> ...	242
<i>Annual General Meeting, Thursday, 18th April, 1901</i> ... ..	243
<i>Report</i> ... ..	244
<i>Donations to the Society</i> ... ..	246
<i>Balance Sheet</i> ... ..	248

---

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
Colchester: Castle and Abbey in the Fifteenth Century (Block kindly lent by the Council of the British Archæological Association) ... ..	118
Colchester Abbey ... ..	120
Houses in Colchester ... ..	120
Wallbury Camp (Block kindly lent by Mr. I. C. Gould) ...	139

## MEDIÆVAL COLCHESTER—TOWN, CASTLE AND ABBEY—FROM MSS. IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM.

BY THE REV. H. J. DUKINFIELD ASTLEY, M.A.

AMONG the MSS. Volumes contained in our National Collection, there are a couple which are of special interest to the inhabitants of Colchester, and, as such, it has been thought that some account of them, together with the transcription of original matter relating to the town, and the reproduction of the drawings hereinafter described, would be acceptable to the Members of the Essex Archæological Society.

The first of the volumes referred to is "a small but interesting fourteenth century transcript by an unknown scribe of *The History of the Britons*, compiled by that prince of romancers, Geoffrey, Bishop of St. Asaph (1152), better known by a previous office occupied by him—the Archdeaconry of Monmouth." The above quotation is taken from the paper on "Our Cities: sketched 500 years ago" by the Rev. Cæsar Caine, published in the *Journal* of the British Archæological Association, December, 1898, which first directed our attention to the subject. Mr. Caine goes on: "Concerning the fabulous events and shadowy figures of Geoffrey's imaginative and entertaining book we have nothing to say. This paper is designed to direct attention to the work of the patient copyist who penned the above-named manuscript, numbered *Bib. Reg.*, 13, A. iii., among the written books of the British Museum." And in the next sentence he speaks of "one characteristic of this manuscript" being "the addition to the text of numerous drawings of persons and places," and adds that the "scribe" cannot be charged with filling up his margin with purely fancy sketches. These he goes on to describe, and we will follow him in a moment; but before doing so we would remark that it is evident from these statements that the writer conceived of the "unknown fourteenth century scribe," "the patient copyist," as being himself the draughtsman also. In this we think he is mistaken. We have gone most carefully through the MS. and all the drawings with which it is adorned, and we feel assured, as does also Dr. W. de Gray Birch, whom we consulted on the subject, that the drawings,

[VOL. VIII. NEW SERIES.]

though certainly ancient, are not so old as the MS. In fact, they are probably due to some possessor of the book somewhere in the fifteenth century, who thought he would embellish the margins of his book in this way. (fig. 1.)

Among the towns and buildings illustrated, we have the Tower of London, the most noted fortress in the kingdom; York, the northern metropolis of mediæval England; the Castle of Edinburgh, and such places as Winchester and Gloucester, besides Colchester; and, as we turn over these ancient vellum leaves, and carefully examine the sketches one by one, we quite agree with Mr. Caine, that "the draughtsman was well acquainted with the places of importance between London and Edinburgh; that he had travelled about the country, and always with his eyes open."



Fig. 1.—COLCHESTER: CASTLE AND ABBEY IN THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.

(From a MS. in the British Museum.)<sup>1</sup>

Leaving on one side the places that do not here interest us as Essex Archæologists, we would ask our readers to notice this drawing of mediæval Colchester. If it is not so old as Mr. Caine supposed, we may yet take it as a faithful representation of the Castle and Abbey at the time of the Wars of the Roses, and, as such, it is the earliest known pictorial representation of either, and forms a fitting introduction to our two remaining illustrations which take us down to later days.<sup>2</sup>

One remarkable feature in these sketches is the extent to which the artist displays banners upon castles, churches and houses.

<sup>1</sup> Block lent by the Council of the B. A. A., London.

<sup>2</sup> See note by Mr. I. C. Gould on "The View of Colchester," at the end of this article.



In this sketch of Colchester it will be observed that there are no less than three—one at each side of the Castle, and one on a house to the left. Mr. Caine considers this to be evidence of a thirteenth or fourteenth century date, but this cannot be considered conclusive, as the custom, no doubt, continued uninterruptedly through the declining days of the age of chivalry down to the termination of our last mediæval war and the accession of the Duke of York to the throne as Edward IV. Lords and Knights would still only be recognized by their escutcheons, as in the days of Simon de Montfort, when, before the battle of Evesham, the Earl's barber was sent up into a tower to identify, as an expert, the warriors of the opposing host by their arms; and in the same way the lord or governor of any castle or town would signify his presence by hanging out his banner, down to the end of the fifteenth century. Our artist therefore was not drawing on his imagination, nor did he insert the banners merely for decorative purposes, but he was depicting what he had seen. Whose arms are represented by the banners displayed in this picture it would be almost impossible, at this distance of time, to define. Indeed, as Mr. Caine remarks, "the absence of all tinctures renders identification difficult, and allowance must also be made for the fact that hundreds of Coats-of-Arms are unrecorded. Still it would be an interesting study for some heraldic scholar to endeavour to identify the blazonry on these banners."

Lastly we may note that the book from which this drawing is taken, when about a century old, belonged to Ponticus Verunius, or Lodovico da Ponte, a commentator on the classics, who was born at Belluno, 1467, and died at Bologna, 1520. The name of this well-known scholar is to be seen on the first page of the manuscript.

The second Volume referred to in our opening remarks is known as "Cotton MS., Nero D. viii.," of which the following description is taken from the Catalogue of Romances in the British Museum, Vol. I., p. 230:—

Vellum; ff. 347: Folio.

The first six articles are in a hand of the late twelfth or early thirteenth century, viz.:—

1. *Historia Regum Britanniaë*; by Geoffrey of Monmouth. f. 3.
2. *Historia Britonum*; by Nennius. f. 63.
3. *Historia Normannorum*; by Dudon de St. Quentin. f. 72.
4. Romance of Alexander. f. 160.
5. Epistle of Alexander "de Situ Indie." f. 169.
6. List of the works of Bede. f. 174b.

To these are added in later hands a supplement to the Prophecies of Merlin relative to King Stephen and the coming of Henry II.; and notes on the Empress Matilda and on Alexander the Great. f. 175.

The rest of the volume is a collection in a hand of the late fourteenth century.

1. Descriptio Cambriæ; by Giraldus Cambrensis. f. 176.
2. Dialogue between "Clericus" and "Miles" on the powers of princes and prelates. f. 183.
3. De origine gigantum. f. 186.
4. De longitudine Angliæ, etc. f. 187.
5. Polychronicon; by Higden; brought down to 1376. f. 188.

At the end of the volume in a hand of the sixteenth century is an account of the foundation of the Abbey of St. John, Colchester; at the head a tinted drawing, which was engraved by W. Hollar for Dugdale's *Monasticon*, vol. ii. (1661); at the foot a still later drawing of houses in Colchester. f. 346. These two drawings are those here reproduced (figs. 2 and 3). The Abbey is depicted as it stood in the early years of the sixteenth century, shortly before 1539; the other picture is an etching of the Dutch School, and is probably of the eighteenth century.

This account of the foundation of the Abbey of St. John is said, in a rubricated head-line, to be from the third book of Marianus, *i.e.* Marianus Scotus (1028—1082?), the chronicler, a native of Ireland, but from 1056 to 1082 a monk successively at Cologne, Falda and Mentz. He composed a universal chronicle beginning from the Christian era and coming down to 1082. Florence of Worcester adopted Marianus as the basis of his own chronicle, and is often cited by English writers under the name of Marianus. The extract however does not appear in either chronicle. It is perhaps a laudatory account of the founder written by some monk of the Abbey and inserted either in some register of the Abbey, or in some MS. of Marianus or Florence of Worcester belonging to the Abbey. For similar insertions of matter relating to a monastery in a chronicle owned by it, see Hardy's Catalogue of Materials for the History of Great Britain and Ireland under Marianus and Florence of Worcester and elsewhere.

This story of the foundation of Colchester Abbey, has often been referred to by writers on Colchester, and by Dugdale, (*l.c.*) but it has not before, we believe, been reproduce in full. In any case it is worthy

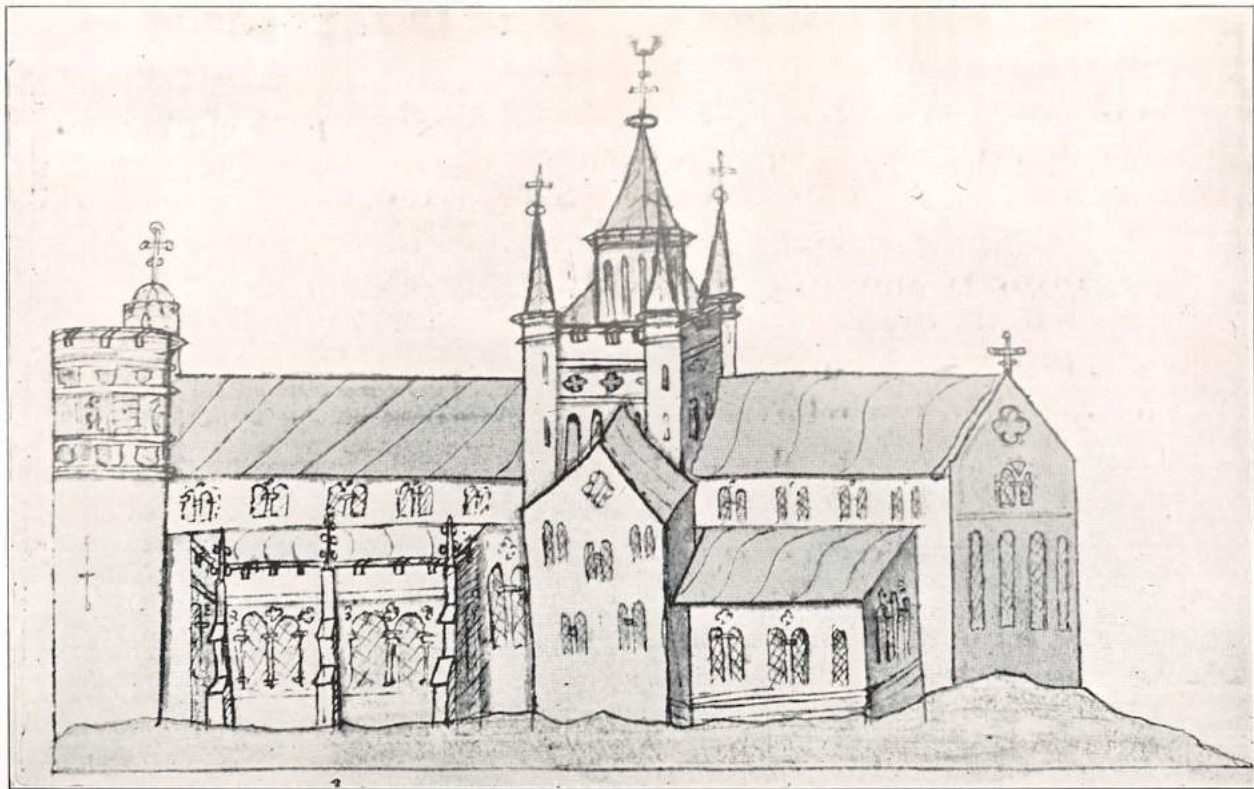


Fig. 2.—COLCHESTER ABBEY, SHORTLY BEFORE THE DISSOLUTION, 1539. (From a MS. in the British Museum.)

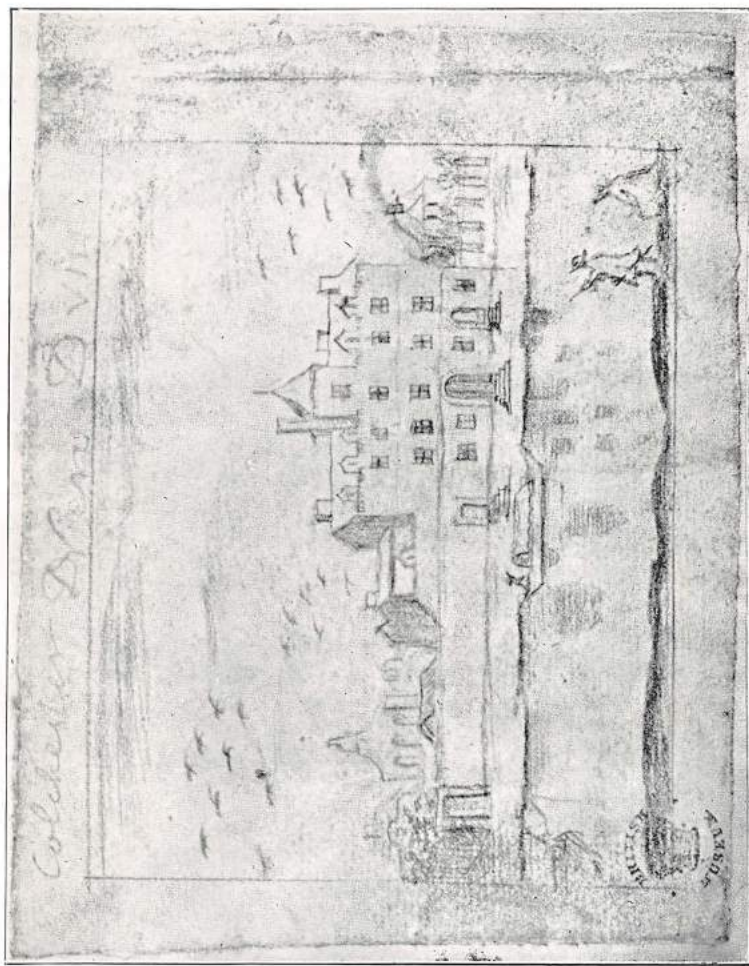


Fig. 3.—HOUSES IN COLCHESTER; 18TH CENTURY. (From a MS. in the British Museum.)

of a place in the *Transactions* of this Society. Mr. W. J. Andrew, in his *Numismatic History of the Reign of Henry I.*, the latest authority on the subject, states: "1091? William II. by charter grants the town, keep and castle of Colchester to Eudo Dapifer," and remarks "this date must not be accepted too strictly, as Henry I.'s charter (1101) has been confused with William's, and so this date 1091 was accepted because it was that of the treaty between Rufus and Duke Robert, although the former contains the words, 'Sicut Pater meus et Frater et ego,' referring to William I., II., and Henry I., and is dated at Christmas after the (1101) Treaty with Duke Robert. Colchester is granted to Eudo Dapifer, and there is no ground for the argument that he was merely the King's Castellan, for the wording of Henry's Charter grants him the town and all its privileges."

Eudo died at the Castle of Préaux, in Normandy in 1120. This explains the passage in the Empress Matilda's charter to Geoffrey de Mandeville, "*et do ei totam terram quæ fuit Eudoni Dapiferi in Normanniâ et Dapiferatum ipsius*" (Round). Our MS. also implies that Eudo was Dapifer in Normandy, that he died there and that his widow never returned to this country. Eudo left no son, and, as Mr. Round points out in *Geoffrey de Mandeville*, it may be assumed that he died without any issue, for his vast estates reverted to the Crown (see, Andrew, *Numismatic History of the Reign of Henry I.*, p. 164).

Into the long and chequered history of the Abbey it is not our purpose to enter here. The story of its dissolution and of the heroic conduct of its last Abbot, Thomas Marshall, is well known, and has been graphically told by Fr. Gasquet in his *Henry VIII., and the English Monasteries*, pp. 388-396. Some confusion has arisen from the fact that the last Abbot of Colchester was known both as Thomas Marshall, and John Beche, but there seems to be no doubt that both names designate the same individual. See Gasquet, *op. cit.* p. 388, ed. 1899.

We conclude with the transcript of the original letter of the Lord Chancellor Audley to Thomas Cromwell, asking for his good offices to secure him the grant of the Abbey. This letter was printed (as two) in "The History and Description of Colchester" published by W. Keymer, 1803; but without the "byll," of which the Chancellor speaks, attached.

His Lordship's cringing style, and attempt to bribe Cromwell, will be noticed, and the effort to gain sympathy by reference to his "sore and akying ffoote" is calculated to provoke a smile in the twentieth century reader.

## ORIGINAL DOCUMENTS.

Marianus Libro Tertio De Monasterio Colecestreysi et eius fundatore.<sup>1</sup>

Rex Willelmus Junior ciuitatem Colecestrie cum suis pertinentiis tradidit seruandam Eudoni, qui erat maior domus Regie quod nos uulgariter Senescallum uel dapiferum uocamus. Facit autem hoc ciuium colecestrensiu[m] postulatione, qui hoc ab eo impetrauere grandi exenio tam uictualium quam impendiorum transmare delato. Acceperat autem Eudo hunc honorem ab Willelmo Seniore pro sui patris suæque in regalem familiam deuotione. Pater uero eius erat Hubertus de Ria, qui internuntius et sequester inter duce[m] normannie et regem anglie extiterat. Siquidem rex Edwardus egrotans cum eo maxime cruciaretur quod in se regium genus deficere uideret: per quendam Goscelinum Wyntoniensem negotiatorem qui solitus erat cum mercibus longinquas adire terras, mandauit Willelmo normannie duci ut sibi aliquem dirigeret a suo latere, cui tuto committeret queque uellet mandata. Quo nuntio accepto factoque magno procerum conuentu, dum singuli citantur dum omnes recusant barbaram expetere gentem propter illa quæ audierant facta apud Geldefordiam solum Hubertum dux inuenit qui se diceret spontanie hac legatione functurum. Itaque ab omnibus laudatus a duce muneratus profectus est cum grandi apparatu, cum pompa magna equis phaleratis et fremitu terribilibus hominibus serico indutis, et colore uestium spectabilibus. Ad regem ueniens honorifice suscipitur et ei primæ in anglia sue mansionis uilla que *Ësce* dicitur perpetuo possidenda conceditur. Peracto colloquio et mandatis acceptis reuersus ad duce[m] detulit insignia quibus Willelmus declarabatur heres Eaduardi regis anglorum, spatam scilicet cum capulo in quo erant inclusæ sanctorum reliquie, cornu de auro uenatorium et caput ingens ceruinum. Pro hijs etiam laudatus a duce promissionem habuit dapiferatus. Sed ueniente Willelmo in angliam accipere sibi regnum, quum a Cinomannica regione suspicabatur tumultus, Hubertus quia erat promptus manu et consilio bonus missus est illic pretendere et seruare pacem. Secuti sunt autem duce[m] quatuor filii eius. Radulfus cui commissa est custodia castelli et comitatus Notingeham. Hubertus cui commissa est turris norwici post fugam Radulfi de Waer et Adam qui magnas possessiones habuit in Cantia. Eudo uero adhesit seruitio regali. Erat tunc temporis maior domus regiæ Willelmus filius Osberni habens hunc honorem ex sucessionem procerum bretulensium.

<sup>1</sup> Nero D. viii., fo. 345.

Is cum quodam festo die regi carnem gruis semicrude adeo ut sanguis exprimeretur apposuisset et a rege obiurgatus tandem licet stomachans manum porrexisset, ictum ferientis regis subiecto manu Eudo exceptit. Nec sine dolore quum lachryme licet inuite prodiderunt Itaque iratus Willelmus cessit ab officio rogans ut illud<sup>1</sup> Eudoni contraderet. Ita tam pro sui patris merito quam pro suo officio, quam etiam Willelmi postulatione, dapiferatus Eudoni traditur. Post hec decumbente rege Willelmo apud Cadomum Eudo arrepta occasione ex paterna concessione Willelmum iuniorem aggreditur, et ut negotio insistat hortatur. Inde in angliam transuerti appliciti porcestrie, comparato sibi fauore Willelmi de ponte arce clauis thesauri Wintonie suscipiunt, quarum idem Willelmus custos erat. Deinde Eudo impiger castellum Dobrie adiit fideque et sacramento custodes obligat nemini nisi suo arbitrio clauis munitionis tradituros. Hoc ipsum apud Peuenesen, hoc ipsum apud Hastings facit cæteraque maritima castella, prætendens regem in Normannia moras facturum et uelle de omnibus munitionibus Anglie securitatem habere, per se scilicet qui senescallus erat. Acceleratoque negotio Wintoniam redit, et tunc demum regem obiisse prohalat. Ita dum cæteri proceres de regni successione tractant in Normannia interim studio et opera eudonis Willelmus iunior in regem eligitur, consecratur, confirmatur in Anglia. Pro his omnibus non ingratis accepit idem rex preces colecestrensiū qui se postulabant sub Eudonis tuitione committi. Post hec reuersus in angliam Otio sibi facto colecestriam adiit: causas cepit inquirere, subleuare grauatos, comprimare ælatos, et in suis primoraliis omnibus complacere. Terras dampnatorum, exlegatorum, et pro culpīs eliminatorum, dum nemo coleret: exigebantur tamen penaliter fiscalia et hac de causa populus valde grauabatur. Has ergo terras Eudo sibi uindicauit, ut pro his fisco satisfaceret et populum eatenus alleviaret.

Est igitur Colecestria ciuitas in orientali parte Britanniae posita. ciuitas vicina portui situ ameno fontibus undique scaturientibus irrigua aere saluberrimo menibus firmissimis, constructa. ciuitas inter eminentissimas numeranda si non vetustas, conflagrationes, eluiones, denique piratarum immissiones uarieque casuum afflictationes omnia ciuitatis memorialia deleuissent. Traditur tamen Helenam quondam imperii matrem ex hac ciuitate natam et educatam Quæ quanti fuerit uel eo conicitur quod constantius constantini magni genitor, triennio dicitur hac obsedis nec optinuisse nisi tandem per Helenæ nuptias. Conicitur etiam ex his quæ de terra fossores eruerunt tam ferrum quam lapides, quam æra signata

<sup>1</sup> Fol. 345b.

quam edificia sub terra inuenta. Juxta hanc ciuitatem erat a parte monticulus australi in cuius aquilonali decliuo habebat Siricus presbiter habitationem et ecclesiam ligneo tabulatu compactam sancto Johanni Euangelistæ deuotam in qua per obscuras noctis tenebras diuina sæpe uisa sunt micare luminaria et uoces deum laudantium auditæ dum esset nemo intrinsecus. Cym etiam illud accidit ut quidam uir qui iussu regis erat compeditus et uicissim alebatur a ciuibus dum quodam die festo sancti Johannis adesset ibidem cum multis subito dum missa celebraretur pessulus boiarum ultra quartum uel quintum assistentium exiuit et boiæ cum sonitu fracte sunt et homo solutus astitit hoc miraculo exultauit tota ciuitas. Hæc itaque fama itemque loci amenitate delectatus Eudo cenobium ibi ædificare decreuit. Volebat enim et sui memoriam parare et suæ amime suffragia eterna prepararæ. Accitus ad hec Londoniensis episcopus Mauritius consilium laudauit promisit opem attulit suffragium. Itaque anno domini 1096 [*sic.* = 1096] die 4<sup>o</sup> Kalendarum septembrium permensum est edificium presente eodem episcopo et appositi operarii. Anno uero sequenti post pascha ipsemet primum lapidem misit in ædificium, alterum Roasya uxor eius et tertium Gilebertus comes Rohaisæ frater et demum alii prout ordo tulit. Erat ipso tempore hrofensis episcopus Gundulfus uir magna religionis et fame. Cui cum esset eudo notus et familiaris: impetrauit ab eo ut sibi Monachos destinaret qui regularem uitam in cenobio nouo exercere ualerent. Missi duo sunt primum qui stipendiis Eudonis alerentur. Sed uiri deliciis assueti et in his enutriti, cum sæpe si non fuissent saturati murmurarent extediati domum reuersi sunt et alii loco eorum missi: Inter quos erat unus Radulfus nomine religiosus uir et industrius. Is sepius instabat Eudoni, dicens quod<sup>1</sup> erat uerum non debere monachos uictum sperare a laycis nec esse quasi prebendarios ubi enim id deesset aliunde quesituros. Oportere magis ut sibi res et redditus designarentur quibus uti potuissent et sustentari quasque suo arbitrato disponerent. Hoc magis conuenire quam ut laicorum degerent arbitrato. Grauius audiebat hec Eudo et grauius accipiebat. Nam et status ipsius tunc fluctuabat. Agebantur hec in primordius henrici regis. Qui Eudoni succensebat insimulato quod magis cum fratre eius Roberto sensisset simulque quod eius fauorem nimis egre obtinisset in tali articulo. Parcebatur tamen Eudoni propter genus uxoris ipsius Rohaisa. Erat eium hec de genere nobilissimo Normannorum filia scilicet Richardi qui fuit filius Gileberti comitis duxitque Rohaisam uxorem que erat soror Willelmi Giffardi episcopi Wintoniæ. Itaque cum

<sup>1</sup> Fol 346



fratres et propinqui Junioris Rohasie quoslibet motus machinaturi putarentur si contra maritum ipsius aliquid durius decerneretur, sic factum est ut interuentu predicti episcopi itemque petri de Valoniis qui erat sororius Eudonis res in pace deducta est et Rex Eudonem suscepit in gratiam. Inter has igitur turbelas cum prædictus monachus instaret et Eudo egre deliberaret tandem eis decimas quasdam et ecclesias longinquas nec satis magnas designauit. Que scilicet magis inferrent detrimentum in colligendo quam emolumentum conferrent in fruendo. Quo perpenso Radulfus et socii ejus rem totam cum iis promissionibus renuerent, abdicarunt, reliquerunt et ad sua discesserunt, non sine iurgio et vtrinque stomachatione. Pro his omnibus cepit Eudo contristari, et tedere ita ut cepti illum pene peniteret Sed post hec adeptus est notitiam Stephani abbatis eboracensis uiri in dei rebus probati sed et in seculi negotiis ualde idonei. Huic ergo familiariter collocutus Eudo, mirabiliter ab eo consolatus et confortatus est, adeo ut totam curam exstruendi cænobii ei committeret. Erat enim idem stephanus monachus insignis uir bonus et iustos [*sic*] plenus deo et bonis operibus atque affectibus sanctis cuius memoria in benedictione erit usque in seculum, Quique reuersus domum elegit quos in opus noui cænobii condendi dirigeret. Fuerunt autem secundum numerum apostolicum duodecim fratres et unus qui interim ceteris prepositi uel prioris nomine præses et si oportunitas exegisset abbas ordinari esset dignus. Itaque hii tredecim missi colcestriam cum gaudio magno ab Eudone et a suis excepti sunt. Ædificium interea non segniter exurgebat cum neque operarii neque impense ullatenus cessarent. Venientibus autem monachis ab Eboraco cepit ædificatio uehementius urgeri. Preerat enim operi sacerdos quidam Willelmus nomine Eudonis cognatus qui nullatenus parcebat impensis dum modo quod faciendum erat acceleraret. At vero Monachi secundum suum propositum ceperunt religiosam uitam exercere horis canonicis die noctuque in ecclesiam conuenire silentii metas prefixas non transgredi et per omnia uelut in congregatione ordinem obseruare monasticum. Erat intrinsecus unanimitas, extrinsecus hospitalitas: utrinsecus fidelis caritas. Gaudebat in his eudo, gaudebant et sui atque ita cepit res paulatim proficere et in melius cressere [*sic*]. Quin etiam plerique uicinorum ibi conuersi domini serutio sese mancipabant. Quid multa? Post non multos annos, electus est in Abbatem vnus illorum tredecim qui uenerant ab Eboraco Hugo nomine uir magne pietatis et religionis, licet non magnæ ad seculum astucie sicut ex fine patuit. Consecrauit autem illum Mauricius episcopus Londoniæ Anno Domini circiter 1104. Cum igitur essent officine et habitacula fratrum sitæ a parte aquilonali ecclesie pertesus idem abbas clamoris et tumultus urbici

decreuit in partem australem transferre totam habitationem. Quod et factum est. Ita colliculus ille sublatus est qui ecclesie imminebat et inde cimiterium conplanatum a parte septentrionali. Post hec cepit Eudo contradere ad ipsum locum terras, ecclesias, possessiones, redditus, Suasit etiam singulis magnatum ut unusquisque secundum suum modum ecclesie conferret quod uellet Dedit<sup>1</sup> itaque Eudo terras et decimas. Dederunt etiam singuli procerum secundum quod eis uisum fuit. Que omnia in dedicatione ecclesie commemorata sunt et concessa et super altare concessa oblata. Vbi cum aliqui ciuium reclamassent quod œdificium noue ecclesie terras illorum occupasset, missum est et de thesauro Eudonis pecuniæ protractæ et omnibus satisfactum, ita ut omnes bono animo, omnia bona loco aptarent, Contulerunt etiam uicini ad ipsum locum plerosque redditus et terras. Facta est igitur dedicatio illa. 4. idus Januarij cum magna gloria, magnaque populorum deuotione et laude. Sed et fratres qui ab Eboraco uenerant, omnes uel domum redierant uel ibidem obierant exceptis tribus ipso scilicet patre et abbate hugone, Waltero Seniore, et osmundo seniore postea priore. Accreuerat in eodem monasterio numerus fratrum ultra uicinarium qui omnes in eodem loco conuersi, domino ibidem deuotissime sub regulari districtione seruiebant. Feruebat in eis sanctæ religionis amor, præueniebant se inuicem honore et officio, certabant inuicem quis abstinentior, quis uigilantior, quis deuotior, quis obedientior, inueniretur. Mira inter omnes caritas, mira benignitas fuit. Nulla ibi murmuratio, nulla detractio, nullum obloquium, nullum discordie seminarium. Hugo autem abbas ingrauescentibus causis inter ipsum et Eudonem timens ne sua causa locus dampnis subiaceret cura cenobij regis manu refudit et ad eboracum unde uenerat secessit. Vbi honorifice susceptus, honorifice tractatus, in sancta conuersatione usque in finem deguit, Quique etiam sui obitus diem et horam ante triduum fratribus prædixit, et ea qua prædixerat hora ipsemet se super cilicium strauit: et euocatis fratribus migravit ipse psallens ad dominum.

Eudo regum dapifer cum Normannia apud Castellum pratellense decumberet infirmitate, qua et mortuus est, omnes rectitudines boni christiani morientis percepit. Omnibus quibus aliquid deberet, sive pro seruitio sive aliquo alio modo, persoluit. Ipse uero per aliquas ebdomadas sepe confessus peccata sua, semper penitens, semper deflens, sæpe absolutus, sæpe disciplinatus secundum quod Gaufridus Rothomagensis, et Turstanus eboracensis archiepscoi dictabant, rerum omnium suarum fecit diuisionem, presente et adhortante atque

<sup>1</sup> Fol. 346b.

concedente rege hearico. Præcepit etiam suis omnibus, contestans fidem quam ei debebant ut suum corpus ad abbatiam suam quam Colecestrie construxerat deferrat. Delegauit etiam cum suo corpore ad illum locum Manerium Bryhtlyngeseie et 100 libras denariorum anulum etiam suum aureum insignatum topazio precioso. Præterea cyphum suum cum operculo, utrumque laminis aureis ornatum, equum etiam suum et mulam. Que tamen omnia Gilebertus abbas (qui Beccensis Monachus Hugonis loco successerat) regi Henrico remisit, ut impetraret ab eo concessionem predictæ manerii et Beneficium regium in hoc impetratum est. Ita Eudo uti bonus Christianus penitens pectus tundens et dei misericordiam inuocans ultimum efflauit spiritum. Corpus ejus sicut disposuerat in angliam delatum est. Comitata est igitur Corpus defuncti Rohaisa uxor eius uolens in angliam illud perducere, sed retenta est a fratribus et cognatis qui sperabant eam in reginam leuari. Quod forsitan euenisset nisi eius et continua ægritudo et infra annum obitus impedisset. Corpori Eudonis obuiauerunt Monachi miliario a cenobio concurrente turba multa tam ciuium quam regionalium. Cum ecce dum Corpus Eudonis affertur ab occidente Walcherius eius nepos afferebatur ab Aquilonali parte. Denique sub uno corpus utrumque procurant, et honorifice sepultum est. Quod actum est die pridie Kalendarum Martiarum Anno domini M.C.xx.

Relicta Eudonis dapiferi uxor Rohaisa, quæ illo ægrotante optauerat sibi donari a deo ne annum integrum uiro tam caro tam nobili superstes fieret, uisa est a deo exaudiri. Toto enim reliquo uitæ suæ spatio ægrotans tandem decubuit. Sentiensque mortem sibi adesse exitum suum<sup>1</sup> confessione, communionem, rerum omnium distributionem, et tandem mundana renuntiatione, sanctique uel susceptione muniuit. Voluit quidem suum corpus in angliam deferri et iuxta mariti corpus tumulari, fratres eius, utpote homines seculo dediti, parcentes expensis, beccum eam deferri et tumulari fecerunt. Commorata est autem marito annis triginta duobus, cui ante habiles annos nupta est. Mulier uero morigeræ, æcclesiarum ornatrix edificatrix etiam domorum religiosarum. Nam et maritum oculis captum ante annos 15 sui obitus, miro studio coluit miro affectu procurauit. Omni ancilla subiectior et obsequentior. Ornamenta æcclesiastica Per omnes cismarinas uel transmarinas æcclesias magno studio dispersit. Xenodochium etiam iuxta rothomagum suis sumptibus ædificauit. Misit etiam ad æcclesiam Colecestrensem phylecteria cristallina quatuor Serica pallia duo

<sup>1</sup> Fol. 347.

calicem argenteum thuribulum argenteum. Delegavit etiam eidem æclesiæ terram tholi in halyngeberia quam tamen postea occupauerunt richardenses.

Anni quibus gregi dei præfuerunt subscripti patres.<sup>1</sup>

Hugo Eboracensis Abbas primus. Curam pastorem reliquit.

2.	Gilebertus de lungrill	...	...	25
3.	Wilelmus de Scuri	...	...	4
4.	Hugo de Haya	...	...	17
5.	Gilebertus de Wicham	...	...	18
6.	Walterus de Walensis	...	...	17
7.	Osbertus	...	...	17
8.	Adam de Campes	...	...	44
9.	Willielmus de Wanda	...	...	8
10.	Willielmus de Spaldwik <sup>2</sup>	...	...	27
11.	Robertus de Grinstede	...	...	36
12.	Johannes de Bruges	...	...	6
13.	Walterus de Huntingefelde	...	...	16
14.	Willielmus de Glemham	...	...	1
15.	Johannes de Wymunham	...	...	23
16.	Symon de Blyton	...	...	20
17.	Thomas Stucle	...	...	11 menses.
18.	Richardus de Colne	...	...	6
19.	Johannes de Dedham	...	...	8
20.	Willelmus de Gyrton	...	...	3
21.	Galfridus Story	...	...	—
22.	Rogerus Best <sup>3</sup>	...	...	—
23.	Robertus Grytton	...	...	—
24.	Willelmus de Ardeleye	...	...	—
25.	Johannès de Canowne	...	...	—
26.	Walterus Stansted	...	...	19
27.	Willelmus Sprowton	...	...	—
28.	Johannes Stoke	...	...	6
29.	Thomas Barton	...	...	10
30.	Thomas Marshal	...	...	—

<sup>1</sup> Fol. 345 (in circles at the side of the text).

<sup>3</sup> Fol. 346.

<sup>2</sup> Fol. 345b.

## TRANSLATION OF THE FOREGOING.

Marianus in Book iii. Concerning the monastery of Colchester and its founder.

King William the younger entrusted the city of Colchester with its appurtenances to the protection of Eudo, who was mayor of the palace, which we commonly call seneschal or steward. And he did this at the request of the citizens of Colchester, who obtained this from him by a great present as well of supplies as of money sent over sea. Eudo moreover had received this honour from William the elder for the devotion of his father and himself to the royal family. But his father was Hubert de Ria, who had been ambassador and intermediary between the Duke of Normandy and the King of England. King Edward in fact being ill and being particularly distressed because he saw the royal line ending in himself, by means of a certain Goscelin, a merchant of Winchester, who used to go to distant lands with merchandise, bade William Duke of Normandy send him some one from his Court to whom he might safely entrust whatever commands he wished. This envoy was received and a great assembly of nobles convened; and when they are each called upon and all refuse to visit a barbarous nation on account of what they had heard happened at Guildford, the Duke finds only Hubert who would of his own accord declare himself willing to perform this embassy. Accordingly commended by all and loaded with gifts by the Duke he set out with a great equipage and a large following, horses decked with trappings and striking terror by their snorting, and men clad in silk and brilliant with the splendour of their garments. He comes to the King and is treated with honour, and the town in which he first stayed in England called Esce is given to him as a possession for ever. When his interview was over and his commission received he returned to the Duke and brought emblems by which William was declared heir of Edward King of the English, namely a sword with a case<sup>1</sup> in which were enclosed relicts of saints, a hunting horn of gold, and a huge stag's head. For these also he was commended by the Duke and had a promise of the stewardship. But when William came into England to take to himself the kingdom and feared an outbreak in the country of the Cinomanni (East Anglia), Hubert, being quick in action and clever in counsel, was sent there to negotiate and to keep peace. His four sons also followed the Duke: Ralph, to whom was committed the custody of the Castle and the county of Nottingham; Hubert, to whom was

<sup>1</sup> ? Coffin coffer.

committed the tower of Norwich after the flight of Ralph de Waer ; and Adam, who had great possessions in Kent. But Eudo remained in the royal service. The mayor of the palace at that time was William Fitz Osbern, who held this honour as the representative of the lords of Breteuil. When he on some festival had served the King with crane's flesh half raw so that the blood could be squeezed out and being chidden by the King at last though angry held out his hand, Eudo put his hand in the way and received the blow of the king as he struck. And not without pain as reluctant tears shewed. William therefore enraged resigned his office and asked that it should be entrusted to Eudo. Thus as well on account of his father's deserts as of his own service and also of the request of William, the stewardship is handed over to Eudo. After this, when King William died at Caen, Eudo seized the opportunity of the grant by the father, and approaches William the younger, and urges him to apply himself to the business. They cross thence into England and land at Porchester, and gaining the favour of William de Ponte Arce receive the keys of the treasury at Winchester, which are in his custody. Then the energetic Eudo went to the castle at Dover and binds the wardens by fealty and oath to give up the keys of the fortress to no one without his permission. He does the very same thing at Pevensey and Hastings and the other castles on the coast, pretending that the King was going to stay in Normandy and wished to secure all the English fortresses, by his means, that is, because he was seneschal. He hurries on the business and returns to Winchester, and then at length proclaims the death of the King. Thus while the other nobles are occupied in Normandy with the succession to the kingdom, William the younger in the meanwhile by Eudo's zeal and energy is chosen, consecrated and confirmed King in England. On account of all these services it was Eudo's pleasure that the same king received the prayer of the people of Colchester when they asked to be placed under the protection of Eudo. Thereafter returning into England, when he had won leisure for himself, he came to Colchester, and began to examine suits, to lift up the lowly and depress the proud, and at the outset to gain the favour of all. The lands of convicts, outlaws and criminals though uncultivated had to pay nevertheless the full taxation, and for this reason the people were in a state of great distress. These lands therefore Eudo claimed for himself, that he might undertake the charge for them and so far relieve the people.

The city of Colchester is situate in the eastern part of Britain—a city near to a port, in a fine position, watered by springs bursting out everywhere, with the most healthy climate, built with walls of the greatest strength,—a city to be reckoned among the most famous,

had not age, fires, floods, even incursions of pirates and the various afflictions of fate destroyed all the memorials of the city. Tradition however says that Helena, who was in the days of old the mother of the emperor, was born and bred in this city. How great it was may be conjectured from the fact that Constantius, father of Constantine the Great, is said to have besieged it for three years and only to have gained possession of it by marriage with Helena. The same conjecture is also made from the things which labourers have dug up from the soil, iron and stones, chased bronzes and buildings found underground. Near the city on the south side was a little hill, on the northern slope of which Siricus the priest had his dwelling and a church built of wooden planking and dedicated to St. John the Evangelist. There in the dark watches of the night divine lights were often seen to shine and voices of worshippers were heard when no one was within. Now it happened that there was a certain man, who had been fettered by the king's order and was lodged by the citizens in turn. This man on a certain festival of St. John was present there with many others, when suddenly during the celebration of mass the bolt of the fetters sprang off four or five places from him and the fetters broke with a loud noise and the man stood up free. The whole city was moved by this miracle; and Eudo, delighted at the story and the fineness of the position, decided to build a convent there. For he wished both to perpetuate his own memory and to provide prayers for his soul for ever. Called upon for this purpose Maurice, bishop of London, approved the plan, promised his help and offered his prayers. Accordingly in A.D. 1096 on the fourth of the Kalends of September the building was laid out in the presence of the said bishop and workmen were set to work. After Easter in the next year he himself laid the first stone of the building, his wife Rohasia the second, Gilbert the Earl, brother of Rohasia, the third, and the others in order of rank. At that time the bishop of Rochester was Gundulf, a man of great devoutness and repute. And since Eudo was an acquaintance and friend of his, he induced him to name monks for him who might lead the monastic life in the new convent. Two were sent first, to be supported at Eudo's expense, But being men accustomed to good living and brought up so, after often grumbling if they had not had their fill, they got tired and went home and others were sent in their place. Among these was one Ralph by name, a devout and energetic man. He often impressed on Eudo, what was true, that the monks ought not to look for their sustenance from laymen, nor to be as it were pensioners<sup>1</sup>; for when

---

<sup>1</sup> ? Prebendaries.

it failed, they would seek it elsewhere. It was better to set apart property and rents which they could use and live on and dispose of at will. This was more proper than living at the will of laymen. Irritated at hearing this Eudo showed in his demeanour still greater irritation. For his own position was then doubtful. These things took place at the beginning of the reign of King Henry, who was displeased with Eudo on the plea that he had sided rather with his brother Robert and had sought his favour with too much reluctance in such a crisis. Eudo was however spared on account of the family of his wife Rohasia. For she was of a most noble Norman family, the daughter, that is, of Richard, who was son of Gilbert the Earl and married Rohasia, who was sister of William Giffard, bishop of Winchester. Thus though the brothers and relations of the younger Rohasia were supposed to be making every effort to obtain a harsher sentence against her husband, it turned out that by the intervention of the bishop aforesaid and also of Peter de Valoins, who was brother-in-law to Eudo, the affair quieted down and the King received Eudo into favour. Amidst these troubles then, whilst the monk aforesaid pressed and Eudo reluctantly deliberated, at last he appointed them certain tithes and distant and not very important churches, such namely as would rather cause loss in collecting than give gain in revenue. Ralph and his fellow monks weighed the matter and renounced, resigned, and relinquished the whole business with the offers made, and departed homewards, not without recrimination and wrath on both sides. On all these accounts Eudo began to feel vexation, and such disgust that he almost repented of his undertaking. But afterwards he became acquainted with Stephen, abbot of York, a man approved in matters of religion but also very acute in worldly affairs. With him Eudo conversed in a friendly way, and received such wonderful consolation and comfort from him that he entrusted to him the whole charge of building the convent. For this same Stephen was a monk of mark, a good man and just, full of divine love and good works and holy affections, whose memory will be blessed for ever. He returned home and chose such as he might direct to the work of founding the new convent. There were indeed according to the number of the apostles twelve brethren and one to preside for the time over the others under the name of warden or prior and to be fit for ordination as abbot if occasion required. These thirteen then were sent to Colchester and greeted with great joy by Eudo and his friends. The building in the meanwhile quickly progressed, for neither workmen nor wealth were by any means wanting. But when the monks came from York, the building began to be pressed on more vigorously. For the work was superintended



by a certain priest William by name, a relation of Eudo, who spared no expense provided he might hasten what had to be done. And the monks according to his intention began to lead the religious life, to meet in the church day and night at the canonical hours, and not to transgress the appointed periods of silence, and throughout as in a religious body to observe the monastic rule. Within was unanimity, without hospitality: on both sides loyalty and kindness. Eudo rejoiced at this, so did his friends, and thus by degrees things began to progress and improve. Moreover many of the surrounding inhabitants became associates and devoted themselves to the service of the Lord. Why make a long tale? Not many years later one of the thirteen who had come from York was elected abbot, by name Hugh, a man of great piety and devoutness, though not of much worldly wisdom as the result proved. Maurice, bishop of London, consecrated him about A.D. 1104. Now, as the offices and dwelling rooms of the brethren were situated on the north side of the church, this same abbot, weary of the noise and bustle of the town, decided to transfer the whole of their dwelling to the south side. This was carried out; and thus the little hill, which overhung the church, was removed, and from it a cemetery was levelled on the north side. After this Eudo began to endow the place with lands, churches, possessions, rents, and persuaded various nobles each in his degree to bestow what he liked on the church. Eudo gave lands and tithes, and various nobles gave according to their own pleasure. All these things were commemorated in the dedication of the church, given, and offered as gifts on the altar. And when some of the citizens had claimed that the building of the new church had occupied land of theirs, moneys which had been withheld were despatched from the treasury of Eudo, and satisfaction made to all, so that all with goodwill wished all good wishes to the place. The surrounding inhabitants also bestowed upon it money rents and lands. The dedication accordingly took place on the 4th of the Ides of January with great pomp, and with much devotion and worship by the populace. But all the brethren who had come from York had either returned home or had died there, except three, the father abbot himself, Hugh, Walter, senior, and Osmund, senior, afterwards prior. The number of brethren in the monastery had increased to more than twenty, who were all associated together in the same place and served the Lord there most devoutly under monastic restrictions. Love of holy religion burned in them, they rivalled each other in honour and kindness to one another, they strove with one another who should be found the most temperate, the most watchful, the most devout, the most obedient. There was a marvellous affection

and gentleness among them all, no murmuring, no backbiting, no evil speaking, no hotbed of dissension. But the abbot Hugh, when disputes between him and Eudo became rife, fearing lest the place should incur damage on his account, threw into the hands of the king the charge of the monastery and went off to York whence he had come. There greeted with honour and treated with honour, he spent his life in holy conversation to the end. He predicted also the day and hour of his death three days before to the brethren, and at the hour which he predicted he laid himself on a hair cloth, and calling the brethren passed away singing to the Lord.

Eudo, the steward of kings, when he lay ill at the castle of Preaux in Normandy of the sickness of which he died, observed all the proprieties of a good Christian when dying. All to whom he owed anything, either for service or in any other way, he paid in full. For some weeks moreover he continued often confessing his sins, always penitent, always weeping, often under penance as Geoffrey, archbishop of Rouen and Turstan, archbishop of York, directed, and divided all his property, in the presence, at the instigation and with the permission of King Henry. He enjoined also on all his friends, invoking the loyalty they owed him, to carry his body to the abbey he had built at Colchester. He bequeathed also together with his body to the same place the manor of Brightlingsea and 100 pounds of money, his gold ring also with a valuable topaz set in it, and besides his cup with a cover, both ornamented with gold plates, his horse also and his mule. All these things however the abbot Gilbert, (a monk from Bec who had succeeded in place of Hugh), returned to King Henry in order that he might obtain from him the grant of the manor aforesaid, and the royal bounty in this matter was obtained. Thus Eudo, like a good Christian and penitent, beating his breast and invoking the mercy of God, breathed his last breath. His body, as he had willed, was carried into England. Rohasia, his wife, accompanied the body of the deceased, anxious to take it to England, but she was hindered by her brothers and relations, who hoped to raise her to the position of queen, which might perhaps have happened unless her continued ill health and death within a year had prevented. The monks met the body of Eudo a mile from the monastery, and a great crowd of people from the city and district assembled. And lo! as the body of Eudo is brought from the west, Walcherius, his nephew, was brought from the north. In fact both the bodies are laid in one tomb and are buried with honour. This took place on the day before the Kalends of March, A.D. MCXX.

Rohasia, the widow of Eudo the steward, who, when he was ill, had hoped that God would grant her not to survive so dear and

noble a husband one whole year, seemed to be heard by God, for she was ill for the whole of the rest of her life, and at length died; and feeling death near, she strengthened herself for her end by confession, by communion, by distribution of all her property, and finally by renouncing the world and taking the sacred veil. She wished indeed that her body should be carried into England and buried by her husband's; her brothers, however, after the fashion of worldly-minded people, to save expense, had her carried to Bec and buried. She lived with her husband thirty-two years, having been married to him before she was grown-up. She was of a gentle disposition, a decorator of churches and a builder of religious houses; for while her husband was blind for fifteen years before his death, she treated and tended him with marvellous zeal and affection, more lowly and reverent than any maid. She distributed ecclesiastical ornaments among all churches at home and abroad with much fervour. She built also a hospital near Rouen at her own expense. She sent also to the church at Colchester two crystal amulets, two silk palls, a silver cup and a silver censer. She bequeathed also to the same church the land of Tholi in Hallingbury, which however the family of Richard of Clare (her brothers) afterwards occupied.

LETTER FROM LORD CHANCELLOR AUDLEY TO  
THOMAS CROMWELL ASKING FOR THE GRANT  
OF THE ABBEY.<sup>1</sup>

After my right herty comendacion to your lordshipp. | beyng  
enformed by Master Pollard that the kynges mageste myndeth to  
reteyne and kepe in his graces handes the late monestery of Seynt  
Johns of Colchester | I can not but therwith be satsyfied and in al  
thynges that shalbe his magestez plesure | and yet your lordshipp.  
knowith that fyrst hauyng the howse and parkes at Seynt osyes by  
his graces owen assignement duryng his highnes. plesure | and  
after the howse of Seynt Jonns and the londes nere adioynng by  
your meanes apoynted to me by his highnes. and now to for go al this  
shalbe no litell losse to my poor honeste and estymacion consideryng  
this to be in the contree where I was bourne and most part browt vp  
and also these thynges to ly nere my poor howse and londes that I  
fyrst bylded and bowt | but his graces goodnes hath be so gretly  
shewyd to me | that what so euer his highnez plesure ys or shalbe |  
I am and euer will be therwith content for eny other respectes in the  
world | praying your good lordshipp. | to helpe to ffurther my sute to  
his mageste for an exchange acordyng to a bill herin enclosyd and

<sup>1</sup> Cleopatra E. IV., fol. 222 (new folios). This volume of the Cotton MSS. is full of interesting matter relating to the Visitation and Dissolution of the Monasteries under Henry VIII.

if his grace wold be my good lord therin I wil neuer herafter trobil his mageste for any sutes to his graces charge for my self but to holde me ffull satisfied in all thynges | and this exchange wel ponderyd ys more profitable to his highnes than to me | ffor I leve the reuercion in his highnes | And I do it not nor wold trobil his highnes. with yt but that the thynges that I desire ly so nere and myxt with my other londes. Sythen his mageste made me baron. and sythen I maryed my wiff I neuer axyd eny thyng | And I am now abashed but that I hope by your meanys his highnes. will be so gracious lord to me to grant this sute | the ouerplus of his graces londe passith not xxj li. or letel more aboute myn and for that his highnes shal stil haue the reuercion of all that I shal haue of his grace | and if his graces plesure be to graunt<sup>1</sup> me this | I wil leve my sute for the howse of Seynt Johns | and neuer trobill his mageste for that nor non. other thyng to his highnes. charge herafter | I maryed at his magestez comandment | and his grace sayd that he wold consider it | And what I shuld haue had otherwise your lordshipp. knowith for avancement of myn. heyres | but yet I repent neuer a whytt my mariage | but haue gret cause to thanke the kynges mageste for enducyng me to it | for assuredly I haue happened of oon. moche to my contentacion and honeste | And if God send vs childern. | whiche I desire | the kynges mageste hath made me a baron. and al my londes excedith not clerely viij<sup>c</sup> li. | where with I am right. wel content | praying your good lordshipp. to morow or monday to move the kynges mageste in this my poor sute | And to make myn. excuse that I wayte not vpon his highnes. acordyng to my most bounden dute | ffor I assure your lordshipp. I am so trobilled in my right. ffoote that I can not stepp. nor goo | the payn ys a litel slakyd but the sorenes and styffnes remayneth | And thus syttyng in my chayer with a sore ffoote I trobil your lordshipp. with a longe letter | praying you eftsones to assaye this my poor sute now oon of these ij dayes in myn. absens beyng in good hoope that the kynges mageste wyl graciously here yt And although it be not eny grat profitable thyng yet it shalbe moche to my comfort honeste and estymacion And also a ffull satisfaccion for euer And thus fare your good lordshipp. as hertely well as I wold my self. Scribelid this satyrday with a sore and akynge ffoote

Your lordshippes assured

To his power

Thomas Audley Chancelour.

<sup>2</sup>I send to your lordshipp a byll herin enclosyd, of suche londes as I desire of the kynges highnez | And of suche londes as his grace shulde haue of me | my londes the demeanez of Seynt Botulphe ly

<sup>1</sup> Fol. 222b.

<sup>2</sup> Fol. 223.

emong, the londes of Seynt Jones on the baksyd of the howse my parsonages be syngler good and neuer emprowed and in<sup>1</sup> euery of them ther ys a vycar endowed hauyng good lyvyng | consideryng the kynges highnez makyth bishoppes they be as eny Temporal lordes for them | ffor on my fayth they be very good and wal payd And if the yeres were owt I coud haue grat ffynes for them | as for est donyland lyeth a grat wey ffrom Seynt Johns and I haue a Myll there of myn owen and my londes myxt with it | And as for Chesterford I haue <sup>iii</sup>xvii<sup>xx</sup> xvij yeres in yt | and it lyeth by me at Walden ferr from eny of the kynges londes | my lord I pray you take payn for me herin as an earnest ffrend and make an end of this my sute | and I wil giff you xl. li. of redy mony | with my herty good will and seruyce that may lye in my litel power as sone as euer my bil shalbe signed. |

Your lordshippes assured

Thomas Audeley Chancelour.

To my veraie good  
lord my lord privie  
seale<sup>2</sup>

<sup>3</sup>The demeanes somtyme  
belonging to Seint  
Botulphe in Colchester  
lyeng in the towne of  
Colchester adioyning  
with the demeanes and  
londes of Seint Johns  
in Colchester are worthe  
by the yere clierlie

} xiiij. li. xv. s. v. d. ob.

The parsonage of Edmonton  
per annum clare

xx. li. ij. s. iiij. d.

The parsonage of Enfeld  
per annum clare

xxviiij. li.

The parsonage of High. Eyster  
per annum clare

xxxviij. li. xiiij. s. iiij. d.

Summa

c. li. xij. s. j. d. ob.

The parsonage of Chesterford

xl. li.

The Manor of Chesterford

lvj. li. xiiij. s. iiij. d.

The Manor of Est Donylond

xxv. li. xviiij. s. j. d.

Summa

cxxij. li. xj. s. v. d.

And so the kinges Maiesties londes  
excede the value of my landes

xxj. li. xj. s. ij. d. ob.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> or ? eny eny.

<sup>2</sup> Fol. 223b.

<sup>3</sup> Fol. 224.

<sup>4</sup> A dot after such words as *lordshipp*, *highnes*, *myn*, &c., means an overlining of the last letter, *i.e.*, in some cases an e, in some a consonant, in some cases merely a flourish.

## VIEW OF COLCHESTER. (p. 118.)

A NOTE BY I. CHALKLEY GOULD.

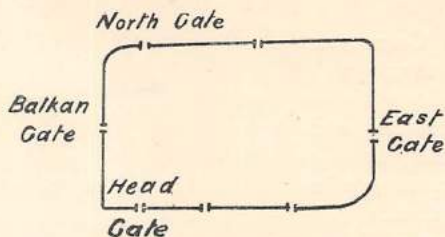
I suggest that the building in the centre is not *the* castle, it could never have presented such an appearance. Possibly the artist intended to represent Head-gate with a barbican in front, the view in fact, which would appear to a traveller arriving by the London road. The other buildings and the spire not being necessarily part of the gate tower but standing back from the wall.

The abbey was without the town walls and it may be noted that in the drawing the wall is not continued in front of the ecclesiastical building which may be intended for St. John's abbey church.

By the wild perspective in which fifteenth century artists indulged it would be easy to bring the abbey church into such a position that it would be visible to the right of the gate-tower.

With regard to the building on the left, it may be that this is a fortified round tower or bastion at the s.w. angle of the town wall though, unfortunately, there is not a trace of it left above ground to justify the assertion.

The recognized course of the Roman wall shows a S. gate in the line of the wall as indicated thus:—



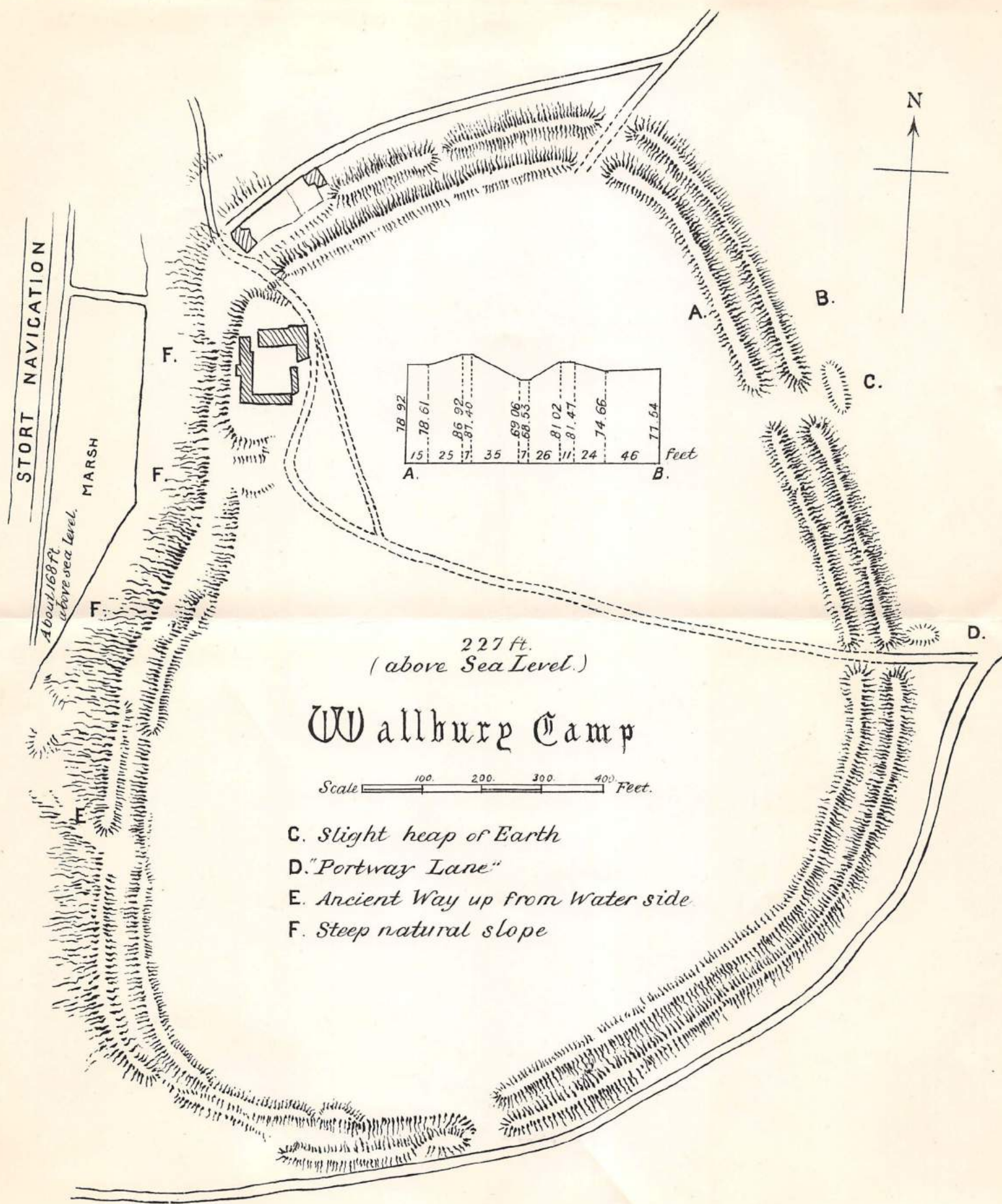
But the plan of the siege (1648) shows a diagonal wall at the Head Gate somewhat thus:—



*St John's Abbey*  
+

Suggesting the possibility of the line of Roman wall having been altered here in late Mediæval times. If this were so it would make our fifteenth century artist's perspective a trifle more correct and the rounded s.w. corner of the town walls may have existed then though the siege plan shows an angle. The original Roman wall is sure to have been rounded at the corner.

I can find no spot from which it would be possible to view the castle (in relation to the town wall and abbey church) as suggested, and am forced to conclude that the central feature is not Eudo's grand old pile but *may* be intended for Head Gate.



STORT NAVIGATION

MARSH

About 168 ft. above sea level.

227 ft. (above Sea Level.)

# Wallbury Camp

Scale 100. 200. 300. 400. Feet.

- C. Slight heap of Earth
- D. "Portway Lane"
- E. Ancient Way up from Water side
- F. Steep natural slope

## WALLBURY CAMP, GREAT HALLINGBURY.

BY I. CHALKLEY GOULD.

THE first question one asks when visiting an ancient fortification is to what period does it belong?

With regard to some forms of earthwork we are able to assign an approximate date, for instance those mound and court forts which abound in England, are mostly of the 10th to the 12th centuries, the days of Saxon, Dane or Norman. Then again, the rectangular enclosures of vallum and fosse standing four square to all the winds that blow, we know to be usually of the Roman era, but when we examine forts of days before the Roman domination we are unable to fix a date and must veil our ignorance by calling them all pre-historic.

Nevertheless there are points of difference between these pre-historic works which indicate vaguely their relative ages. For example, when we see a fort at the top of some great projecting cliff where nature having provided a precipice on two sides of a triangle, man had only to throw ramparts across the third side, or when we see similar work on the top of an outcrop of millstone grit on the wild moors of the north, we should feel no surprise to hear that weapons of neolithic man had been discovered there, so remote from our day may be the period of their construction, as of that of many other high hill forts. Coming to more lowland districts where no miniature mountains exist, we find the early constructors fixed on the highest points and to render them secure adopted a system of tortuous and involved entrances to their forts often with protecting outworks.

It will be evident to any one who has examined such early works that they could have been only places of refuge to be resorted to when tribal enemies threatened the valleys and habitable parts; places to which the women and children as well as the cattle could be removed for protection, as was the case with the New Zealand forts of the Maories even till only some 75 years ago. The length of time necessary to get to and from some of these, precludes the idea of their being for other than purely defensive purposes, but when we examine another type of fortification and find the makers no longer following exactly the lines of the hills, and no longer



depending on involved tortuous entrances, we feel we are upon the work of much later men—men who had probably learnt more of the art of war and required, not forts for defence alone, but rather places in which a body of fighting men could be protected, and from which be able rapidly to issue forth in strength to attack the opposing force. And such a late example we have here in Wallbury, pre-Roman perhaps but not, I think, long before the Christian era, and probably it (unlike those early forts) was used for more or less permanent residence. Cultivation has destroyed all trace of huts or houses but probably this and other of these late level-surfaced enclosures had many such.

Pre-historic works can have no history and we can only speak of what *may* have been the story of Wallbury. A writer in the *Gentleman's Magazine* of 1821 boldly suggested that it was one of a line of forts, linking it with Bishops Stortford and Stansted, this we know is not so, a thousand years or more divide it from those, but I am by no means sure that his suggestion as to this being a fort of the Trinovantes for defence against the tribes of the west, is improbable. The civilization of the Trinovantes was probably more advanced than theirs and needed such a strong garrison against them as these banks would shelter on this, which was the border land between the Trinovantes and the Catuvelauni till both were brought under one rule.

Salmon (*History of Essex*, 1740) says that the "conjecture may pass" that this is Alauna Silva of Ravennas, but Gough, in his *Additions to Camden's Britannia*, shows the fallacy of this idea, and we can only repeat that of its history we are ignorant and, so far as I know, the spade and the plough have brought little to light to tell its true tale.

Till excavations teach us that of which we are now ignorant we may not assert its date but, so far as can be judged by its appearance, this great double ramparted 35 acre fortress has existed for some 2000 years.

---

## THE CASTLE OF STANSTED MONTFITCHET.

BY HENRY LAVER, F.S.A., F.L.S.

It is stated in Domesday that the parish of Stansted, or rather the manor, was in the possession of a freeman in the time of Edward and that it was 'now' held by Robert; and this appears to be the earliest mention we have of this parish.

Robert's surname appears to have been Gernon. He was one of the followers of William the Conqueror and, like many others of these Norman knights, he received a large number of manors in various parts of the county of Essex and elsewhere, of which the previous Saxon owners had been dispossessed. He chose this parish, or it might be it was chosen for him, to be the head of his barony. We are not told why it was selected, but possibly the fact of the earlier earthwork being ready to hand may have had much to do with it. Of his death nothing is known. He had two sons, William and Robert. William, the elder of the two, succeeded him here and soon dropped the name of Gernon, but Robert, we are told, retained the family name. William's first act was to build or enlarge a residence here on what are now called the Castle Hills.

Morant says William took the name of de Montfitchet from an artificial or fixed mound of earth on which his castle was built, and this statement of his is followed by later authors. I give this for what it may be worth, but I question very much the derivation. The remains we now see may be portions of the castle built by this William, the second baron. He was also the founder of the Abbey of Stratford Langthorn a little before his death in 1163.

Gilbert de Montfitchet was the third baron, succeeding his father William, but little seems to have been known of him. He was succeeded by his son Richard, the fourth baron. He held many important offices under the King, being Keeper of the Forest of Essex and of the King's House at Havering, and had the custody of the Castle at Hertford, besides being Sheriff of Essex and Herts. He died in 1203 leaving, by his wife Milicent, a son Richard about 13

years old at the death of his father. This lad Richard lived to be one of the most illustrious of the Barons de Montfitchet.

During his minority he was placed by King John under the guardianship of Richard de Lacy, the Constable of Chester, who paid the King a higher price than anyone else for the privilege. De Lacy did not long enjoy the emoluments of the position, for in 1211 he was outbid by Millicent, the mother of the ward, who gave 100 marks beyond the tender of de Lacy. During the Wars of the Barons, Richard took a very prominent part against the King. In 1215 a general attack was made by the forces of King John upon the Castles of the confederate Barons throughout England and the Castle of Montfitchet was amongst the first to suffer and apparently it was at this time destroyed.

Whatever may have been the cause or causes of the wars of the Barons, the effect arising therefrom in extending the general liberties of the country were so great that at all events the name and memory of Richard de Montfitchet, the youngest yet one of the three bravest Knights of England, ought to be dear to every Englishman.

In the early part of the reign of Henry III., peace having been restored, Richard de Montfitchet regained the favour of the King and was restored to all the honours and estates of his house but we do not hear that ever this castle was rebuilt.

Richard died in 1258 without heir, as he appears never to have married, and the vast possessions of the Montfitchets became divided amongst his three sisters. Stansted fell to the share of Margery de Montfitchet, the wife of Hugh de Bolebeck, and continued in the Bolebeck family for one or two generations until the want of heirs male, in 1285, led to its being again divided amongst the three daughters of Hugh de Bolebeck, after which we hear nothing of the de Montfitchets. I have not attempted to trace further the ownership of the castle as we should get no help thereby in understanding either the plan or arrangements of the castle. We know, to some extent, who built one here and when it was destroyed and this is as far as we need go into its history.

It must not be supposed that the Montfitchets threw up these mounds of earth we now see. The probability is that this stronghold was made many years before that time. According to Clark, in his work on *Medieval Military Architecture*, these mounds were raised by the Saxons or Danes.

I do not feel at all sure he is right in attributing all the earthworks of this character to these two nations, but, for this occasion, we will take his statement as correct and say that the first of the

Montfitchets, finding the old Saxon lord's castle ready to hand, at once took possession of it and made it his residence.

It may be as well to clearly understand the plan of an earthwork which, according to Clark, was an unmistakable Saxon castle. First of all we have a mound surrounded by a ditch; next there is another considerable area, also surrounded by a ditch which joins the ditch of the mound. This area Clark terms a base-court. It may be artificially raised, but it is never so raised as the mound. Outside of this court, is another and larger area, also defended by a ditch, and occasionally in the larger and more important of these fortifications, another ditch surrounds the whole work without communicating with either of the ditches previously mentioned.

Rayleigh mount is of this character: there are the mound, inner and outer base-courts and the surrounding trench enclosing the whole. Sometimes the Normans, in building their stone castles, so altered the earthwork that we cannot see readily the parts as I have described them, and this seems the case here. We see clearly the mound and the base-court: the latter seems to have been considerably altered and at one part it may have had a portion of its area divided off by a straight-wall, now hidden by a bank. The correctness or otherwise of this idea would be very easily decided by a slight amount of excavation.

When the Normans took possession of these strongholds they found every separate court defended by a palisade and for several years this was continued, but after a time the place of the palisade was occupied by a wall of stone, and in most places where the Normans erected their stone castles on a mound, they made what is known as a shell-keep, that is, the mound was surrounded by a thick stone wall just inside the upper edge of the mound. The dwellings of the lord were generally inside this wall, as they had been inside the palisade.

This, then, was the keep of the castle, taking the place of the square keep in those castles where there was no mound.

The diameters of these shell-keeps vary from 30 to 100 feet, and the walls are generally from 8 to 10 feet thick.

The shape of a shell-keep is governed by the figure of the mound: many are polygons of 10 or 12 sides, not always equal. The approach to the shell-keep in its simplest form was by a wooden bridge, sometimes, as at Hawarden, by steps built against the curtain. Here there seems to have been a causeway. In all cases, as far as my experience goes, the entrance to the keep was from the inner court.

We have then, first the keep, of which, unfortunately, but little remains, but still there is enough of it to shew that there was a shell-keep with the entrance opposite the causey I before mentioned. We see but little more than this, a not surprising fact when we remember that the keep was destroyed in 1215 and that any stone building in such a stoneless district often provided a quarry when stones were required.

The base-court has some portions of the outer bank remaining. We cannot, however, without some excavations, say that it had the usual masonry to protect it, as we know Ongar and Pleshy had.

The extensive brickmaking and gravel excavations on the N.E. have removed any evidences of the outer base-court and its defences, if ever they existed after the Normans altered the castle when they added masonry to its other defences.

The entrance to the Norman castle may have been from the N.E.

Although this castle is of great interest, much might be done to increase its value and illustrate its history if some judicious excavations were made across the remains of the walls of the shell-keep, and in various other parts surrounding the base-court.

---

## AN EXTINCT COUNTY FAMILY: WROTH OF LOUGHTON HALL.

### I.

BY WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

THE limits marked out by the title of this paper luckily exonerate the present writer from following the example of a predecessor who, in treating of the Wroth family, started gallantly off with one "Wroth, a nobleman that lived in the time of King Edgar."<sup>1</sup> Less ambitious writers have been content to carry the family back to Sir John Wrothe, who was Sheriff of London in 1351, and Mayor ten years afterwards.<sup>2</sup> We ourselves may be content to start from Robert Wroth, Attorney General of the Duchy of Lancaster and lord of the manor of Durance in Enfield (Middlesex), who died on May 11th, 1535, leaving an eldest son and heir named Thomas.<sup>3</sup> The wardship and marriage of the heir were granted in 1536 to Thomas, Lord Cromwell,<sup>4</sup> and somewhere between that time and the year 1541 the ward married Mary, third daughter of Sir Richard Rich, afterwards first Lord Rich—an alliance which proved fruitful in more senses than one.<sup>5</sup>

In his will, dated October 5th, 1573, and proved on April 7th, 1575, Thomas Wroth, being then a knight, mentions by name seven sons and seven daughters; and to these fourteen the genealogists, rightly

<sup>1</sup> Harl. MS. 2218, 40 (23)—Pedigrees of Yorkshire and Durham families. General Wrottesley writing of his own patronymic (*Genealogist*, vol. xv-n.s.), says: "Its etymology is purely Saxon, the name signifying the territory of Wrote, the original Saxon proprietor. The same name occurs in the nomenclature of many other places, such as Wrotham and Wroxeter, formerly written Wrotecestre, and is identical with the modern surnames Wrote, Wroth, Grote, and the Low-German or Dutch 'Groot' and 'Wroot.'" Curiously enough, as we shall see later, a John *Wroth* married a Judith *Wrote*. Salmon (*Hist. Essex*, pp. 39, 40) puts the cart before the horse, and derives Wroth from Wrotham—a strange proceeding, the only justification for which, so far as I know, lies in the fact that in 35 Hen. III. Richard de Wrotham was found in possession of lands in Kent and of the manor of Newton in Somerset, which manor, in 10 Hen. IV., is said to belong to William Wroth, to whom it probably came through the Duraunts, Gartons, or Heyrons (Cp. Cal. of Inq. p.m. *passim*).

<sup>2</sup> Visitation of Essex; 1612 (Harl. Soc. xliii., p. 350).

<sup>3</sup> His will, dated May 8, 1535, and proved May 26, 1536, is registered P.C.C. 36, *Hogen*.

<sup>4</sup> In 1537 Sir Brian Tuke, making overtures for the marriage of one of his daughters to Thomas Wroth, describes him to Cromwell as "the right forward young gentleman your ward and kinsman" but what the precise relationship was, I do not know (S.P.D. XII., ii.—July 18, 1537).

<sup>5</sup> As Robert Wroth, the eldest son, was thirty-four on April 18, 1575, he must have been born somewhere about 1540 (*Inq. p. m.* T. Wroth: 17 Eliz., No. 97).

or wrongly, add three others.<sup>1</sup> Like his father-in-law, Sir Thomas favoured 'the new religion,' for which he suffered and by which, in turn, he profited, as the tale of the estates devised to his children plainly shews.<sup>2</sup> Included among them were the Essex manors of Great Bardfield, Chigwell with West Hatch,<sup>3</sup> and Theydon Boys, devised, as a full third part of all his manors, to his eldest son, Robert, with whose marriage to Susan Stonard the more intimate connexion of the Wroth family with the county of Essex may be said to begin.

Chief among the 'farmers' of the broad lands which, early in the sixteenth century, belonged to the great monastery at Waltham, was one John Stonard who, described as a yeoman, became in 1522 the lessee for forty one years of the manor of Loughton or Lucton.<sup>4</sup> He was, it would seem, one of the 'new men,' who rose to wealth and sometimes to power amid the upheavals of the time; for of his birth and parentage nothing is known. It may be that the wills of his ancestors were proved in the Abbot's Court at Waltham, and have perished with the rest.<sup>5</sup> That he was in any way connected with the Oxfordshire Stoners there is no evidence to shew; and the presumption is in the negative.<sup>6</sup> He was an official of the Forest, and in 1528 he and a Robert Stoner, with others, are named as keepers; while 'old Stonar' is mentioned more than once as a Ranger, and as receiving, by the King's order, sums 'in reward.'<sup>7</sup> There was also in the manor house of Durance, in 1556-7, a room

<sup>1</sup> Davy's *Suffolk Pedigrees* (Brit. Mus. Wro. 19, 156) gives Joan (b. 1555, d. 1558), and Faith, in addition to fourteen others; and the Essex *Visitation* of 1558, adds a seventeenth child, Margery, who married Isaac Hill and then Thomas Wyatt. This pedigree, alleged to be of 1558, is carried down to James Wroth who died in 1616.

<sup>2</sup> Inq. p.m. T. Wroth—17 Eliz., No. 97; and his will, 16, *Pyckeryng*.

<sup>3</sup> He had a grant of them on July 24, 1550 (S.P.D. X., 17).

<sup>4</sup> The family-name seems to have been at first indifferently spelt Stonard and Stoner; but as time went on the Loughton branch adhered to the one form, and that settled at Stapleford Abbots to the other. Stonard occurs in Domesday Book in the form of Stanardus, who held land of the King in Wethersfield; and several clergy of the name are to be found in Newcourt's lists of those beneficed in Essex, though none earlier than 1441.

<sup>5</sup> See *E. A. Trans.*, Vol. VI., n.s., p. 85.

<sup>6</sup> It was one of the Oxfordshire Stoners who had a grant of the bailiwick of Ongar from Henry VIII., to whom he was a Serjeant-at-Arms (*Pat. Roll*, 36 H. VIII., part 8, m. 12). Our John Stonard and his son, George, were respectively described as 'yeoman' and 'gentleman' in their several leases, but the latter, in his will, is called 'esquire.' The arms of the Essex family, occur in the *Visitations* incidentally, and even so not until 1612, when they are thus blasoned: *per fess or and sable, a pale engrailed counterchanged three eagles displayed of the second; the crest being a demi-buck salient azure, collared and attired or.* (*Harl. Soc.* XIII., 279, 330). The entirely different bearings of the Oxfordshire family are found on a monument in Stapleford Abbots church, erected to commemorate Francis Stoner, a member of the Essex family, who died in 1604. His pedigree, which occurs in the *Visitation* of 1634 (*Harl. Soc.* XIII., 493) has no blason of arms accompanying it.

<sup>7</sup> *Privy Purse Expenses of Henry VIII.*—1529-1532; and S.P.D. Hen. VIII., Vol. V.

known as 'Stoner's,' as well as one known as 'the Queenes chamber.'<sup>1</sup> The family, too, was known to Lord Cromwell; for Robert Norwich, writing to him in 1534 about some lands a member of it wished to acquire, says: "I shall do my best to further the King's pleasure and your's. If you tarry at London, Stonard and I will wait upon you."<sup>2</sup>

John Stonard, the lessee of 1522, made his will in 1532; but it was not until June 28th, 1540, that it was proved by George Stonard, his son, to whom the interest in all his 'fermes' held by 'enditures of lease,' was specifically devised.<sup>3</sup> Included among these was the unexpired term of the manor of Luckton (Loughton), of which the devisee had already, in 1535, secured a renewal for forty years, thereby extending his interest to the year 1603.

George Stonard survived his father for nearly twenty years, and his will, proved on Feb. 9th, 1558/9, serves to bring into relief the growing prosperity of the family.<sup>4</sup> At the date of George's death his eldest son and heir, John Stonard, was thirty-six years old and married.<sup>5</sup> He succeeded, *inter alia*, to the testator's interest in the manor of Loughton Hall, but having later in the same year acquired the manor of Luxborough, in Chigwell, he there built, as Norden tells us, 'a fayre howse.'<sup>6</sup> In this he seems to have lived, although it was at Loughton that he entertained Queen Elizabeth in the year preceding his death; and at Loughton, on October 26th, 1579, he was buried.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Q. R. Misc.* 925/2.

<sup>2</sup> S.P.D. Hen. VIII., Vol. VI. The letter is endorsed 'Halyfeld Hall,' and I incline to think that a subsequent entry refers to this transaction. In Vol. VI. (No. 478) an abstract of an account of Cromwell's Receiver occurs, and among other items is one of money paid by J. Stoner, for Hattefeld (*sic*) Hall, and also of money disbursed by the same as bailiff of Hattefeld Hall. Hattefeld should probably be read Hallefeld. Some years later Geoge Stonard leased from the Abbot of Waltham other lands near, called Claverham Lands, and the manor of Claverhambury (*Convent. Leases*: B 229, fo. 69; and B 230, fo. 70).

<sup>3</sup> John Stoner—P.C.C. 7, *Alenger*.

<sup>4</sup> George Stonerde—P.C.C. 41, *Welles*.

<sup>5</sup> *Inq. p.m.*, 1 Eliz. (1558).

<sup>6</sup> *Essex*, by John Norden, 1594; p. 33. According to the terms of a fine levied in Trinity Term, 1 Eliz., John Stonerd, esq., acquired the manor of 'Loughbroughes,' and something over two hundred acres, from Francis Saunders, esq., and Margaret Valentyne, widow, for 150*l*. The manor gave a name to, or derived one from, a family of which one member, William de Loughtheburgh was party to a fine touching land in Chigwell in 1315-6 (9 Ed. II., 498), and the same person figures on a Subsidy Roll four years later (*Excheq. Sub.* 1317 — Chigwell). A later owner, Mr. Knight, on his elevation to the peerage in 1745, took as his title 'Baron Luxborough of Shannon.' The fine house he erected was demolished and the materials sold piecemeal soon after 1800, and a walled garden alone remains to mark the ancient site, close to, or over which, a railway is now in course of construction. (*London*, by D. Hughson: Vol. VI.; and *Supplement to the First Edition of Lysons' Environs* (1811), p. 117.)

<sup>7</sup> The entry in the Chigwell Parish Register runs: '1597—Mr. John Stonnerd died the 16 October and was buried at Lowton the 26 October.' The Loughton Register for that date and many years afterwards is unhappily missing.



By the will of John Stonard, dated October 1st, 1579, and proved December 12th, 1580, the whole of his estate, after payment of a few legacies and the termination of certain life interests, passed to Robert Wroth, husband of the testator's only daughter, Susan.<sup>1</sup> From the will itself, and from another source, we learn that Mr. Stonard had already in 1578, in consideration of 1100*l.* paid to him, transferred to his son-in-law his leases of the manor of Loughton, reserving the issues thereof to himself and his wife for life; and it seems probable that Robert and Susan Wroth were established at Loughton Hall during his life-time.<sup>2</sup>

In many cases our knowledge of those long passed away is limited to what we can glean from their wills. It is so in large measure with the Wroths and the Stonards, and, before going on further, we will cast a brief glance backward at those sources of information which have served to bring us so far on our way.

The will of John Stoner, who was, it would seem, the founder of the family, was executed before the dissolution of the greater Monasteries, and, although he lived just long enough to witness that event, his dispositions remained unaltered.<sup>3</sup> Numerous and elaborately detailed are his gifts to pious uses; his two wives, Katherine and Joan, are named, and he desires to be buried beside the former, in Loughton church, in the chapel of Our Lady there, before the image of St. Wenefrede, making ample provision, for 'a marble stone, with imagies and scripture convenient.' The 'marble stone' still remains *in situ*, though brass-less and bare to the sky; for when the ancient church was ruthlessly demolished, the effigies and inscription were reived and removed to the new one.<sup>4</sup> To the reverend Father in God, the Abbot of Waltham, whose livery the testator wore, he bequeaths, to have his soul in his remembrance, his 'best amblyng nagge,' or five marks sterling.<sup>5</sup> A pious, thoughtful man, concerned for his own soul and for the souls of others, he was

<sup>1</sup> P.C.C. 50, *Arundell*. The *Dictionary of National Biography* (art. Wroth, Sir Robert) gives Francis Stonard, of Knowles Hill, as Susan's father. He was her uncle.

<sup>2</sup> The manor of Loughton changed hands more than once during the leasehold tenure of the Stonards. In 1540 it passed, under a deed of surrender, dated March 23rd, from the Canons of Waltham to the Crown. On April 4, 1551, Edward VI. granted the manor and advowson to Sir Thomas Darcy, for the better maintenance of the barony soon afterwards conferred on him. Lord Darcy, rather more than a year afterwards, exchanged it with the King for lands and tenements in Surrey. On May 3rd, 1553, Loughton Manor was assigned to the Princess Mary for life; and on April 15, 1558, it was incorporated into the Duchy of Lancaster, in which it remained for many years—(Pat. Roll 5 E. VI., 4/32-38; 6 E. VI., 9/48; 7 E. VI., 8/18; 4 & 5 P. & M., 3/23).

<sup>3</sup> P.C.C. 7, *Alenger*.

<sup>4</sup> They were moved back again when the Memorial Chapel was erected in the old church-yard in 18. .

<sup>5</sup> *Conventual Leases: Essex*—B 238, fo. 74.

not inconsiderate of their bodies, providing twice over for 'amendynge the most noios and fowle highewaies' in his parish of Loughton, forgiving his poor debtors, and withal helping forward the marriage of poor maidens. It was some eighteen years later on that his son, George Stonerde, 'being somewhat sicke,' made his will.<sup>1</sup> Unlike his father, who commended his soul 'unto Almighty Jesu, my Creature (*sic*), Redemer, and Saviour, to our blessed lady, Sanct Mary, the Virgyne, his most glorious Mother, and to all the holly company of heaven,' George Stonerde commends his soul 'to the hands of almightie god, the father, and Jesu Christe, the sonne, my onely maker and Redeemer, and to all the holy companye of heaven'; but, like his father, he desires to be buried in the parish church, near his late wife, who lay in 'the newe chappell' there. A kindly and considerate man, he, too, provides handsomely for the church, for the poor, and for the amending of the high ways; and included among the legatees, we find Sir Anthony Browne, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and his wife, Mary, who were his neighbours at Chigwell. Twenty years afterwards John Stonarde, George's son and heir, 'consideringe with myselfe the frayltie of man's estate and the brettlenes of theis oure corruptible bodies, disposynge myselfe to be in a readynes, as nere as god shall give me his grace, whensoever it shall be his good pleasure to call me home unto his everlasting Kingdome, which assuredlie I believe christe Jesu my saviour hath purchased for me by his deathe and passion,' made his will, directing his body, 'which is but dust and ashes,' to be 'comely covered with Earth.'<sup>2</sup> He, too, was doubtless a pious and not unkindly man, but the prelude to his will marks the completed severance of the new from the old faith. at anyrate so far as expression goes; and, with the exception of gifts to servants, there are no charitable bequests.

The Wroths, as we have seen, early favoured the new religion, and Robert Wroth's will, made in 1535, begins with a simple invocation of the Holy Trinity, although it also contains a legacy to the 'Fraternities of our blessed lady' at Enfield.<sup>3</sup> Horses seem at the time to have been bequests much in favour, and, in this instance, 'to the right honourable Thomas Cromwell, esq., chief Secretary to the kinges highnes,' is left the testator's 'best grey gelding'; while his 'blak Colte,' lately bought of Maister Roods, falls to the lot of 'the right honourable Sir William ffitzwilliam, Knyght, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancastre.' Sir Thomas Wroth, the son and successor of Robert, figures in the history of the time as a strong upholder of

<sup>1</sup> P.C.C. 41, Welles.

<sup>3</sup> P.C.C. 36, Hogen.

<sup>2</sup> P.C.C. 50, Arundell.

the Reformation, and the somewhat long-winded prelude to his will, made rather less than thirty years later, fully justifies his reputation; for an almost ostentatious repudiation of any good works wrought by him is emphasised by the absence of any bequest to charitable purposes. He makes, however, a special gift to his daughters 'for their naturall paines taken ever aboute me and chieflie in this my last sickness'; and bequeaths an interesting legacy in the shape of 'an over gilt boll pinked, with a cover that Kyng Edward gave me.'<sup>1</sup>

It was a goodly heritage in the county of Essex that, on the death of their parents on both sides, fell to the lot of Robert and his wife, Susan, the daughter and heiress of John Stonard.<sup>2</sup> Apart from other estates elsewhere their possessions in the valley of the Roding, freehold or held to farm, extended over an unbroken length of three miles, beginning with Luxborough and Chigwell-cum-West Hatch, continuing through Loughton, and ending with Theydon Bois, Abridge and Lambourne.<sup>3</sup> Evidence is not lacking to shew how eminently well-qualified Mr. Wroth was for his position as a large landowner. He served as Member of Parliament<sup>4</sup>; he took an active part in county business and in the management of the Forest<sup>5</sup>; and when occasion served he made additions to his estates. Although his efforts to acquire the manor of Loughton were unsuccessful, he became by his purchase

**Sir Robert  
Wroth, I.  
1540—1606.**

<sup>1</sup> P.C.C. 16, *Pyckeryng*.

<sup>2</sup> Mrs. Stonard, the widow, who had a life interest in Loughton, lived on until the end of the century (*Lans. MS.*, 88, fo. 59). Thomas Butler, of Loughton, gentleman, by his will, dated Feb. 23, 1576, and proved June 19, 1577, devised to Mary, his wife, all his "lease, interest, and term of yeres of and in the mannor or farm of Loughton Hall . . . to be made and sealed unto me thereof by Mr. John Stonarde, of Luxboroughes, esquire," whom he had already paid (*P.C.C.* 25, *Daughtry*).

<sup>3</sup> Luxborough was settled by a fine levied at Easter, 22 Eliz. (1580) on Robert and Susan Wroth for life, and the right heirs of Robert. Chigwell and West Hatch were granted, with Bardfield, to Sir Thomas Wroth, for life, by Patent 3 Ed. VI. (Part 9, m. 1); the grant was made absolute in the following year, according to Morant (*s.v.* Bardfield).

<sup>4</sup> A Wroth is found among the members of Parliament in 1332, and the name occurs frequently down to 1436, when it vanishes for nearly a century. In 1529 a Robert Wroth was elected for Middlesex, and thenceforward that county was for many years represented by a member of the family. Sir Robert Wroth sat in several Parliaments as its representative and, à propos of his attendance in the House, we find him writing, in 1587, to two Essex Deputy Lieutenants complaining that he has had but 'Scarborough warning,' having had notice on the 5th March to muster and certify the men under his charge by the 18th, and asking to be relieved, as he cannot be in two places at once (S.P.D. Mar. 5). That Sir Robert made no empty excuse, is evident from the Journal of the House of Commons which we owe to Sir Simonds d' Ewes, and in which his name occurs over and over again: indeed there was hardly a committee of which he was not nominated a member, whether the maltsters, bays, Mr. Knivet's land, the relief of the poor, or the reformation of alehouses, was in question; and on one occasion he was nominated "to make collection of the members both for the minister his pains in saying prayers in this House, and for the Poor"—a curious collocation. The origin of the phrase 'Scarborough warning,' which occurs elsewhere in 1616, is variously explained in Brewer's Reader's Handbook, *q.v.*

<sup>5</sup> According to Mr. W. R. Fisher (*Forest of Essex*) he was made Riding Forester in 1589, and he had grants of the Lamborne, Chigwell, Loughton, and Chingford Walks in the following year.

of certain lands lying on Buckhurst Hill, a considerable freeholder in the parish.<sup>1</sup> "He was," says Roger Morice, "a most zealous and excellent person; a great suppressor of vice, and a vigorous promoter of further reformation in the church, of practical godliness, and of the Puritan interest."<sup>2</sup>

A few of Sir Robert Wroth's letters—he was knighted in 1597—have been preserved, either in their original form or in copies, and serve to illuminate the closing years of his life.<sup>3</sup> The earliest is one dated 'Lucton,' Aug. 15, 1597, and addressed to his friend, Mr. Michael Hikes, at Ruckolls—'Saint Michael,' as he playfully calls him.<sup>4</sup> In this he returns thanks for 'many courtesies and great intertainment lately received,' and will send him a buck 'God willing tomorrow, or Wednesday morning,' as also some partridges, 'but not so many as my will is, for that I think some of the Trainee will fall into my house.' He goes on to say: "Thinking his Ma"<sup>5</sup> [*i.e.* Queen Elizabeth] would have stayed one night at Mr. Knevet's,<sup>6</sup> I sent my brother John to Mr. Secretaries desiring his Honour to have lodged at my house, but it seemed by his Honour that she would not stay there, yet let me intrete you," he continues, to tell him that my house and self are at his commandment.

On the 5th of January following he again writes to his friend, asking him to get him appointed 'an attendant' on Sir Robert Cecil, who, with others, is going as a Commissioner to France, 'upon certain treaties,' and explaining that he would have attended his Honour [*i.e.* Cecil] thereabout himself 'but that according to the *antiquum more* (*sic*) of England there is a certaine ceremony of keeping house the twelve dayes,' and also that he has 'a greate sorte' of his good friends with him, whereof his correspondent, if he had kept his promise, would have been one.

Two years later, in a letter dated Lucton, Oct. 16, 1599, Sir Robert writes to his friend on another topic. The reference seems to be to deer-stealers, who frequented Leyton Walk, of which Mr. Colston was at the time Keeper.<sup>6</sup> 'Certain lewd fellows,' it appears, who

<sup>1</sup> *Inq. p.m.* 4 Jac., Part ii., No. 87 (p. 97). In 1589 he was a purchaser of Crown lands, in conjunction with William Wiseman (S.P.D. Sep. 11), and in his will he devises other purchased lands to his younger sons.

<sup>2</sup> *Morice MS.* See the reference in the next note.

<sup>3</sup> B.M. *Lansdowne MS.* 88; and Dr. Williams' Library, Gordon Square—*Morice MS. L., Miscellanea*, Vol. I.

<sup>4</sup> Michael Hicks was Secretary to Lord Burghley and after his death to his successor. He married, in 1597, Elizabeth Colston, widow of Henry Pervis, or Parvish, of Ruckholt, but acquired that estate by purchase (*D.N.B.*).

<sup>5</sup> Thomas Knevet, or Knyvet, afterwards Lord Knevet of Eserick. He married a daughter of Richard Warren, of Essex, and lived at Stanwell, Middlesex (*D.N.B.*).

<sup>6</sup> Mr. Colston, according to Roger Morice (*MS.* Vol. I., 76/114), was Michael Hicks' brother-in-law; he had the grant of the Keepership of Leyton Walk in 1592 (*S.P.D.* Mar. 30—109).

disguised themselves with beards, which they carried in their pockets, frequented Leyton Heath and Snaresbrook, and having 'obtained that they come for,' would separate and ride over by Temple Mill, or sometimes by Hackney. To circumvent them the miller is to keep his gate shut, and Mr. Colston is to take suitable measures 'with discreet keepers.' In a postscript one man is described as riding a white mare.

After the lapse of nearly a year, during which the friends had apparently had no opportunity of meeting and being merry together, Sir Robert, writing again from Lucton, under date September 9, 1600, invites Mr. Hickes and his wife, Alderman Loe and his wife, Mr. Colston and his wife, and any other good company whomsoever they will bring, as the time for sport in Hunting draws near. He appoints the following Thursday morning, about Fairmead, where he promises to make the Gentlemen some sport with Mr. Raf Colston's Hounds, and his own. The party was to stay the night at Lucton Hall; but, on reflection, Sir Robert added a postscript to the effect that, if the gentlewomen could not be stirring so soon, the party was to come to dinner on the Thursday, and in the afternoon find 'spoarts' as Bowles or otherwise. They were to bring their bowls, and also a brother, Baptist Hicks, with them.<sup>1</sup> The letter evidently went by hand and with it some 'apricocks,' this year 'not so kindly' as they have been.

The date fixed not suiting Mr. Hicks, he wrote to propose dining with his friend on Monday; but this was not altogether suitable, since Sir Robert had on that day to be at a determined feast on the same day yearly made by his cosen, John Barfoote, at his house, for the Hunters, chiefly appointed for his 'sake as one of the unthriftiest in these pastimes, and the ending of hunting is appointed in those parts, and not in Faire Meade.'<sup>2</sup> The gentlewomen are bidden to Lucton in the afternoon to supper, and Sir Robert adds that he has to be at Dunmow on Wednesday about the Commission of the Statute concerning Charitable Uses. Other suggestions as to the visit follow and the host promises to provide venison for the feast. Whether it ever took place, or what happened at it, we know not, for the next letter is dated more than a year afterwards, and refers to more serious matters.

<sup>1</sup> Baptist Hicks, a younger brother of Michael, was the third son of his father, a mercer in Cheapside. He became financial agent to the King, and successfully upheld his right to continue keeping a shop after he had received the honour of knighthood. In 1628 he was created a peer for life, with remainder over to his son-in-law, Edward, Lord Noel (*D.N.B.*).

<sup>2</sup> A daughter (? Katherine) of George Stonard married (? Thomas) Barfote. See her father's will, 41, *Welles*.

Owing, as he did, the long leases of Loughton Hall it was only natural that Sir Robert Wroth should desire to acquire the fee-simple and lordship of the estate, and the next letter reveals certain steps that he took towards the attainment of his object.<sup>1</sup>

*Sir Robert Wroth to Michaell Hickes.*

My very good friend St. Michaell as one Longe since a professed and vowed follower of and faithful friend of Mr. Secretaryes to do unto him all service honor and kindness I can, I have divers tymes and oftner I would have shewed myself unto his honor, but that I have seene and knowne him overwhelmed wth. the greate and high affayres that I durst not trouble him. And this I doe assure you that I have bene, am, and wilbe as lorthe to do any sparke that his honour may have any just cause of Conceipte of unkindnes as any what soever that is nerest him, yet I am subject to the Leowde tale caryers but my only desyre is that I may not be hardly conceyved of untill I may be hard. And for that I think yor opertuntie doethe often very well serve to his honour wth. out any greate trouble to him, I am to intreat you one my behaulfe to breake the Ise in a sute that I have to make to his Honor.

There is, as I understand, Comyssyons for sayle of Dutchey Lands, being not auncient Dutchey, of wch. nature the mannor of Lucton Hawle that I dwelle in is of.<sup>2</sup> My humble sute is that by his good helpe and meanes I may purchas yt at a reasonable price, in the wch. mannor I have forty yeares yet to come, not yet in beinge, by vertue of a Lease graunted by her Matie. to my late father-in-lawe, and sertaine other yeares allsoe to come by one other Lease graunted from the Abbot to ould Mr. Stonard, soe that I am to have little benyfit by my purchase this many yeares; and theas Leases I was forced to buye to keep my Lord of Lester<sup>3</sup> for cominge so neere,

<sup>1</sup> B.M. Lansd. MS. 88, fo. 59

<sup>2</sup> Loughton was incorporated into the Duchy in 1558 (*Pat. Roll*, 4 & 5 P. & M., iii., 23). It is to be noted that Sir Robert Wroth invariably writes 'Lucton,' and this form, as an alternative, appears on the Court Rolls, now and always since the sixteenth century headed 'The Manor of Loughton *alias* Lucton.' Sir Robert's desire to perpetuate and popularise the latter form was not destined to be gratified, and it is a moot point whether, even in early days, Lochinton, Luketon, other written variants of the kind, represented the sound of the name as pronounced by the common run of people. 'Loghton' is found in a fourteenth century will (J. Stokesby: 116, *Courtney; Com. Ct.*).

<sup>3</sup> Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, bought Wanstead Manor in 1578 (Morant), and his infant son died there, July 19, 1584 (G.E.C.). Robert Dudley's sister, Mary, married Henry Sydney, whose granddaughter Mary, became Lady Mary Wroth. Ben Jonson's epigram on the Earl, quoted by G.E.C. seems more than enough to account for Sir Robert Wroth's not wishing to have him as a near neighbour.

"Heere lyes a vallaunt warrior who never drew a sword,  
Heere lyes a noble courtier who never kept his word,  
Here lies the Earle of Leicester who governed the Estates,  
Whom the earth could never, living, love, and the just heaven now hates."

Speaking of the same man, Froude describes him as "without courage; without talent; without virtue."

whoe was earnestly in hand to have bought them, for the wch. I payed three and twenty yeare agoe eleaven hundreth poundes, and had not any Commoditye of them untill after my mothers death which was this tyme twelmoneth and yf I should purchase the fee-farme of yt I should make the like purchase that Dives Sutton made.<sup>1</sup> I am her Maties. tennant in possessione, her Ma<sup>s</sup> servant, and one that hath faythfully truly and chargeablye served her Matie. wh. out any recompence, and therefore I hope there wilbe sum good consideracone had of me. Besides yf yt be my fortune to obtayne it in tyme I purpose to make such an alteracone of the howse (being very ruinous and parte of it in such decaye that yf yt be not repayed it will falle downe) as it shalbe fitt to entertaine her Matie. and suerly were yt not that parte of my smalle patrimony lyeth rounde about it, more then that I am ready in purse for any such purchase, I would as yet have stayed to have entred into the purchase thereof. This shortly is my sute unto his Honour, and, although I assure my selfe to have some frendes that I hope wilbe willinge to doe unto me some kindenes, yet for that I frame myself altogether to depend of his Ho<sup>r</sup> I would be lorth to trouble any other but his Ho<sup>r</sup> who shall not finde me unthankfull or unmindfull for any kindnes shewed unto me. I pray you therefore have some good Care herein and that wth. some expedicone you will move him to know his Honoures pleasure, and what course shalbe taken herein. Fare you well. Leaden Hawle, London, this [blank] day of february, 1601/2

Yo<sup>r</sup> assur<sup>d</sup> and loving  
ffrend

Robert Wrothe.

*Endorsed:* To my very loveinge | frend Michaell Hicke | Esquire  
at his | house in the Strand | geve theas | .

Shortly after the letter was written commissioners were appointed to survey the house and buildings, and their report, dated June 17, 1602, states that the necessary repairs will cost 100*l.*, exclusive of seventy timber trees to be had on the manor.<sup>2</sup> These repairs were no doubt executed and enabled Sir Robert to receive his sovereign in July, 1605.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The question of these leases will be more conveniently treated later on. 'Dives Sutton' I take to be Thomas Sutton, the well-known founder of the Charterhouse, of whom the *D.N.B.* says: "it is as one of the richest Englishmen of the day that he won his reputation." He was connected with Essex.

<sup>2</sup> *D. Lanc., Surveys and Depositions*: 44 *Eliz.*

<sup>3</sup> *Nichols' Progresses of James I.*, i., 517; and *MS. Lansd.* 89, fo. 127.

Later in the year 1602 (August 1st) Sir Robert again invites his friend to join him at Loughton Hall, but we gather that he, though by no means an old man, had begun to find himself less able to bear the fatigues of his fully-occupied life.<sup>1</sup>

*Sir Robert Wroth to Michell Hickes.*

The Court beinge sumthinge remote I thinke you may have some tyme for recreatyng yourselfe among yo<sup>r</sup> frendes, in the number of wch. I will compare wth. the most firmest. I pray you therefore lett me intreate you to appoynt some tyme when yo<sup>r</sup> selfe wth. yo<sup>r</sup> good wife, and Mr. Alderman Loe and his wife, yo<sup>r</sup> brother Colston and his night geere, *cum multis alijs* of yo<sup>r</sup> frendes, and the more the better, will come to my howse to Lucton, where you shall be most hartylie wellcome, and, god willinge, wee wilbe merry, onlye this, that I am more sparinge of my fleshe than heretofore I have bene. And so appoynt it as we must not parte in thre or four dayes. Thus expecting yo<sup>r</sup> aunswer, for that I will cleare myselfe of all busynes against that tyme, I will bid you farwell. Lucton, this first of August, A<sup>o</sup> 1602.

Yo<sup>r</sup> assured lovinge frend

Robert Wrothe.

*Endorsed:* To my loving frend | Mr. Michell Hickes esqre | at his house at | Ruccolls give theas.

Barely half a year had elapsed when a fresh invitation left Loughton, on Christmas Day, 1603, in which 'verye good oysters' are held out as a bait to induce acceptance of it. Half a doe accompanied the bearer of the letter, with an apology that it was no more, owing to a scarcity of deer in the forest and the overflowing of the grounds with water. In September, 1604, more 'vary good oysters' are offered to 'Noe more Saint but Sir Michaell'; and the deer emerge again in the following year, when we find Sir Robert no longer complaining of their scarcity, but busy with a petition to the King, on behalf of his neighbours and other inhabitants of the forest, touching 'the continuall chardge' of them. A fortnight afterwards, on July 18, 1605, King James was Sir Robert's guest at Loughton for two nights, and a few days later his host, in the last letter we have from his hand thus unbosoms himself to his old friend and neighbour.<sup>2</sup>

*Sir Robert Wroth to Sir Michaell Hickes.*

Sir Michaell, my daylie attendance of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> and the Contynuall imploment of my servants to look to that ficke veneriall Chardge of

<sup>1</sup> MS. Lansd. 88, fo. 75.

<sup>2</sup> MS. Lansd. 89, fo. 127.



myne<sup>1</sup> was suche as I could not perform my intencion that I had formerly purposed, yet beinge nowe somethinge more quiett I doe herewith send a brace of Buckes to the Right ho<sup>ble</sup> the Earl of Salisbury,<sup>2</sup> from a true hart to him ward, desyryng you to be my presenter of them, not as a flatarabundus, but from him that soe loved and honored that pereles father of his, as I cannot nor doe not but wth as great love and honoure reverence his sonne, especially such an one as dooth patrisare. And I am semper idem, devoted longe since, as you know, unto his ho', in despight of all sicafants and other factious persons that desyre y<sup>e</sup> contrary. And so not troublinge you with any longe narracion I am and will be during lyfe . . . . prest to do unto his ho' all kindness and service . . . . Lucton Hall, July 21, 1605. Robert Wrothe.

*Endorsed:* To my very lovinge frend | Sir Michaell Hixe, Knight | geve these.

Just six months afterwards Sir Robert Wroth was borne to his grave at Enfield, where his formal funeral took place on March 3rd following.<sup>3</sup> As in the case of John Stonard his burial was recorded in two parish registers—those of Waltham and Enfield, under date Jan. 28, 1605/6. He mentions, in his will, his younger sons, John, Henry, and Thomas, the last being under age, and appoints his eldest son, Sir Robert, sole executor and residuary legatee.<sup>4</sup> The absence of any reference to his wife leads one to suppose that she died before him; but the Enfield Registers do not record her burial, and those of Loughton for that date have been lost for many years.<sup>5</sup>

**Sir Robert Wroth, II. 1576—1614.** Sir Robert Wroth, the younger, was living at Chigwell at the time of his father's death, being then about thirty years old.<sup>6</sup> He had married at Penshurst, on September 27th, 1604, Mary Sidney, eldest daughter of Robert, first Lord Sydney of Penshurst, and Viscount Lisle, afterwards created

<sup>1</sup> James the First's passion for hunting seems to have been excessive, and probably appeared so to his host, himself a sportsman. On one occasion when the King was so ill that he had to be carried to Theobalds in a litter, he insisted on having a muster of his deer made before he retired; and on another, when he went south to inspect some warships, his demeanour was such as to lead those about him to make comparison between the interest he took in his hunting and that he failed to shew in the wooden bulwarks of his realm.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Cecil was so created on May 4, 1605 (G.E.C.).

<sup>3</sup> Enfield Parish Register. Sir Robert Wroth buried Jan. 28, 1605/6: his funeral, March 3rd. The latter was, of course, the formal ceremony, no doubt attended by much pomp of heraldry.

<sup>4</sup> P.C.C. 9, *Stafforde*.

<sup>5</sup> The Loughton Parish Registers for the years prior to 1673 were missing at any rate in 1831 (B.M. *Add. MS.* 9355, Vol. A), and probably long before, as a transcript of certain entries now at the College of Arms and in handwriting of an earlier date, seems to indicate (Marshall's Guide—2nd ed., and private information).

<sup>6</sup> Inq. p.m. Robert Wroth, 18 Sep., 4 Jac. I. (Part ii., 87—p. 97.)

Earl of Leicester.<sup>1</sup> The bride, who was about nineteen, received a handsome wedding present from her father's captains at Flushing, of which he was the Governor, in the shape of 200*l.*, to buy her a chain of pearl, or otherwise employ as she pleased. "We all pray for her happiness in the Choice," said the donors, "and for your and my lady's heart's content." Sir William Browne, who announced the gift in August, in October acknowledged, for all the contributors, the safe receipt of 'My Lady Wroth's remembrance of very fayre gloves.'<sup>2</sup>

Up to this time the connexion of the Wroth family with the Court, though sufficiently close, seems to have been one of business rather than pleasure. But a fresh era of gaiety and extravagance opened with the accession of James I., whose consort, Anne of Denmark was no recluse, and among the fair women who adorned the Court, the Lady Mary Wroth, in virtue of her accomplishments, her birth, and her beauty, occupied a prominent place.<sup>3</sup> As to her beauty there seems but little doubt; and she was a lineal descendant of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland. Her husband, a country gentleman of ancient lineage, best known to us from Ben Jonson's description of his home, seems to have had and gratified an inclination towards a rural life. He had been knighted at Sion House in 1603; and in 1606, in the only letter we have under his hand, he tells Sir Michael Hicks that he was then expecting a royal visit.<sup>4</sup> The 'Lord' referred to in his letter is, of course, Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, the son of the great Lord Burghley, who had retained the services of his father's secretary.

*Sir Robert Wroth to Sir Michael Hicks.*

Sir, were either my fortune or meanes answerable to my desires none should with more readines manifest his love to my *Lord* than myselfe; and to that effecte let me intreate you as my kynde freinde to make knowne unto him what power and interest he shall always

<sup>1</sup> The Dict. of Nat. Biog. furnishes the date of the marriage, and the lady's age, presumably from the Registers at Penshurst. She was the eldest daughter (according to her son's coffin-plate at Enfield) and one of the twelve children whom Barbara, the daughter and heiress of John Gamage, of Coity, in Glamorganshire, bore to Robert Sidney, created successively Lord Sidney (1603), Viscount Lisle (1605) and Earl of Leicester (1618). Barbara's marriage took place in the chapel of St. Donats Castle on September 23, 1584. The bride was rich and beautiful, and her husband did not lack the good looks, which they transmitted to their descendants (*Memoirs of the Sidney Family* by Philip Sidney (1899) pp. 98 *et seq.*).

<sup>2</sup> *Letters and Memorials of State*: A. Collins (1746)—p. 305. The account given by Mr. Collins of the Wroth family is singularly inaccurate. *Inter alia* he gives Lady Mary a second son, Robin, living in 1621.

<sup>3</sup> Nichols' *Progresses, etc., of K. James I., passim.*

<sup>4</sup> Nichols, *ut supra*, I., 166; and B.M. *Lansd. MS.* 96, fo. 187.

have in me. My purpose was in a greater proportion to have presented him wh. such provisions as these parkes afforde. But at this instant the Kinges pleasure is signified unto me yt on Monday night next the Prince<sup>1</sup> shall be my guest and therefore, althoughe this small remembraunce sorte not with my mynde, yet I pray you yt y<sup>e</sup> acceptaunce be never the lesse, the wch. I doubt not but by y<sup>r</sup> meanes will be the better regarded

Your very lovinge friende, Ro: Wrothe.

*Endorsed:* 27 July, 1606. To my very lovinge friend | Sir Michaell Hikes | Knighte at Thibales.

Both husband and wife are credited with a taste for literature, although, so far as I know, none of his productions—alleged by Giffard to have been witty,—has come down to posterity. In any case it was to the one, as “the lady most deserving her name and blood, Lady Mary Wroth,” that Ben Jonson, in 1610, dedicated his famous ‘Alchemist’; and to her husband that he appropriately inscribed ‘The Forest.’ Gifford, in the introduction to his edition of Jonson’s Works (1816), says that the author probably “spent much of his time at the country-seats of the nobility and gentry, as he has allusions to several visits of this kind,” and it appears almost certain that he was a guest at Loughton Hall, describing, as he does in ‘The Forest,’

... the curled woods and painted meadows  
Through which a serpent river leads.

Considerations of space, and of the nature of the publication in which these notes appear, preclude my printing at length Ben Jonson’s delightful poem, but an extract or two will shew its character. The keynote is struck in the opening lines:—

How blest art thou cans’t love the country, WROTH  
Whether by choice, or fate, or both?  
And though so near the city, and the court,  
Art ta’en with neither’s vice nor sport:

He is described as no ambitious guest at Sheriff’s dinner or Mayor’s feast, nor anxious

..... (when masquing is) to have a sight  
Of the short bravery of the night.

His house is described as being made his master’s Court, the King frequently resorting to it in spring, for the purpose of sport, and Sir Robert’s own tastes in the same direction are described in some

<sup>1</sup> Henry Frederick, Prince of Wales, born in 1594, died in 1612 (D.N.B.).

detail. Summer and autumn are in turn charmingly treated, and a pleasant picture of Loughton Hall in winter-time is conjured up when

Comus puts in for new delights ;  
 And fills thy open hall with mirth and cheer,  
 . . . . .  
 The rout of rural folk come thronging in,  
 (Their rudeness then is thought no sin)  
 Thy noblest spouse affords them welcome grace ;  
 And the great heroes of her race  
 Sit mixt with loss of state, or reverence.  
 Freedom doth with degree dispense.  
 The jolly wassal walks the often round,  
 And in their cups their cares are drown'd.

The poem ends with counsel which does equal credit to the giver and to him to whom, as to one capable of receiving it, it was addressed.

Another and a minor poet, Richard Niccols, in his 'Vertue's Encomium; or the Image of Honour,' has a poem which extols Sir Robert Wroth's bounty in no measured terms. The 'bounteous Clere' mentioned in it may be Sir Francis Clere, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Wroth, of Blendon. The poem is in the style of an age not ours, but the laboured conceit and extravagant eulogy seem to veil a ray of sincerity.

*In obitum nobilissimi benignissimique viri nuper defuncti Roberti Wroth, militis.*

Wroth's chief is dead, since worthy he is gone  
 Who of that name most worthy was alone.  
 Ye poor and hungry, all, his grave go find,  
 That holds the body of so fair a mind.  
 There sit ye down and sigh, for bounty dead,  
 Bounty, with that brave knight, to Heaven is fled :  
 Where, since he came, Heaven (as it doth appear)  
 Wanting a star to set by bounteous Clere,  
 In Wroth did place the *o* before the *r*,  
 And made it Worth, which since is made a star.<sup>1</sup>

A more material bounty is celebrated by yet another versifier, William Gamage, who, addressing the worthy knight, Sir Robert Wroth, on the subject 'of his house called Durance', says:

Thy Durance keeps in durance none, I heare,  
 'Lesse be to pertake of thy bounteous cheere.

And a foot-note is added to explain that Sir Robert was 'a famous housekeeper.'<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Reprinted in the *Harl. Misc.* Vol. X. The book was a sm. 8vo. consisting of eleven leaves and published in 1614, the year of Sir Robert's death.

<sup>2</sup> Linsi-Woolsie or 2 centuries of Epigrammes, written by William Gamage, Batchelour in the Artes. At Oxford. 1613.

As might be anticipated similar tributes were not wanting to Lady Mary Wroth, who, in the *Masque of Blackness*, presented on Twelfth Night, 1604/5, personified Baryte.<sup>1</sup> There is in the 'Underwoods' a poem addressed to her on her own sonnets by Ben Jonson, who avows that, since he read them, he has become "a better lover and much better poet." Two of his 'Epigrams' were also addressed to her and one of them must find a place here. It is that numbered cv. in the collection, and needs no introductory word. It speaks, and loudly, for itself and for its subject.

*To Mary, Lady Wroth.*

Madam, had all antiquity been lost,  
 All history seal'd up, and fables crost,  
 That we had left us, nor by time, nor place,  
 Least mention of a Nymph, a Muse, a Grace,  
 But even their names were to be made anew,  
 Who could not but create them all from you?  
 He, that but saw you wear the wheaten hat,  
 Would call you more than Ceres, if not that;  
 And drest in shepherd's tire, who would not say  
 You were the bright CEnone, Flora, or May?  
 If dancing, all would cry, the Idalian queen  
 Here leading forth the Graces on the green;  
 And armed to the chase, so bare her bow  
 Dian' alone, so hit, and hunted so.  
 There's none so dull, that for your style would ask,  
 That saw you put on Pallas' plumed cask;  
 Or, keeping your due state, that would not cry,  
 There Juno sat, and yet no peacock by:  
 So are you nature's index, and restore,  
 In yourself, all treasure lost of the age before.

Other poets, too, emulated the example of their master, and, among them George Wither, in his '*Abuses Stript*,' published in 1614, pays his peculiar tribute to the merits of the Lady Wroth, 'Arts sweet lover,' as he styles her.

*To the Lady Mary Wroth.*

Epig. 10.

*Madame*, to call you *best*, or the *most faire*  
 The *vertu'st* and the wisest in our daies:  
 Is now not commendations worth a haire,  
 For that's become to be each hus-wifes praise.

<sup>1</sup> Nichols' *Progresses, etc.*, of K. James I., i., 479.

There's no degree below *Superlative*,  
 Will serve some soothing *Epigrammatists* :  
 The *Worst* they praise, exceeds *Comparative*,  
 And *Best* can get no more out of their fists.

But, *Arts sweet Lover* ; (unto whom I know  
 There is no happie *Muse* this day remains ;  
 That doth not for your *Worth* and bounty owe,  
 Even himselfe, his best and sweetest straines.)

Vouchsafe, to let this booke your favour finde,  
 And as I heare have *Mans* abuses showne,  
 Ile with like just, and uncorrupted minde,  
 So make your true unstained Vertues knowne.

While others false praise, shall in one's mouth be,  
 All shall commend you, in the high'st degree.

Nor did the author of 'Linsi-Woolsie' fail to lay his little tribute at the shrine of 'the most famous and Heroike Ladie Mary, Lady Wroth'; and it figures as Epigram 25, in the second 'century' of the collection.

Thy worthy husband Ladifies thee Wroth,  
 Pray be not so with my poore pen, to place  
 'Fore R the O ; then justly Lady Worth  
 I might thee stile, worth what ? hie honours Grace.

Among the Belvoir papers is included another effusion in the lady's praise, which begins "Love, birth, state, bounty, and a noble mynde," and ends with "Richer adorn'd than is by me exprest."<sup>1</sup> In quite another key, and probably a year or two later in date, is the following 'merry rime' reprinted by Mr. Churton Collins in his collection of the poems of Lord Herbert of Cherbury.<sup>2</sup>

*A Merry Rime*  
*Sent to the Lady Mary Wroth upon the birth*  
*of my Lord of Pembroke's Child.*  
*Born in the spring.*

Madam, though I'm one of those,  
 That every spring use to compose,  
 That is, add feet unto round prose.  
 Yet you a further art disclose,  
 And can, as everybody knows,  
 Add to those feet fine dainty toes,

<sup>1</sup> Hist. MSS. Commission, XII., ii., 320.

<sup>2</sup> These poems range over the years 1608—1664. The allusion to 'claws' points to the year 1621, in which a son, Henry, was born, and the *Urania* published. Lord Pembroke's other son, James, was born in 1616. Both died in their infancy.

Satyrs add nails, but they are shrews.  
 My muse therefore no further goes  
 But for her feet craves shooes and hose  
 Let a fair season add a Rose.  
 While thus attir'd we'll oppose  
 The tragic buskins of our foes.  
 And herewith, Madam, I will close,  
 And 'tis no matter how it shows:  
 All I care is, if the Child grows.

Returning for a moment to the Belvoir papers, it is to be noted that on November 9th, 1609, news was sent there to the Earl of Rutland that Lady Wroth was expected in London, and that, on her arrival, his lordship's direction should be done. A week later the same writer reported that the Lady Wroth had been very dangerously sick, but was said to be amending.<sup>1</sup>

It is probable that Lady Mary Wroth's influence at Court had something to do with her husband's success in a matter wherein his father failed, and the following letter, like the earlier one on the same topic, affords an interesting instance of the methods then adopted to obtain beneficial grants from the Crown.<sup>2</sup>

*The Lady Mary Wroth to the Queen.*

Madame,

The infinite favours which from you I have reseaved, although I must confess myself farr unworthie of the leaste of them, biesids knowing how willingly the kinge will heere your Mat<sup>ie</sup>, I thus farr presume as humbly to beseech you this much to bee pleased as to recomende this petition of Mr. Wroth's to the King [that he may purchase the fee-simple of Loughton]. It may be thought to bee a mater of profit and so the harder to optain, yet is it noe loss to his Mat<sup>ie</sup> at all, Mr. Wroth's sute being but this—that it may please the King to grant him a larger estate in itt to avoide all feare of having it taken over his head . . . . he will make the house fit for their Majesties and will make it his chief dwelling-place, it being at present old and in decay and like every day to fall down . . . . Mr. Wroth does not desire it for nothing; as your Ma<sup>tie</sup> may perceave by the petition he offers such a fine, or 600*l.* which he will bestow ther upon building, and will let the deer feed in his best grounds, to which

<sup>1</sup> Hist. MSS. Commission, XII., i., 418.

<sup>2</sup> Cecil Papers, 130/174; and I here take occasion to express my obligation to Lord Salisbury for the opportunity most kindly afforded me of examining this and other original documents preserved at Hatfield House.

by his lease he is nott bound, but is content to loose 100*l.* a year rather than trouble them, lest it might hinder the King's sports . . . . The writer humbly beseeches Her Ma<sup>ties</sup> furtherance in the busines, since it will be much for her good, Mr. Wroth having promised to ad itt to her jointure, all the rest of his lande beinge entailed, and her jointure otherwise small . . . . .<sup>1</sup>

(Signed) Mary Wrothe.

The description given of the house as "old and in decay, and like every day to fall"—we must bear in mind that Lady Mary had a poetical imagination,—shews that the letter was written some time before June 30th, 1612, when the manor-house was, in an official description, said to be "new built at the charges of Sir Robert Wroth."<sup>2</sup> This rebuilding must have been undertaken, either on the strength of a fresh lease for forty-one years granted, in 1609, in renewal of another which at that time had still thirty-five years to run, or in anticipation of an eventual fulfilment of the hope of purchase.<sup>3</sup> It was doubtless in consequence of a further application that the official survey was made in 1612, when the clear yearly value of the manor was set down as 51*l.* 13*s.* 9*d.*, and the timber on it at just over 100*l.*<sup>4</sup> In 1613 Sir Robert attained his object, and, in consideration of 1,224*l.* paid down, and the payment of an annual fee-farm rent of 58*l.* 8*s.* 4*d.* in perpetuity, became the owner of the manor of Loughton Hall, which thus, for the last time, ceased to be an appanage of the Crown.<sup>5</sup> The fee-farm rent continued to be paid until 1814, when, by virtue of an indenture, it was merged and extinguished in the manor.<sup>6</sup>

Sir Robert Wroth was not destined to inhabit long the "faire house, where a noble knight and his lady lived within a part of

<sup>1</sup> A promise fulfilled by the terms of his will (P.C.C., 60 *Lawe.*).

<sup>2</sup> *D. of Lanc.*: Surveys and Depositions (to Jac. I.).

<sup>3</sup> *D. of Lanc. Counterpart Leases*; Class XV., No. 28. The period extending from 1522 to 1685 was covered by four leases, two granted by the Abbot of Waltham (*Aug. Off. Conv. Leases (Essex)*, B. 238, fo. 74; and *Decrees*, VIII., p. 129); and two by the Crown, one as above, and the other *D. of Lanc. Draft Leases*, Class XIV., B. 52. An article on *Old Loughton Hall* in the *Essex Naturalist*, Vol. vii. (1893) contains further particulars as to the leases and surveys.

<sup>4</sup> *D. of Lanc. Surveys and Depositions* (to Jac. I.).

<sup>5</sup> *Originalia*: 11 Jac. I., part 4, roll 31; and S P.D., Vol. 74.

<sup>6</sup> *D. of Lanc.*, Div. XII., No. 44 (248 on roll); and Close Roll 23, Car. II., 20a pars 4 (Palmer's Index 72, p. 157), where is an Indenture dated Dec. 19, 1671, between Francis, Lord Hawley and others, and Henry Gardner, gent., to whom the fee-farm rent reserved out of and for the manor of Loughton, was sold, with others elsewhere. The evidence for the merger and extinction in 1814 occurs in Commissioners of Sewers v. Glasse and others, (Answer of the Rev. J. W. Maitland, filed Aug. 23, 1872) the parties to an Indenture tripartite being C. J. Harford, the Master and Wardens of the Merchant Adventurers of Bristol, and Ann Whitaker, in whom the manor was then vested.



the same Forrest."<sup>1</sup> On March 2, 1614, he made his will; on the following day his infant son was christened, having as sponsors the King (by his deputy, the Earl of Pembroke,) the Lord Chamberlain (the Earl of Suffolk), and the Lady Lisle; eleven days later, on March 14th, Sir Robert was buried at Enfield.<sup>2</sup> A contemporary letter tells how he left "a young widow with 1,200*l.* jointure, a son a month old, and his estate 23,000*l.* in debt."<sup>3</sup> How these debts came to be incurred, there is no evidence to shew, but it is probable that the position occupied by Sir Robert, largely in consequence of his marriage, was out of proportion to his estate, ample as this seems to have been. That he was no mere idle spendthrift seems indicated both by Jonson's poem and by his father's appointing him his sole executor; moreover he was largely employed by the King in matters of business, notably with those arising out of the extension of Theobald's Park. In 1611, for example, Miles Whytaker, writing to the Earl of Salisbury from Theobalds, tells him that the King has been round the new ground to be enclosed in the park and that one hundred men are engaged on the paling. Anticipating a visit from the King's Commissioners, Sir Robert Wroth and Sir Thomas Dacre, he further enquires as to how their 'diet' shall be arranged for. In the following year Sir Robert had a warrant for 5,600*l.* for lands purchased to enlarge the same park, and also 200*l.* to distribute to such tenants as pretend a right in the waste lands of Enfield Chase, taken in to enlarge Theobalds Park.<sup>4</sup>

It seems probable that his embarrassments arose from his wife's extravagance, for that foible ran in the Sidney blood, and the Lady Mary may in this, as in other ways, have taken pattern from her famous uncle, Sir Philip, of whom a recent writer has said: "Naturally extravagant, ill recompensed by Elizabeth for his services, compelled to indulge in all the gaieties of a gay Court, he was nearly always in monetary difficulties. His very funeral service was delayed until Walsingham had almost beggared himself by recompensing a portion of the clamouring creditors against the deceased knight's estate."<sup>5</sup> Sir Robert, in his will, alludes to his wife's

<sup>1</sup> *Urania*, p. 534. The passage ends: "the Knight was a brave Gentleman . . . his Lady a young woman, cheerful and pleasant, the daughter of a great Lord and sister to as fine a gentleman as was in that Kingdom."

<sup>2</sup> P.C.C. 60, *Lawe*; Nichols' *Progresses of James I.*, ii., 756; Enfield Parish Register of even date.

<sup>3</sup> S.P. Dom. James I., Vol. 76 (49). Just one month previously the same writer, John Chamberlain, had informed his correspondent, Alice Carleton, of the birth of Sir Robert Wroth's son (29). In writing to Sir Dudley Carleton he says that gangrene was the cause of Sir Robert's death, which took place on a Monday; he also records the christening of his son, and, later on, his death (*Court and Times of James I.*).

<sup>4</sup> S.P. Dom. James I., Vol. 66, *passim*.

<sup>5</sup> *Memoirs of the Sidney Family*, by Philip Sidney (1899).



is in April, 1619, when she addressed to Sir Dudley Carleton, our Ambassador at the Hague, a couple of cryptic letters which somehow passed into the multifarious collection now known as State Papers. Both letters are dated from Baynards Castle, the town-house of her first cousin, Lord Pembroke. They followed each other in quick succession, the earlier being apparently carried to its destination by the writer's brother, Lord Lisle. Both were sealed with the Sydney arms (a pheon) in a lozenge, and the seals on one yet retain a part of the floss silk with which it was tied up. The key to their interpretation is still to seek, but it may lie hidden in some one of the collections of which the contents are being slowly but surely made known under the auspices of the Historical Manuscripts Commission. Of a *bonâ fide* love-affair there is no question, since Carleton, who had married in 1607, was not left a widower until twenty years afterwards.<sup>1</sup> Each reader must therefore interpret them as he will.

*To Sir Dudley Carleton.*<sup>2</sup>

S<sup>r</sup>

The honor w<sup>ch</sup> I receavd from you att your beeing heere, and the respect I doe, and ever must beare you makes mee thus bold to write unto you and by thes lines to present my service unto you w<sup>ch</sup> I had rather have dun my self if my fortunes had bin soe good as to have permitted mee to visitt those parts, but I must nott expect any hapines I soe much desir never yett having receavd any cause to flatter my self w<sup>t</sup> hope crosses still preventing mee yett shall they nott have power to make mee other than constant in my respect to my noble freinds among w<sup>ch</sup> number I presume to hold you, and soe to ty my self ever to you as

Your most affectionate  
freind to serve you,

Baynards Castle the

Mary Wrothe.

19 of Aprill [1619].

[Endorsed] To the honorable Knight Sir Dudley Carleton Lord Embessedor for his Ma<sup>tie</sup> att the Haye.

Rec<sup>d</sup> by my L<sup>d</sup> Lisle y<sup>e</sup> 21, 1619.

*To the same.*<sup>3</sup>

S<sup>r</sup>

The honor was soe much mine in injoying your presence att Loughton as to acknowledg itt I took the boldness to present some rude lines unto you w<sup>ch</sup> I hope shall receive pardon for the truth they caried w<sup>t</sup> them, and the assurance of the constant respect I

<sup>1</sup> Dictionary of Nat. Biography, s.v.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, cviii. (73).

<sup>2</sup> S.P.D. James I. : cvlii. (56).

bear and will ever carry unto you; soe many ways manifested as they ingage mee into perpetuall debts unto you, w<sup>ch</sup> can bee never payd but in wishes till oportunity may serve to make mee able to express what my hart desire to serve you w<sup>t</sup>, this latter favor and delicate present is such as I knoe not whether I may bee glad of itt being soe rare and wellcome a juell to me as by the estimation my enjoyment is the greatest that may bee imagined for such a creature gaine, which shalbe cherisht w<sup>t</sup> all care, and love by mee as yours, and mine: w<sup>ch</sup> w<sup>t</sup> my help shall be the presenter to you of some of those enimis you speak of by (?) his owne quarell to them, or my desire that they should serve you as hers who will never bee other than faithfully

Your affectionate  
freind and servant,

Baynards Castle,

Mary Wrothe.

25 of Aprill.

Endorsement as above, to Sir Dudley Carleton.

Less than a month after these letters were written the Lady Mary formed one of the distinguished cortège which followed to her grave in Westminster Abbey Anne, the Queen of James the First.<sup>1</sup> Ten days later the gossips were giving her in marriage to the Earl of Oxford, the Lord High Chamberlain; but the voice was divided and those proved right who said that he would marry Mrs. Diana Cecil.<sup>2</sup> About a year afterwards the Earl of Salisbury had the king's warrant to furnish Lady Wroth with a deer, acceptable no doubt both for itself and as a mark of the royal goodwill.<sup>3</sup>

It is, however, as an authoress that Lady Mary Wroth looms largest on the world's stage, and on December 15th, 1621, we find her writing to the Marquis of Buckingham, the all-powerful favourite of James the First, to assure him that she never meant her book to offend and has stopped the sale of it.<sup>4</sup> The book alluded to is a folio volume of prose and verse, running to some six hundred closely-printed pages. It was published some time in 1621 under the title

<sup>1</sup> Nichols' Progresses of James I.: III. 541.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 547.

<sup>3</sup> S.P.D. James I.: cxxii. (July 21).

<sup>4</sup> Hist. MSS. Commission: II. 60 (1870-1). My efforts to obtain a copy of this letter have proved futile. Mr. J. B. Fortescue, the present owner of the Dropmore MSS., in reply to an enquiry, kindly informed me that, so far as he can ascertain, the letter in question was probably included among certain papers restored by his father to Lord Derwent, as representing the Van den Bempde family. Lord Derwent, to whom in turn I applied, and to whom I am much indebted for information, tells me that he has failed to find the letter, and fears that it was destroyed five and twenty years ago with others which should have been preserved. There is, however, a possibility that it may yet come to light.

of "The Countesse of Mountgomerie Urania, written by the right honorable the Lady Mary Wroath, daughter to the right Noble Robert Earle of Leicester, And Neece to the ever famous and renowned S<sup>r</sup> Phillips Sidney, Knight, and to y<sup>e</sup> most exelent Lady Mary Countess of Pembroke late deceased." The explanation of the difficulty in which the author found herself involved by the publication of her book might be long and perhaps vainly sought in it, if a clue were not furnished in a letter addressed to Sir Dudley Carleton by John Chamberlain, who enclosed "certain bitter verses of the Lord Dennies upon the Ladie Marie Wroth, for that in her book of Urania she doth palpable and grossly play upon him and his late daughter, the Lady Hayes, besides many others she makes bold with and they say takes great libertie or rather licence to traduce whom she please and thinks she daunces in a net: I have seen an answer of hers to these rimes, but I thought yt not worth while the writing out. . . . From London this 9<sup>th</sup> of March, 1622."<sup>1</sup>

The verses alluded to in the letter are no longer attached to it, but their character may be inferred from a letter of the Lady Mary's, which, together with some of Lord Denny's, is preserved among Lord Salisbury's collection of MSS. at Hatfield House. These letters are sufficiently curious to warrant my printing them, if not quite in full, at any rate at such length as to explain the cause of the quarrel and illustrate the polite correspondence of two centuries ago.

*Lady Mary Wroth to Lord Denny.*<sup>2</sup>

My Lord,

This day came to my hands some verses under the name of the Lord Denny's, but such vile rayling and scandalous thinges as I could not believe they proceeded from any but some drunken poett; and that the rather because they so feelinglie speak of that vice and sinne; but to think my Lord Denny, who hath professed so much Religion, Justice, and to be of worth, should fall into so strange a disposition as to slander and revile a woman friend, who hath ever honour'd him, I was loath to creditt it; especially knowing mine own innocence; which is as clear and pure as new borne; whatever such like slanderous conceipts haue layed upon mee. And much I doe wonder how now noblenes can faile so farre, as to lett such rudenes witness against it selfe; or rather take that away, and leave bare barennes in place of honour; otherwise before such proceedings had bin, truth and worth would haue had the matter questioned: but here is no such matter; violence and falsehood rules. When as

<sup>1</sup> S.P.D. James I.: cxxviii., 4r.

<sup>2</sup> Cecil Papers (Hatfield), 130/117.

had I been asked I would have trulie and constantlie sworn, that I no more meant harme to my Lord Denny or his house, then to my selfe. Nor did I ever intend one word of that booke to his *Lordships* person or disgrace: and this I will yet say to iustifie my selfe: but not in way of satisfaction; for too course waies are taken with me to offer or give that, but by way of iustification. Yet because I will not follow ill example I send your *Lordship* your owne lines (as they were called to me) reversed, and the first copy; as desiring your owne eyes should be first witnessse of your reward for your poetrie, if it were yours.

This is the course I tak yet although your *Lordship* certainlie knows I may take others and am not by this barred from anie. I should have taken it as an expression of your worth had you proceeded on iust grounds; now I shall pittie your rash follie and wish you amendment of understanding; and to take this as a morninges work.

Mary Wrothe.

The 25th of February.

[Endorsed] To the right ho<sup>ble</sup> | the Lord Denny | Baron of Waltham | in Essex.

Lady Mary was not kept waiting for a reply, and one sufficiently long to necessitate its abbreviation here:—

*Lord Denny to Lady Mary Wroth.*<sup>1</sup>

Madam,

Yesterday the xxvth of this february I received from you an Invective w<sup>th</sup> an invexion of rymes enclosed w<sup>th</sup> you suspect to be mine but it seems were a Romanza from the father in lawe of Sirelius to Pamphilia and so indorst which how they can concern either y<sup>r</sup> ladyship or me I cannot conceive . . . . .

And so the writer continues for three pages, speaking of himself as "the onely chosen foole for a May game before all the world, and especially before a wise King and prince w<sup>th</sup> all the nobility." He says that her ladyship taxes him with drunkenness which he utterly abhors, and especially complains of being made a scorn in the eyes of his dread and dear Sovereign. Many noble witnesses might be brought to aver that her own mouth had published him to be the man whom her "spitefull and scornfull passade" concerned. He expresses a wish that she might be like her Aunt<sup>2</sup> and "redeme the time by

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.* 130/118.

<sup>2</sup> "Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother." Mary, daughter of Sir Henry Sidney and sister of Sir Philip, married Lord Pembroke, and was the subject of the well-known lines ascribed to Ben Jonson.

writing as large a volume of heavenley lays as she has of lascivious tales and amorous toyes." After more of the same sort the writer subscribes himself:

"Your most well wishing friend Ed. Denny who for the great honor I bear somme of y<sup>r</sup> noble allies and my deerly honored friends doe forbear to write what I might."

To this letter a reply, dated February 29th, was sent, in which the lady declares emphatically, "I never thought on you in my writing; I never meant you; I never spak any such thing." Continuing, she asks Lord Denny to produce his witnesses, and haughtily concludes: "For any rank below y<sup>e</sup> king and his I know how to appear equall in truth; or neare in bloud to the best; therefore that is no bugbeare to me. Let me know my accusers; bring us together. Spare me not. My friends will not thank you for forbearing me, nor spare you when the times shall serve for what you have done . . .," subscribing herself "Your as-well-wishing friend, Mary Wrothe."<sup>1</sup>

Man though he was, Lord Denny seems to have had the last word, and, in an undated letter which clearly followed on that of February 29th, says that he will make no further reply to the lady's "distempers," but will be always ready to justify what he has said in his letter. She has, he expects, probably heard what has come to her King's ears from her own mouth touching him (Lord Denny) in this business, which, if she will not, he cannot make her hear. He himself hates to be an informer and will do her no wrong. Referring to her phrase as to her friends, he thus concludes: "Madame, I saye you are a noble Ladye; and for those noble allies of yours I will ever honour and serve, when you have made the worst of mee you can you can . . . but them," and subscribes himself, "your truly well-wishing friend if you could think so."<sup>2</sup>

The passage which gave such umbrage to Lord Denny seems to be one printed in Book IV. (pp. 438-9), and many of the circumstances there set forth certainly accommodate themselves easily to his history as it is known to us; for the more scandalous accretions to the Lady Mary remains responsible, although I have not anywhere discovered that she, in her book, taxes her correspondent, as he seems to allege, with drunkenness. It has also to be admitted that the "sweete prospect, which though not so far as others, yet was itt as pleasing, beeing able to judge of what they beheld, which was one way delicate meadowes, and that great River, beyond it fields, and hills, downe the River an ancient and famous Citie, wellbuilt,

<sup>1</sup> Cecil Papers (Hatfield), 130/120.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 130/121.

and of many miles compasse," accords not ill with the view probably obtainable from Lord Denny's home at Waltham Abbey.<sup>1</sup>

Of the libel each reader shall judge for himself. Bearing in mind that Lord Denny refers to the verses which so excited Lady Mary's anger as 'a Romanza from the father-in-law of Sirelius to Pamphilia,' Pamphilia being the heroine, if heroine there be, of the *Urania*, let us hear what the author, speaking of Sirelius, puts into the mouth of his companion, Procatus.

Sirelius, we are told, "fell in love with a young Lady, the only daughter of her father, and mother, a great marryage she was likely to be." The lady was very young, but the marriage was brought about, and some honours were given to the father in requital of his consent. The time of marriage came, and it "was solemnized by the King's command at the Court, where great tryumphs were, Masques and banquets, and such Court delights, never man with greater joy received a wife, nor any woman expressed more comfort in a match." But, we read, within a year "discontents grew and disliks on all sides spread themselves, the father tooke part with the Son-in-law, the Mother with the Daughter." The husband was "so distempered, as he used her ill; her father a phantastical thing, rash as mad men, and ignorant as women, would needs (out of folly, ill nature and waywardnesse, which he cald care of his honour, and his friends quiet) kill his daughter, and so cut off the blame, or spot, this her offence might lay upon his noble blood, as he termed it, which by any other men must with much curiositie have been sought for, and as rarely found, as Pearles in ordinary Oysters. . . . It was a strange sight to behold a father incensed for a husbands sake against an onely child, and that husband to be the shield of her defence, from whom, if at al, the wrong was to rise. . . . Matters thus pacified, God blessed them with a son and daughter, after which she died, leaving them as witnesses of her love and to speak for remembrance of her after her death." The bereaved husband is depicted as remaining long a widower, and then marrying again, with unhappy results; but his children were "bred with much care and affection with the Grandfather."<sup>2</sup>

There is no doubt that the Lady Honor, daughter of Lord Denny of Waltham, was 'a great marryage,' and that she was married by the King's command at Court, with much ceremony, on January 6th, 1607, to Lord Hay, who was afterwards created Earl of Carlisle. It is also known that she was buried at Waltham Abbey in 1615, leaving two children. Moreover the widower, described as a jovial

<sup>1</sup> *Urania*, III. 437.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, III. 438 *et seq*



liver, who spent over 400,000*l.* during his life-time, married as his second wife, Lucy Percy, a daughter of the Earl of Northumberland.<sup>1</sup> Beyond that the parallel does not seem to extend; but it is probable that a 'phantastical' account of something which actually occurred, or of a commonly bruited report, is given in the further details with which the ascertained facts were embroidered by the author. If the cap fitted, Lord Denny had certainly cause to complain of his neighbour and 'well-wishing friend'; that the letters are found among the Cecil Papers indicates that he took measures to do so effectively. What the upshot of it all was, nothing apparently remains to shew; but it is evident that the Lady Mary was fairly frightened, or she would not have stopped the sale of a book which must have cost her much labour to write and, unless her publisher took the risk, a considerable sum to print.

The *Urania* is said by Giffard to have had some vogue in its day; and, as the taste of one age differs from that of another, this vogue need not have been only due to the rank of the author and the scandal she evidently caused. Her book may have been a *roman à clef*, as Chamberlain intimates; but if so the key is lost, unless in some old library an annotated copy, long-forgotten, yet lingers. In one or more passages the Lady Mary's own marriage seems to be glanced at, although all the incidents do not entirely square with the known facts; and in one place there occurs what is obviously a description of her own Essex home. A paragraph or two shall be cited as favourable specimens of the style in which the long and wearisome phantasmagory unfolds itself.

"My name (said she) is *Belizia*, daughter to the Earle Marshall of this Countrey, neere allied I am to the greatest of this Land, but onely tyed to this Forrest Lord, for whose sake I have forsaken all, and live heere a lonely life with him; much my friends, and Kindred were displeas'd with all, his meanes being small, though his honour and worth great, which I looked on, and loved and so to them gave my heart."<sup>2</sup>

And so, in another passage, a newly married pair are described as going to the bridegroom's "Lodge which was in a Forrest, whereof he had the charge under the King, who loved the desarts, and those sports most of anything, the first, and cheife cause being his affection to a Lady living in a Forrest, and wholly affecting that life: every

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, cited by G.E.C. *s.v.* Carlisle.

<sup>2</sup> *Urania*, IV., 551. It is not improbable that, in view of her birth and beauty, her friends regarded with an unfavourable eye her marriage with a country gentleman, of moderate wealth and no great family connexions. The match-making of the time was undisguisedly mercenary. The same idea is later put into the mouth of the Forester, as will appear.

man seeking to please him, tooke the estates of Forresters on them, and so made a delightfull kind of wildnesse please them, and him, who thus enjoyed pleasures, and his ends, coveting to appear like their living, but the true roote of vertue, and good breeding shun'd savagenes, and only made roome for a little neglectivenes to cover them withal, so as the great men were but Courtly Forresters, and civil wild-men. The Lodge was a faire house built on a Hill, at the foote whereof ranne a River, over which was a bridge; from thence they passed through a delicate walke made by Art, and at the end of that (which still ascended) was a garden, through which they came unto the House, furnished with furniture fit for a Court, the servants all in greene, and in good number, shewing fellowshippe in their apparrell, but obedience in their fashions. There the knights were welcomed like themselves, and then the brave young Forrester . . . thus spoke.

I am the third sonne to an Earle, who is cheife Forrester unto the Prince of this Country; this Forrest is the daintiest, and the best beloved of any by his Majestie, being called by him selfe his garden . . . ; this Lady is the Daughter of a Lord, neere neighbour to this place, but being thought too worthy for me, as I must confesse they err'd not in that, though did commit high treason unto love, seeking to barre us from our wished joye, they gave her to *Diana* . . . Two yeares shee wanted of the age of freedome, in which time they hop'd she would forget, and by example love faire chastity; but she never ordain'd for such a dull concluding of her dayes, by the example which was shewed of stricktnes she loved freedome, for Chastity affection, and so wee met, and still increas'd our flames, till now that you were brought for our eternall good to see us joynd, and to knit our blisse."<sup>1</sup> The description given here of the Lodge accords exactly with the site of Loughton Hall, from which a long avenue of trees, known as 'The Lady's Walk,' or 'The Walke,' reached down to the river. Remains of it can still be traced, an ancient tree here and there indicating the line, which was continued to the garden, in front of the house, for the old Hall, unfortunately burnt down in December, 1836, faced the south.<sup>2</sup> Numerous servants may have helped to swell the debts incurred by the Forester, whose widow's 'concluding of her dayes,' was, as we

<sup>1</sup> *Urania*, II., 297-8.

<sup>2</sup> This avenue, Mr. Maitland tells me, was cut down at the beginning of the century, when good oak timber was particularly valuable. Tradition has it that the then owner of Loughton Hall, having heard that Buonaparte had fixed to come and stay there when he invaded England, was equally determined that he should not enjoy the sight of the noble trees which, in double rows, lined the avenue on each side. The legends attached to 'Boney' were countless, and the panic in Essex was great; but the real reason of the sale of the timber has been indicated above.

shall presently see, secured from dulness by the persistent liveliness of her creditors.

Lucy Aikin, writing in 1822, says that "in its day the *Urania* was accounted a highly elegant production; it appears however that the warmth of its language called forth censures; an extraordinary circumstance considering the estimable character and the sex of the writer."<sup>1</sup> It is not quite clear whether it was the censure, or the call for it, that Miss Aikin found 'extraordinary'; in any case it was justifiable. Indeed Sir Aston Cokain, in his *Remedy for Love*, without much regard for 'elegance,' says bluntly,

"The Lady *Wrothe's* *Urania* is repleat  
"With elegancies, but too full of heat."<sup>2</sup>

At the same time it is but fair to add that George Chapman addresses her as "the happy starre, discovered in our Sidneian Asterisme; comfort of learning, sphere of all the vertues, the Lady *Wrothe*"; and speaks of her opposing

". . . . . the times Apostasie,  
"To take the soules part, and her saving light.  
"While others blinde and burie both in sense."

Sir Robert Wroth, as we have seen, died deeply in debt, and his indebtedness occasioned the drafting of an Act of Parliament under which his estates were to be sold, in accordance with his will, to satisfy his creditors.<sup>3</sup> Loughton and Luxborough were, however, untouched, as forming a part, probably the larger part, of the widow's dower.<sup>4</sup> This seems to have proved quite inadequate to

<sup>1</sup> *Memoirs of the Court of James I.*, by Lucy Aikin (1882); II., 207 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Poems by Sir Aston Cokaine: Congleton, 1877 (privately reprinted). He was born in 1608 and died in 1683.

<sup>3</sup> *Jo. of the Ho. of Commons*, 12 Jac. I. Thursday, 19 May, 1614. "An Act for the speedy satisfaction of the Debts of Sir Robert Wroth, Knight, deceased, by Sale of some Part of his Lands, according to the Intent and true meaning of his last Will and Testament." (First Reading). Whether this Act went any further seems doubtful: and in all the Enrolled Indentures referring to sales of various estates, no mention of such an Act occurs. Such sales were, apparently, that of the manor of Downbarnes and Northall, in Middlesex; of Tewing (saving an estate for life made to Dame Mary Worth); of Honylane and Pentriches; and of Bircholt (*Close Rolls*: 14 & 15 Jac. I.). In the first instance the Attorney of the Court of Wards is alleged to have taken "special care to secure the best price for the benefit of James Wroth, the son and heir of Robert Wroth."

<sup>4</sup> An allusion to the settlement made on her marriage occurs in the *Inq. p. m.* taken on the death of Sir Robert Wroth, the elder, in 1606, where there is mention of a fine levied. The reference seems to be to one dated in Hilary Term, 2 Jac. I. (Jan. Feb., 1605), between Sir Henry Mountagu, Knt., and John Wrothe, esq., of the one part, and the two Sir Roberts of the other. The property conveyed to the trustees purports to be certain messuages, etc., and five hundred and eighty acres of land and marsh in Chigwell, Barking, Lambourne and Steplehall, in consideration of which they handed over 300*l.* In a document, probably belonging to the year 1618 (*Excheq. B. & A.* Jac. I.—Essex—251), we read that "John Wroth has taken the rents, etc., of the manor [of Loughton] saving the profits of the demesnes of the manor, taken by Dame Mary Wroth, widow, by virtue of leases for above sixty six years to come thereof, conveyed to the Earl of Pembroke and others."

her expenditure, and in 1623 we find her writing from Loughton to Mr. Secretary Conway, asking his furtherance in obtaining her a protection from her creditors, whom she fully intends to satisfy.

*Lady Mary Wroth to Secretary Conway.*<sup>1</sup>

S<sup>r</sup>

This business w<sup>ch</sup> I heere present unto you doth make mee ashamed for the poornes of my estate to aske itt or to trouble my honorable freinds w<sup>t</sup> itt, butt nessesity urgeth me and that must beg my pardon or plead my excuse. I dare nott of my self beeing soe unprofitable a creature, and a stranger almost to you, present this sute, butt beeseech your favor in itt beeing allowed by the lords out of compassion, and justnes of my cause, for my intent is fully and directly to satisfy all men, the particular reasons mouing mee to sue for this protection w<sup>ch</sup> heere from M<sup>r</sup> Secretary Calvert is brought to your honor, my lord of Annand<sup>2</sup> will make you acquainted w<sup>t</sup> all. I beeseech you S<sup>r</sup> to give mee yo<sup>r</sup> furdurance in itt, that itt may bee dun w<sup>t</sup> your favor and as much speed as may conveniently bee w<sup>ch</sup> shall ty me always to remaine yo<sup>r</sup> humble servant,

Mary Wrothe.

Five days later a royal warrant of protection was issued for herself and her sureties, for a year, on account of her birth and quality, and her good intentions.<sup>3</sup> But other Court interests were involved and, on the day following, Mr. Secretary writes to Lady Mary on behalf of one, Ellis Rothwell, a creditor who chanced to be also a Page of the Bedchamber.<sup>4</sup> The lady either could not or would not pay the page, and nearly three months afterwards Mr. Conway, snatching we may assume at a last straw, wrote to the lady's father, Robert, Earl of Leicester, explaining the situation and asking him to bring fatherly influence to bear upon his daughter.<sup>5</sup> Rothwell, it appears, being unable to get certain arrears of rent due to him, had carried his complaint to the king, who had promised him redress, the protection granted to the debtor being in the faith of her endeavouring to satisfy her creditors, and especially her debt to His Majesty's servant. Lord Leicester lost no time in expressing his regret at the king's displeasure, and declared himself convinced that his daughter would not have asked for protection except in the hope of paying all

<sup>1</sup> S.P.D. James I., cxxxix. (53).

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Murray, of Lochmaben, was created some time before Feb. 20, 1623/4, Viscount of Annand; and on Mar. 13, 1624/5, Earl of Annandale. G.E.C.

<sup>3</sup> S.P.D. James I., cxxxix. (84).

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* (86). Ellis Rothwell appears as a recipient of 200*l.* out of the King's Bounty in 1613 (Nichols' *Progresses*, II. 760).

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* cxlvi. (5).

her debts in time, though he knew little of her affairs, she herself having managed them since her widowhood.<sup>1</sup> That he had to some extent interested himself in the matter is, however, shewn by his explanation that Mr. Rothwell would be paid as soon as another, but that his demand for security for future rent was unreasonable, inasmuch as, though Lady Wroth had been willing to give up the house since the proclamation for residence in the country, Mr. Rothwell still declined to release her.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Rothwell's disinclination to break the lease is quite accounted for by the Earl's ingenuous admission of the reason why it was no longer valued by his daughter. For the proclamation which made her willing to give up the house would also deter many possible tenants from taking it. This proclamation was issued in March, 1623, and was the last but one of several which seem to have been systematically evaded or disobeyed. As they illustrate in an interesting way the personal and paternal form of government favoured by the Stewarts, a short account of them may prove not unwelcome.<sup>3</sup>

The earliest Proclamation of the kind in the collection at the Public Record Office is dated October 24, 1614, and sets out that many leading persons are minded to spend the winter, or at least Christmas, in London and other cities and towns, "whereby the government of the countreys will be weakened, hospitalitie and the relief of the poor (especially at such a time) decayed, and the said cities and places surcharged and pestered," the cost of living in them being thereby enhanced. Order is consequently given to all Lieutenants and Noblemen, Deputy Lieutenants and Justices of the Peace, with sundry others, to depart at the end of Term and go to attend their service in the country and keep house and hospitality there, upon pain of the King's high displeasure, and such punishment as is due for the contempt of his royal commandment. In the December of the following year (1615) a similar proclamation was

<sup>1</sup> Certain enrolled Indentures give an insight into how a much-harassed widow managed, or mismanaged, her own affairs. In 1618, for instance, she made over thirty-six acres in Barking, let at 54*l.* 15*s.*, in which, under her marriage settlement, she had a life-interest, to William Pennefather, citizen of London, in consideration of 300*l.* paid down, she to bear the cost of repairing certain banks of the Thames called Dangerhead and the Sluice. The transaction was a speculative one, but, as Lady Mary lived for a quarter of a century after it was concluded, the purchaser had the best of it. At any rate a purchaser was, in 1638, found willing to pay 600*l.* for the unexpired life-interest, plus sixteen years to follow. Another citizen, in 1621, for 198*l.* acquired from the same lessor Canvy Marsh in Steple parish, let for term of her life to a lessee paying 36*l.* a year. And incidentally reference to yet another demise occurs. (*Close Rolls*: 16 Jac. xi.; 19 Jac. xiv.; 14 Car. I., iii.—Thorowgood.)

<sup>2</sup> S.P.D. James I., cxlvi. (24).

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, clxxxvii.—A volume of Proclamations: those for Residence in the Country are numbered 33, 49, 50, 108, 113, 125.

issued and, in this, reproachful mention is made of the nobility, who are "falling to a more private and delicate course of life, after the manner in foreine Countreys, of living in Citties and Townes," and forsaking the ancient ways "whereby there was wont to be more mutuall comfort betweene the nobles and gentlemen and the inferiour sort of commons . . . than in any other kingdome in Europe." As a means of obliging compliance with his commands the King charges the Chancellor to put out of the Commission of the Peace, and other offices, all such as do not remain nine months in the shires where they are in commission. Similar proclamations made in 1617 and 1622 bring us to that of March 26, 1623, in which the Lady Mary Wroth was interested, and from which we learn that, while some had 'dutifully submitted' to the Sovereigns 'gracious commandment' "so divers have not only neglected the same, but retiring for a time unto some places in or neere the said cities, where they secretly sojourn or otherwise obscure and cover themselves onely to be out of the way of enquire, do endeavour to elude and frustrate Our sincere and honourable intendments, whereat We aimed in both our said Proclamations [Nov. 20 and Dec. 22, 1622] which is the reviving and settling of hospitality and good government in this our Kingdom. And therefore as wee may not let passe the obedience of the one, without our Gracious approbation and acceptance; so we cannot but give notice to the other that wee are sensible of their contempt, and that those subtilties and evasions can neither hide them from the eye of our providence nor excuse them from the hand of our Justice, which without our greater clemencies, expecting their speedie reformation and conformity, would soon seize and lay hold on them for their obstinacie and disobedience; And therefore We being fully resolved for the generall good of Our people to perfect that worke which we have (upon such just grounds and important reasons) begun, Have thought fit to admonish all such as have not yet conformed to our said Proclamations, that they immediately yield obedience thereto . . .". Small wonder then that an embarrassed Lady Mary should be willing to resign her lease; and less wonder still that a thrifty Page should refuse to let her do so, and so further imperil his chance of getting any rent. The ruck of men, however, remained impenitent, and in 1624 received "an absolute and peremptorie command" to betake themselves to the country, under threat of proceedings to be taken in the Star Chamber, and severe punishment at the hands of the Privy Council and the Attorney General. Six months later the King died. Most Englishmen will sympathise with the objects he had in view, vain though his efforts were to attain them.

Before her protection for a year had run out the harassed lady made another application to Mr. Secretary, begging that it might be renewed and bringing evidence to shew what efforts she had made to deserve it.

*Lady Mary Wroth to Secretary Conway.*<sup>1</sup>

Sir,

I was soe much bound unto you for your favor, furderance, and finishing my busines this last yeere, as when I prove to you ungratefull I will leave living; butt such is the continuance of my ill fortune, as I must beefore I can deserve the first beg againe, and trouble you, for to you I only address myself as most confident of your favor, since you so freely promised itt, I come therfor now most earnestly to desire you to procure me the Kings hand once againe, the Lords I have petitioned, and giuen theyr *Lordships* an note of such debts as I have this yere payd under my hand, w<sup>ch</sup> amounts to almost the haulf I did ove (owe), and purposing God willing to doe the like this yeere w<sup>t</sup> the rest I humbly beeseech his Mat<sup>ies</sup> protection the safier to accomplish itt, w<sup>ch</sup> I will doe w<sup>t</sup> my best ability and truly satisfy every man; If you please S<sup>r</sup> to ad this favor to yo<sup>r</sup> former, you shall ty mee for ever (though the gaine of soe unfortunate a creature is noe thing) to your service, yett I have a just and true hart w<sup>ch</sup> shall ever serve you and bind me to bee,

Your unfained freind to commaund,

Mary Wrothe.

Loughton, the 30th of January.

To M <sup>r</sup> Hull	...	...	340 <sup>li</sup>
To M <sup>r</sup> Ellis Rothwell	...	...	130
To Georg Hadrington	...	...	135
To Richard Gibbons	...	...	105
To Half Hell	...	...	66
To M <sup>rs</sup> Berden	...	...	52 : 10
To Richard Browne	...	...	45
To John Catherick	...	...	58

S<sup>r</sup>

Thes are all discharged, having receavd either reddy monny, or taken land for such time as this wilbee payd, by w<sup>ch</sup> means I have lessen'd my estate much, and yett will goe on in this course to satisfy the rest in the like manner, soe that I may have time by one yeers protection more in w<sup>ch</sup> time I hope to free my self of all debts yett owing.

[Endorsed] To the honorable my most honored friend Sir Edward Conway, knight, Principal Secretary to his Majestie.

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.* clviii. (65).

It is probable that the debtor was duly protected against her creditors, as she was able in the following September to entertain at Loughton her father, the Earl of Leicester.<sup>1</sup> During, or perhaps after, his visit, her peace of mind may have been somewhat ruffled by the receipt of a letter from her good friend, Mr. Secretary Conway, recommending to her a Mr. Harding, who had carefully brought up a young son of his, and who solicits payment of a debt due to him from her ladyship: how or why incurred, we are not told.<sup>2</sup> Possibly she paid it, for on February 12th in the following year she succeeded in securing a fresh protection for herself and her sureties.<sup>3</sup> And so the ball rolled on, a fresh protection for one year being issued on April 12, 1627, doubtless by way of renewal of one obtained in 1626; just as on March 28, 1628, another was granted in that form.<sup>4</sup> And there the curtain falls, not to be raised again until 1835, when, in a fresh protection, enrolled on Feb. 14, reference is made to previous ones 'divers times renewed' and to the debtor's continuing desire to give her creditors 'content according to her desire' and her hope 'in short time to performe the same.'<sup>5</sup> It was, it appears, in the same year that some kind friend at Court made an effort to do even more to relieve the poor lady's necessities, by proposing for her benefit an imposition on salt.<sup>6</sup> The proposal was to grant by patent a penny on every bowl [?] boll] of salt between the Tees and the Tweed, and to fix the maximum price of that commodity at 3s. the boll; but the index to the Patent Rolls contains no entry to shew that the monopoly was ever granted. From that time forward, however, there is no mention of the lady's pecuniary troubles, and she next appears, a few years afterwards, as acting the part of a thoughtful mother towards a godson or adopted child, with whose upbringing Mr. Harding's claims, already mentioned, may have had

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.* clxxii. (23).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* (59), and Minute in Conway's Letter Book. The letter in question, a well-nigh indecipherable draft, runs as follows:—

Right Honourable,

27 Sept. 1624.

It is a kind of misfortune to me to [be] put to sue you for favour to others perhaps with your trouble or offers . . . . long to desire your noble favour by all the duties and services that come from a heart that honours you.

This bearer, Mr. Harding, who hath bound me by the best . . . . good and careful teaching and guiding of a young son of mine, for him this . . . . of my good will to him, by becoming a suitor to your Ladyship that you would be pleased to make him satisfaction of a debt he claims from your Ladyship. What contentment equity or favour you will be pleased [to] do to him, I will reckon of as an obligation laid upon me, and in all your commandments by a ready operation (?) express . . . . you great . . . . and noble courtesy to me.

Your Ladyship's faithful and humble servant.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* clxxxiii. (Docquet).

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Charles I., lx. (Docquet); xcvi. (*Coll. Sign. Man. Car. I.*: vij, 8).

<sup>5</sup> *Patent Roll*—10 Car. I.: Part 36, m. 5.

<sup>6</sup> S.P.D. Charles I., cccviii. (5).



something to do. I am indebted to Lady Verney for most kindly furnishing me with the following interesting passage from Sir John Leeke's letter, which, in the Hist. MSS. Commission Report, is summarised in a couple of lines.<sup>1</sup>

"For my ever Hon<sup>ted</sup> brother,  
Sir Edmund Verney, K<sup>t</sup>, Marshall,  
at his house in Coven garden, London, thes.

The Post thys

4 of 10<sup>ber</sup> 1640" . . . . [P.S. after the signature *John Leeke*].

"I receved latly a most curtuous and kinde letter from my owld mistres The Lady Mary Wrothe, in requitall whereof I have returned my thankfullnes in this letter wch I praye send to hir or rather send this my messenger to hir for she will wright back againe. She wrights me word that by my Lord of Pembroke's good mediation the Kinge hath given hir sonn a brave livinge in Ireland. She w<sup>d</sup> send hir younge mann over to me to advise him the best I cann wch I will doe. The shyp is under sayle—in hast, vale. God speed the messenger for he hath bine 3 dayes att sea and turned to yoghall againe."

So far I have been able to learn nothing more about 'hir younge mann,' and there, for the present at any rate, the matter must be left. He may have been a godson, or an adopted child. Some three years afterwards, the Lady Mary, still a widow, was living at Woodford, and apparently about to profit to some extent by a transfer of Luxborough for the term of her life. The purchase money for it and some lands in Enfield, in which she or John Wroth, or both of them, were interested, is set down at 10,000l.<sup>2</sup> With that, I regret to say, her story ends, no testamentary disposition made by her having hitherto come to light; and the only reference to her death occurs incidentally in the course of a Chancery Deposition of 1668, in which that event is said to have taken place in 1651, or, more probably, in 1653.<sup>3</sup>

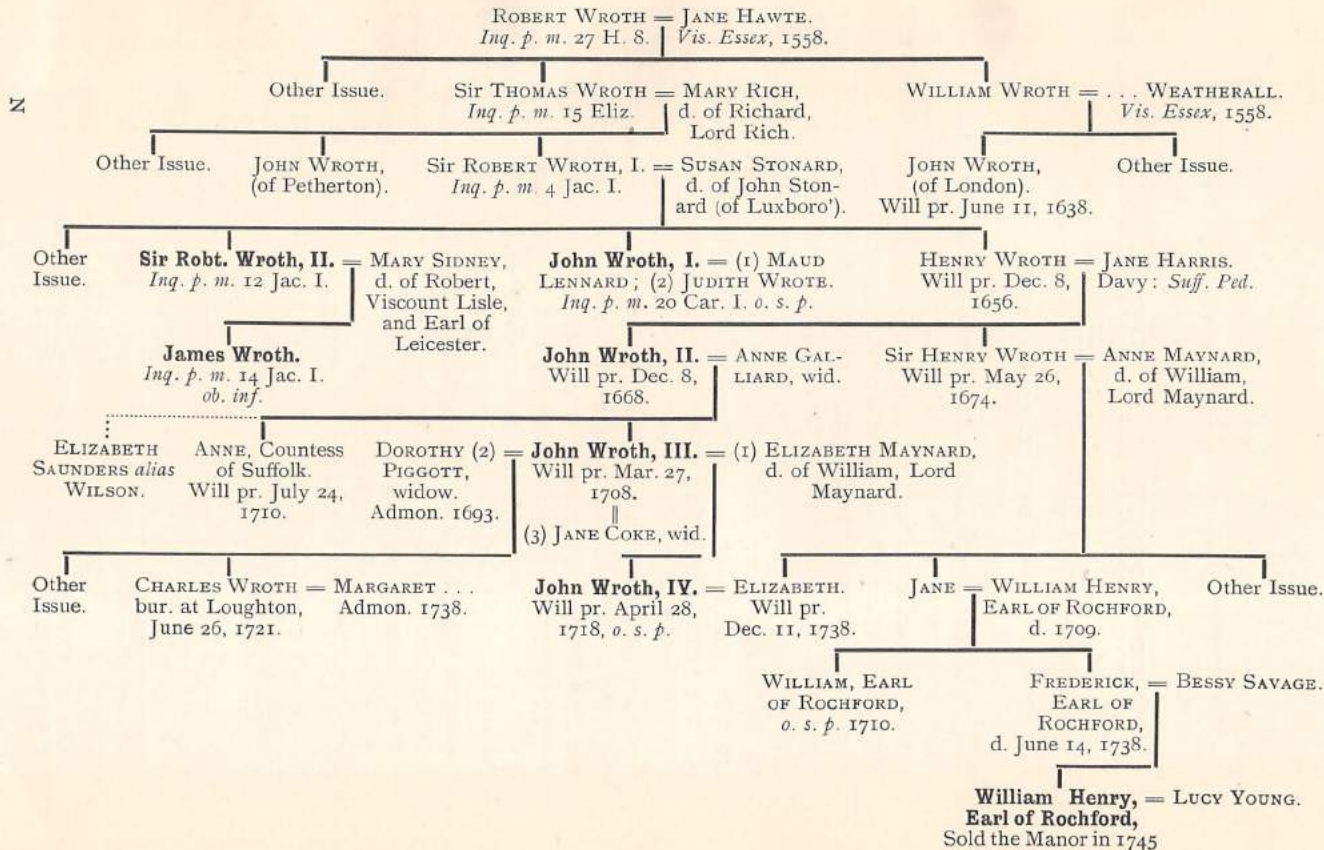
*To be continued.*

<sup>1</sup> Hist. MSS. Commission: 7th Report, 435a; and *Verney MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> *Close Roll, Ind. inv.*, 19 Car. I., vii.

<sup>3</sup> Chanc. Proc. before 1714: 110, *Whittington*.

PEDIGREE OF THE WROTH FAMILY, ILLUSTRATING THE DESCENT OF THE MANOR OF LOUGHTON.



WROTH OF LOUGHTON HALL.

## THE ORDER OF THE HOSPITAL IN ESSEX.

BY J. H. ROUND, M.A.

THE round church of Little Maplestead is no doubt familiar to all Essex archæologists, but few of them, perhaps, are aware of the widespread influence in the county of that famous Order of the Hospital, of which the Essex Preceptory was at Little Maplestead, where the manor of the Hospital, as it then was termed, is now represented by Maplestead Hall. Morant, by a somewhat odd confusion, asserted that "this house became a preceptory or nursery of the Knights Templars" and that "thus the Knights Templars and Hospitallers continued possessed of Little Maplestead"<sup>1</sup> till 1540. Of the church he wrote that "the present church is built after the model of the Temple Church in London and of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem, and therefore most probably was built by the Knights Templars after the estate came into their possession"; and he added, with somewhat professional indignation, that "the Knights Templars invaded all the tithes wherever they had to do."<sup>2</sup> Now the first point that has to be grasped is that the Knights of the Temple had at no time anything to do with Maplestead; it was a preceptory, from the first, of the Order of the Hospital alone.<sup>3</sup>

Of the famous Order of St. John of Jerusalem there can be little need to speak. The enthusiasm for "the holy house of the Hospital" and for its inmates, "the blessed poor," spread rapidly over Europe, and is one of the few mediæval movements that arouses unmixed admiration. Indeed, effectual witness to its merits is borne by the modern revival of the Order of St. John in England under the direct auspices of the Sovereign, with its headquarters, as in the Middle Ages, at the house of St. John's, Clerkenwell. That house has always been deemed the oldest existing in England, and indeed in

---

<sup>1</sup> *History of Essex*, II. 283.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 284.

<sup>3</sup> The confusion doubtless arose from the fact that on the dissolution of the Templars (1311) their possessions were bestowed on the Order of the Hospital in this county as in others.

Europe, its foundation having been assigned to about the year 1100. This date was accepted by every authority in succession including the most recent, M. Delaville le Roulx, whose sumptuous *Cartulaire Général* of the Order made its first appearance a few years ago. But, in a paper which I had the honour of reading before the Society of Antiquaries, I traced this erroneous date to its source and showed that the Clerkenwell house was only founded under Stephen nearly half a century after the received date. Moreover, I was able to identify its founder, of whom nothing had been known, and to show that Jordan Briset, as he is always styled, was really an Essex man, son of Ralf Fitz Brian who founded Stangate Priory and who held in Essex, of the bishop of London, Wanstead, Hubbridge Hall in Witham and Middlemead in Baddow, and of the Honour of Peverel, Stangate in Steeple, Prested Hall in Feering, and Rettendon. Further, Muriel, Jordan's wife, who took part in the foundation, was a member of the house of Munteni, from which Munteneising, now Mountnessing, took its name; and after Jordan's death she married Maurice Fitz Robert, lord of Great Totham.<sup>1</sup>

Essex appears to have stood pre-eminent for its benefactions to the Order. In the great cartulary compiled in the fifteenth century the Essex gifts are grouped under some twelve localities,<sup>2</sup> and Maplestead group alone occupies nearly two hundred pages. Morant, who had only access to a manuscript preserved at Maplestead Hall, wrote that this Preceptory "had within the space of two centuries or more, above seven hundred benefactors, of both sexes and of all degrees and conditions, not only in this but other counties" (II. 283). In this cartulary we find the names of these benefactors and their lands, so that, for the searcher, it is quite a treasure-house of Essex genealogy and topography. But to me, the most interesting feature of this "Maplestead" group is that I find it to contain a considerable number of charters granted before the Preceptory was founded and taking us back at least as far as 1148.<sup>3</sup> The house at Maplestead, the only preceptory of the Order of the Hospital in Essex, was founded in 1186 by a trusted officer of Henry II., William Fitz

<sup>1</sup> See for all this my paper in *Archæologia*, Vol. LVI. (1899); and for Maurice (Fitz Robert) de Totham see my paper on "The Honour of Ongar" in these *Transactions* (N.S.) VII., 148-9. It was in consequence of Muriel's marriage to Maurice that Great Totham church came to be given to St. Mary's nunnery, her other foundation at Clerkenwell.

<sup>2</sup> Among them are Gestingthorpe, 'Stamforde,' Boblows (in Bumpstead), Sutton, Stebbing, Ingatestone, Grays, West Thurrock, Chawreth, and Rainham. The Cartulary (Cotton MS., Nero E. vi.) is now in the British Museum. It includes the charters relating to Crossing Temple and other Essex possessions of the Templars which passed, on their downfall, to the Hospitallers.

<sup>3</sup> This is the date of a document relating to Lambourne.

Audelin by name.<sup>1</sup> He was a Yorkshireman, but his wife Juliana, daughter and heiress of Robert Doisnel, had brought him this estate in Essex. It will be seen therefore, from the above date, that the brethren of the Hospital, as they styled themselves, had been receiving gifts of lands in Essex long before the house was founded.<sup>2</sup>

But the gift to which, on this occasion, I desire to draw your attention is one that is almost within a stone's throw of where we are now assembled. At a chapter held at Melchbourne,<sup>3</sup> Michaelmas 1277, the Prior leased to a Colchester man, Richard of Bergholt, "all that tenement that Walter Haning formerly held of them in the parish of St. Nicholas, namely that tenement which lies between the messuage of Catherine the Shipman, on one side, to the east, and the street called Wir(e)street on the other, to the west, in length; and in width, from the house of John Gerold on the south to the king's highway on the north." In other words, it was the house that is now Parr's Bank, standing at the corner formed by Wire Street and High Street. But here is the document itself:—

"Omnibus Christi fidelibus ad quos presens scriptum pervenerit Jusep de Chauncy fratrum hospitalis Sancte Johannis Jerusalem humilis prior in Anglia salutem in domino. Noverit Universitas vestra nos unanimi assensu fratrum nostrorum totius Capituli nostri dedisse concessisse (et) presenti carta confirmasse Ricardo Bercholte totum tenementum illud quod Walterus Honing (*sic*) quondam de nobis tenuit in parochia Sancti Nicholai Colcestr[ie] scilicet illud tenementum quod jacet inter mesuagium Caterine le Schipmannes ex una parte versus orientem et vicum qui vocatur Wirstrate ex altera versus occidentem in longitudine et latitudine inter domum Johannis Gerold' versus Austrum et regalem viam versus Aquilonem habendum et tenendum . . . de nobis et successoribus nostris predicto Ricardo et heredibus suis . . . Reddendo inde annuatim domui nostre de Mapel-trested duodecim denarios argenti ad duos terminos . . . et quocienscunque fratres hospitalis predicti vel eorum clerici ad domum predicti Ricardi et heredum suorum in eadem villa de Colcestr[ia] declinar[e] seu pernoctar[e] contigerint predicti vero Ricardus et heredes sui predictis fratribus et eorum clericis semper invenient stramen competens ad lectos, Buscam sufficient[er], albas sufficient[er], candelas coram eisdem ardentis, sal ad eorum mensam, et aquam, et in obitu dicti Ricardi et heredum suorum de herede in heredem duas marcas argenti pro omnibus serviciis exactionibus et secularibus demandis . . . Hiis testibus: fratre Willelmo de Haunleg'; fratre Willelmo de Chelesham tunc preceptore de Mapel-trested; fratre Roberto de Askeby; fratre Roberto de Gloucestr[e]; fratre Stephano de Wilecestre et aliis. Datum apud Melcheburne in celebratione capituli nostri ad festum Sancti Michaelis Anno domini millesimo cc' lxx<sup>o</sup> septimo.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See for him my *Feudal England*, pp. 516-8.

<sup>2</sup> Among these was the Chawreth estate given in 1151 by Alvred de Bendaville and his wife.

<sup>3</sup> An old preceptory of the Order in Bedfordshire.

<sup>4</sup> Cott. MS., Nero L. vi., fo. 327.

In addition to giving us a mention of Wirestreet as early as 1277, this document supplies the name, at that date, of the Preceptor of Maplestead. His predecessor seems to have been Thomas Lidegard, who granted the house to Constance as Walter Haning's widow, and to whom she in turn released it, Nicholas the Leech (*medicus*) and Walter (*sic*) the Goldsmith being bailiffs of Colchester in both deeds<sup>1</sup> (fo. 326). She subsequently quitclaimed her right of dower in the house to Richard de Bergholt, Stephen Fitz Ralf and Henry Godyar being bailiffs (fo. 325b). Richard de Bergholt was himself bailiff in 5 Ed. I. (1277) according to Harrod.<sup>2</sup> There are other deeds relating to this house, in one of which Richard of Bergholt is styled "mercator burgensis Colcestrie," while in another (fo. 327) he speaks of the house next him to the east as that of Richard Pruet, who was one of the bailiffs of Colchester in 1278 (6 Ed. I.). The Hanings were an old family in the borough, for a Walter Haning is found witnessing not later than the reign of Stephen, as one of the two *prepositi* (i.e. reeves or bailiffs) of Colchester, a charter of Hamo de St. Clare,<sup>3</sup> and several of them were benefactors to St. John's Abbey,<sup>4</sup> especially Walter Haning, son of Walter Haning, who gave it his lands at Middlewick.

The most interesting portion of our document for the reader is no doubt the curious provision for the entertainment of the brethren of the Hospital or their clerks when they should desire to rest or to pass the night at this house. The tenant was bound to provide them with straw suitable for their bedding, with sufficient firewood and "albas"<sup>5</sup> and with candles to burn before them, to supply salt for their table, and water. It was not an exhilarating diet! I think that I can throw some light on this curious provision. In my *Calendar of Documents preserved in France* (p. 258) I have given an abstract of a charter by which the abbot and convent of Mont St. Michel lease some land at Portsmouth on precisely similar terms, the tenant being bound to receive honourably monks of St. Michel and their servants, and to find them in firing, candle, white robe (*albam*), straw, and

<sup>1</sup> Harrod gives 'Nicholas Medicus' and 'William (*sic*) aurifaber' as bailiffs in 56 Hen. III. (1272) on authority of Red Paper Book, p. liij.

<sup>2</sup> On authority of Index to Red Paper Book.

<sup>3</sup> *Cartulary of St. John's, Colchester*, p. 156.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* 281, 323, 444. (There is unfortunately no index to the names of persons.)

<sup>5</sup> This word has baffled me. Mr. St. John Hope, who is an unsurpassed authority on the religious orders, has ingeniously suggested to me that we should read 'albas' with 'candelas' as meaning wax (not tallow) candles. This reading of the text is awkward, and the phrase appears to be unknown. But I can suggest nothing better.

salt, "as is the custom," the charter adds, "in feudal inns."<sup>1</sup> It is possible that the words of the Colchester charter, "candles to burn before them" ("candelas coram eisdem ardentes"), may refer to the Statutes of the Order of the Hospital, in which we read of the brethren on tour:—

"Et in quacumque domo Hospitali fuerint ante se lumen ardere faciant."

We may safely assert, at least, on the strength of this document, that the brethren of the famous Order were sometimes seen in Colchester, riding, as their Statutes enjoined, in company and arrayed as became men who had taken the vow of poverty, but whose eight-pointed white cross gleaming on their black cloaks became the badge of a sovereign Order, the proudest if not the wealthiest of all, and, as the star of St. John of Jerusalem, has been worn of recent years by our own Royal house.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Recipiendo in hospitium suum apud Portesmues honorifice nos et monachos et famulos nostros inveniendos et eis ignem, candelam, albam, paleam, et sal ad sufficientiam, ut moris est in hospitibus feodalibus" (D'Ansy's Transcripts, II. 255). The last two words, perhaps, mean "inns held in fee."

## HELION OF HELION'S BUMPSTEAD.

BY J. H. ROUND, M.A.

THE map of Essex still preserves in the name of Helions Bumpstead the memory of a race of barons who, as Essex knights and squires, continued to hold their lands for nearly four centuries from their settlement in England at the Conquest. Morant could not connect the Domesday holder of Bumpstead, who is styled 'Tihel the Breton,' with the later owners of the manor, whose pedigree he began thus:—

"Robert de Helion a Baron in King Henry the Second's reign, though not taken notice of as such by Sir William Dugdale, had ten knight's fees of the old feoffment and some parts of fees of the new."

The modern student is enabled to extend his range of observation and to detect the same 'Tihel' in that 'Tehellus de Herion' who held Haverhill and Illeigh (now Eleigh) in Suffolk, and also with that 'Tihelus' who had two manors in Norfolk. Nay, even in Essex itself, he is styled 'Tihel de Herion' when entered as holding of the bishop of Bayeux some land in Hinckford Hundred.<sup>1</sup> There, is consequently, no doubt as to the surname of 'Tihel,' for the Domesday 'Herion,' of course, is only a variant of Helion.

Moreover, in Devonshire the wife or widow of a Hervey 'de Helion,' whose christian name proclaims his Breton extraction, is found as a tenant-in-chief; and from them descended, in that county, a separate family of the name. It is clear, therefore, that 'Helion' was already a form in use.

Now as Tihel was a Breton we should expect to find his Helion somewhere in Brittany; and there I find it in the present Helléan, a *canton* of Josselin near Ploermel.<sup>2</sup> The double 'll' seems to be modern, for on one of the church bells which is dated 1599 the name appears as 'Helien,' which is virtually the Essex form. Helions Bumpstead is, I believe, locally pronounced "Helens" Bumpstead.

The barony, as Morant rightly terms it, which the founder of the house of Helion obtained in the eastern counties was held of the Crown by the service, as it was styled, of ten knights, in accordance with the system explained in my work *Feudal England* by which the knight service exacted from tenants-in-chief was reckoned on the *constabularia* of ten knights as a unit. In Essex his lands lay chiefly in the district on the Suffolk border adjoining his manor of Haverhill. His two manors at Sturmer and those in both the Bumpsteads he

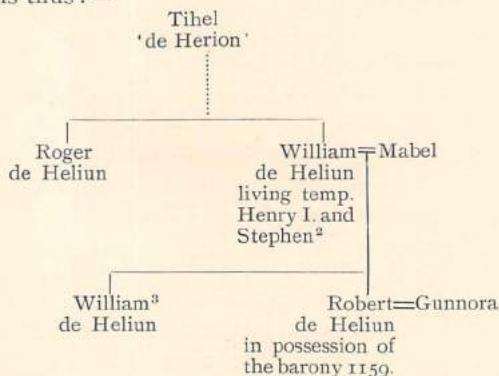
<sup>1</sup> Domesday II., 24.

<sup>2</sup> In the Department of the Morbihan.



kept in his own hands, as he also did with (Wolton's in) Ashdon and with Tilbury by Clare, but at Radwinter and Yardley in Thaxted he had enfeoffed under-tenants. We can trace with extraordinary precision what became of his manors, owing to returns of those who held by knight service on the fief.<sup>1</sup> But the student should be warned that, as I have shown in my *Studies on the Red Book of the Exchequer*, the official edition of that volume, published a few years ago, committed the amazing blunder of appending to the Helion return of 1166, as a portion of that document, a return of considerably later date belonging to the same fief.

My immediate object, however, in bringing the Helions before you is to mention that I have been fortunate enough to note two sets of charters granted by them in the twelfth century, which carry the pedigree clearly back to the days of Henry I. Expressed in tabular form, it runs thus:—



The first of these sets of charters contains the grants made to the priory of Castle Acre, Norfolk, by the Helions in Haverhill and the neighbourhood<sup>4</sup>; the other consists of a number of charters in which the Helions grant lands to the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. Of these last, the earliest is that of William de Heliun, who, with Mabel his wife, bestows a house (*mansura*) and five acres in Haverhill.<sup>5</sup> Among those of Robert de Helion is one in which he grants to Geoffrey de Radwinter 50 acres of arable land and three of meadow "extra auxilia que oportent a cuntree et a hundred."<sup>6</sup> These

<sup>1</sup> See *Red Book of the Exchequer*, pp. 357-8, 593-4, 601, 729, and *Testa de Nevill*, pp. 276, 416.

<sup>2</sup> The Empress Maud, in her charter to Aubrey, earl of Oxford, (1142) granted him "servicium Willelmi de Helion, videlicet decem militum" (*Geoffrey de Mandeville*, p. 181).

<sup>3</sup> Robert de Heliun gave to the brethren of the Hospital the land of Godwine the smith at Sturmer as *William his brother* had given it (Nero. E. vi., fo. 333).

<sup>4</sup> Harleian MS. 210, fos. 108b-110.

<sup>5</sup> Cott. MS. Nero E. vi., fo. 329b. It cannot be later than Stephen's reign (see pedigree).

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.* fo. 345. It is interesting to note that among the witnesses is Tihel the fisherman (*Tihel piscatore*), for Tihel we saw was the name of the founder of the Essex Helions.

references to what may be termed local rates are valuable and rare. But it is the charter that follows which deserves special attention. It is a grant by Robert de Helion to Roger son of Warin of 15 acres of land at Bumpstead with appurtenances of wood and meadow (3 acres of the latter) "in feodo et hereditate," and it contains the clause "ad defendendum infra quatuor bancos hundredi pro tanto cum alius liber homo illius ville defendit xv acras, et istam terram dedi predicto Rogero pro homagio suo et servicio."<sup>1</sup> What, it may be asked, could possibly be the meaning of "defending this land within the four benches of the Hundred?"

My learned friends Professor Maitland and Professor Sir Frederick Pollock, writing of the court of the county in the thirteenth century, observe, in their justly renowned *History of English Law*<sup>2</sup> that "apparently in olden times the doomsmen of the court sat upon four benches arranged in a square; what was done in court was done 'within the four benches.'" These words are immediately preceded by the statement that "some moots may still have assembled in the open air," for, although the courts of Lincolnshire and Cornwall were already held in buildings, we "still hear of 'a green place' in Colchester in which the court of Essex was holden." Now to us at Colchester this is a statement of quite exceptional interest, and I consequently turned to the authority cited by the two Professors to see what I could make of it. I regret, for the sake of Colchester, to inform you that the passage on the Hundred Roll proved to relate not to Colchester, but to Chelmsford. The jurors, who were drawn from Writtle, then a royal manor, presented, in 2 Edward I., (1273-4) that certain purprestures had been made at Chelmsford "in viridi placea in qua comitatus Essex teneri solet."<sup>3</sup> The moral, of course, of this little story is contained in that invaluable maxim, 'Always verify your references.'

To return, however, to 'the four benches.' I was, I believe, the first to call attention to this phrase in connection with the ancient assessment of that land-tax known as the 'geld.' The two instances of its use cited in the above work are "infra quatuor bancos" from the Northumberland Assize Rolls and "inter quatuor scamna gildhallæ" from the borough court of Totnes.<sup>4</sup> To these I added, in my own article, entitled "The Hundred and the geld,"<sup>5</sup> a phrase in the Fordwich custumal, wherè the *communitas* is described as electing the mayor in the parish church first sitting along the four benches and then all standing ("primo sedentes per quatuor bancos et postea

<sup>1</sup> The scribe of this cartulary is not, I think, entirely trustworthy in some places.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. I., p. 543 (1st Ed.).

<sup>4</sup> *History of English Law*, I., 543.

<sup>3</sup> *Hundred Rolls*, I., 142.

<sup>5</sup> *English Historical Review*, (1895) X. 732.

omnes astantes"). But we want, not merely "the four benches," but "the four benches of the hundred"; and these, I showed, are duly found in the pages of the Colchester cartulary. This volume contains (p. 171) a grant of land which the monks are to "defend within the four benches of the Hundred:—

"in liberam et quietam et perhennem elemosinam absolutam ab omni seculari servitio et terrena exactione, nisi quod ipsi monachi *defendent eam infra quatuor bancos hundredi per defensionem X et VIII acrarum.*"

It also contains (p. 227) an early grant of two virgates at Wormingford, of which a virgate and a half were held by Henry the clerk, and half a virgate by Sigar the son of Siward. These were to be held by the monks:—

"in perhennem elemosinam et liberam et quietam ab omnibus servitiis et scutagiis et expeditionibus et omnibus aliis scottis et lottis, et halimotis, et sectis scire, hundredis, et omnibus querelis et exactionibus, nisi quod dimidiam hidam<sup>1</sup> debent defendere predicti sochemanni inter quatuor bancos regis solummodo."<sup>2</sup>

In a subsequent note which I sent to the *Athenæum*<sup>3</sup>, I gave an instance from a southern county (Sussex, if I remember right) of the phrase "excepto communi geldo regis (quod) adjacet ad iiij scamna Hundredi."

It is with such instances of this rare and interesting phrase that we must compare the Helion charter now brought to light. It is clear that the four benches (*bancos* or *scamna*) of the Hundred were synonymous with the Hundred Court itself, and that the expression to "defend" has here a technical meaning, and is the same as that which meets us throughout Domesday Book, where "defendit se" virtually means "claims to be assessed at." The phrase "defensio x acrarum," which occurs in the Pipe-Roll Society's first volume of fines, similarly means land assessed at ten acres; it meets us again in an Essex fine of 3 Henry III., where the tenant is to hold 15 acres with their appurtenances at Doddinghurst "making the defence of 15 acres of land against the King when common hidage shall happen throughout the realm of England" (p. 54). As the Hundred was assessed for geld, and responsible for its payment, as a whole, the liability of each holding would be a matter settled in its court, or, as the phrase ran, "within the four benches of the Hundred." The *murdrum* or 'murder' fine also was assessed, as the Pipe Rolls show, on the Hundred as a whole; and one of the Essex fines published by our Society speaks of land held partly "by the defence of 15 acres

<sup>1</sup> The hide as a fiscal unit, contained four virgates.

<sup>2</sup> "save that the aforesaid sokemen must defend the half hide within the four benches of the King only."

<sup>3</sup> 19th October, 1895, p. 533.

of land to murder and to Danegeld,"<sup>1</sup> a phrase unintelligible without this explanation.

There is one more point to which I would call attention. The mention of a holder of so small an amount as half a virgate or 15 acres being responsible 'within the four benches' for the payment of the 'geld' due thereon seems to me a further objection to Professor Maitland's theory of the manor, which connects the formal existence of a 'manor' with the responsibility of its holder to the King for the payment of the 'geld' thereon.<sup>2</sup>

And now let me end as I began, with Helion of Helion's Bumpstead. As was not unfrequently the case with these old landed families, the increase of their fortunes by marriage with heiresses was but the prelude to their own extinction and the passing away of their lands, through an heiress, to another house. The chief accession to the Helions' fortunes came through the marriage with an heiress of the Swynbournes, whose monuments are still to be seen up at Little Horkesley; another heiress brought them Gosfield; and then about the middle of the fifteenth century, their own heiress brought the whole to Tyrell, and so to Wentworth. But before their name had passed away, they had done their duty on the battlefield; a Helion fought at Crecy, and a Helion fought at Agincourt. The book of my friend General Wrottesley shows that, some two months before the battle of Crecy, "John son of Henry Helyoun of Bumpstede" joined the retinue of the Black Prince<sup>3</sup>; and I have found in the British Museum the original 'indenture of war' by which Robert Helion, as one of six esquires (*escuiers*) bound himself to serve King Henry V. across the channel for a year, bringing in his train, as did each of the others, three mounted archers.<sup>4</sup> The extent to which, in the French war, these mounted archers were employed may not be generally known. Combining, as they did the mobility of horse with the dreaded arm of the English infantry, they were the forerunners, in a sense, of those Imperial yeomen whom Essex has to-day sent forth to war, even as the Knights of the Hospital are again represented to-day by those who have been sent from their old headquarters, the gift of an Essex man, to tend the wounded in South Africa in the name of St. John of Jerusalem.

<sup>1</sup> 8 Richard I. (p. 6).

<sup>2</sup> *Domesday Book and Beyond*, pp. 120-128, and especially p. 122: "They are not villeins, they are sokemen or free men; but their own tenements are not manors; they belong to or 'lie in' some manor of their lord. These men, we think, can be personally charged with the geld; but they pay their geld at the lord's hall and he is in some measure bound to exact the payment." In the Essex cases cited above the parties responsible to the Hundred itself are sokemen or 'free men.'

<sup>3</sup> *Crecy and Calais*, p. 93. He died seized of Bumpstead in 1349.

<sup>4</sup> Harl. Chart., 43, E. 39. It is dated 29th April, 1415, Agincourt was fought 25th October following. It is not proved that this Robert was one of the Essex Helions, though it seems probable.

## THE MANOR OF COLNE ENGAINÉ.

BY J. H. ROUND, M.A.

MANORIAL descent, as I have often observed, is the backbone of county history. If a manor is rightly identified in Domesday and its devolution accurately traced, we can then, upon that secure foundation, proceed to write its history as a part of the history of the county. In Essex we are fortunate in the fact that much of this essential work has been carefully done for us by Morant or by those whose researches he used. But more than a century and a half has elapsed since Morant wrote, and there are naturally cases in which fuller knowledge and easier access to records enable us to correct the earlier descent of Essex manors as given in his work.

Morant (II. 217) states that Colne Engainé was held, as "Parva Colun" of Robert Malet, in 1086, by "one Walter," and that, on Robert's banishment under Henry I.,—

"This estate became vested in Hubert de Montchensey of Edwardston in Suffolk, the feudatory tenant here and his heirs. One of them, named John, son of Robert, sold 40 acres of arable land in this manor to Vitalis Engainé in 1218 or 1219 (Fine 3 Henry III.); so early did the Engainé family possess lands in this parish!"

He adds that "Richard de Engainé, Lord of Blatherwick in Northamptonshire, died 22<sup>nd</sup> April, 1208; leaving by Sarah his wife, daughter of Alberic de Vere, earl of Oxford, Richard who died single about 1217 and Vitalis that held the manor of Colne and advowson of the church of Sir Hugh de Cressy by the service of three quarters of a knight's fee."

The connection of the interesting family of Engainé with the Colne to which they gave their name is older than Morant imagined, and it is possible to trace their descent from the Domesday under-tenant. The Domesday Survey of Norfolk and Suffolk shows that the 'Walter' who held 'Parva Colun' of Robert Malet was Walter de Caen, who was his under-tenant at many places in these two counties. Walter was succeeded by Robert Fitz Walter, presumably his son, sheriff of Norfolk and founder of Horsham St. Faith's; and Robert was eventually succeeded by his son William, also sheriff of Norfolk, who took the name of De Cheney. This William de Cheney at his death, in the days of Henry II., left three daughters and co-heiresses, of whom the youngest was Sara. While she was

still unmarried, Sara came to an arrangement, before the king himself, with Margery her eldest sister and Hugh de Crescy, Margery's husband, by which, in consideration of receiving this Colne for her share, she released to them all her right as co-heiress to her father. She subsequently married Richard Engaine and became the mother of Viel Engaine; and this is how the manor of Colne came to the Engaine family.

All this we learn from a suit brought, in 1223, by the above Viel Engaine against his Aunt Margery de Crescy to obtain, in right of his mother, a third share in the estate at Blyburgh, Suffolk, of which his grandfather William de Cheney had been seised. Margery at once pleaded the above release by his mother Sara of her rights.<sup>1</sup> Nothing, it should be observed, could be more clearly proved than that Sara, wife of Richard and mother of Viel Engaine, was the youngest daughter and co-heir of William de Cheney, sheriff of Norfolk. Yet Morant, following Dugdale's *Baronage*, makes her a daughter of the earl of Oxford, thus hopelessly obscuring the descent of the Colne manor. I have traced back this erroneous statement, as usual, to a monk's genealogy. The "Fundatorum historia" of Fineshead Priory, Northants, founded by the above Richard Engaine, makes him marry a Sara, daughter of the earl of Oxford.<sup>2</sup> One cannot sound too often the needful note of warning against these monastic genealogies. For instance, the 'Founder's genealogy' of Horsham St. Faith's asserts that both of Margery's younger sisters died without issue.

It is needless to give particulars of the family of Engaine, who held at Upminster and elsewhere in the county, for Morant has done this already. They are found in Domesday holding in Northamptonshire and neighbouring counties by the service of acting as foresters of the King.

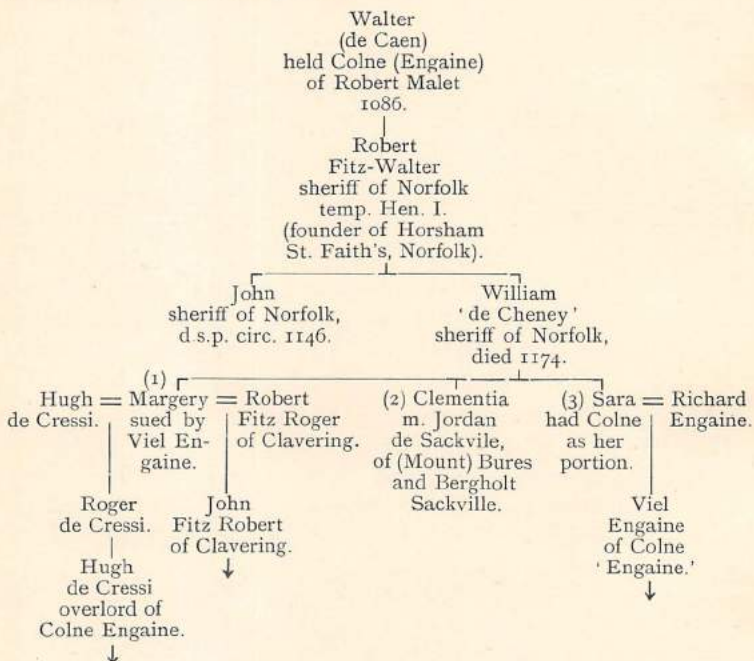
<sup>1</sup> "De illo Willelmo debuit tota terra predicta descendere tribus filiabus suis, scilicet, Margerie primogenite, et Clemencie sorori sue, et Sarre matri eiusdem Vitalis, unde ipse clamat terciam partem ut in proparte sororum, que ei descendere debet de matre sua. . . ."

"Et Margeria venit et defendit jus suum etc. et dicit quod ipse nullum ius habere poterit in terris illis, quia Sarra mater eiusdem Vitalis, cuius heres ipse est, remisit et quietum clamavit totum ius suum quod ipsa habuit in terra Willelmi de Chednay patris sui coram Domino Henrico avo etc. pro terra de Colam quam ipsa recepit ad partem suam. . . . Et . . . ipse adhuc tenet Colam sicut eidem Sarre remansit per finem illum etc."

"Et Vitalis venit et dicit quod carta illa de Domino Rege non debet ei nocere nec Margerie valere, quia carta illa facta fuit et convencio, si unquam facta fuit, fuit facta tempore quo Sarra mater sua fuit in custodia Domini Regis et infra etatem . . . ante tempus quo ipsa Sarra per Dominum Regem maritata fuit Ricardo patri suo, set tunc Dominus Rex per voluntatem suam tradidit Ricardo viro suo terram illam de Colum, quia Hugo de Crescy et ipsa Margeria semper prius fuerunt in seisinam de tota baronia integre et de Colum et de aliis terris usque eadem Sarra fuit maritata." *Bracton's Note Book* (Ed. Maitland) III. 497-8.

<sup>2</sup> "Habuit in uxorem Saram filiam comitis Oxenford" (*Monasticon*, VI. 450). Morant went further and gave the earl's name. It is very singular that the Sackville pedigree similarly makes her sister Clemence a daughter of the Earl of Oxford.

Morant was probably misled as to the descent of Colne by the fact that a neighbouring manor, Stansted Hall in Halstead, which was also Robert Malet's, was held of him by Hubert (de Montchensy) and actually valued with Colne, it would seem, in Domesday Book. But, as will be seen from the pedigree annexed, the descent of the latter manor is absolutely clear.



As a curious confirmation of this descent we may turn to the invaluable county fines now being printed by our society. We there find (p. 51) the fine of which Morant speaks, and learn that the 12½ (not 40) acres which passed to Viel Engaine in 1218-9 at Colne were to be held by him "of the prior and monks of St. Faith of Horsefort," the house founded in Norfolk by Robert Fitz Walter as above.<sup>1</sup> It is due to the same connexion that the Prior of Horsham St. Faith's received forty shillings a year from the church of Colne Engaine.<sup>2</sup>

The pedigree I have given illustrates also the early descent of Little Chishall. It was held, in two portions, of count Eustace of

<sup>1</sup> The house was known as St. Faith of Horsham. *Horsford*, the adjoining parish, was the chief seat of Robert Fitz Walter, and was held, like Colne (Engaine) by Walter de Caen in Domesday.

<sup>2</sup> *Feudal Aids*, II., 192. Compare *Monasticon*, III., 637.

Boulogne by a certain Guy (*Wido*) in 1086. This Guy was Guy "the Angevin" who also held of the count the whole of his estates in Norfolk. These descended with Little Chishall as seven knights' fees and are found in the hands of William de Cheney probably by grant from the Crown. From William they passed to his son-in-law Robert Fitz Roger, lord of Clavering, in right of his wife. Hence the entry in "the Boulogne Inquisition" (*temp.* John):—

"Willelmus de Norwicho, modo Robertus filius Rogeri . . . in Chishull in Essexa j militem."<sup>1</sup>

William de Cheney was occasionally styled William de Norwich as being sheriff of Norfolk. Of all this there is nothing in Morant's history of the parish.<sup>2</sup>

Morant, however, did not plunge into error so wild as that of Blomefield the historian of Norfolk. Dealing with one of Guy's manors, Thorp, now Ashwell Thorpe, which was known at one time from its Domesday tenant as "Torp Widonis Andagavensis,"<sup>3</sup> he made the William de Norwich of the above extract father of Roger and grandfather of Robert Fitz Roger,<sup>4</sup> though the evidence given by himself should have shown him that its mesne lords were the barons named from their Essex lordship of Clavering. The real relation between William de Norwich and Robert Fitz Roger is shown in the pedigree above.<sup>5</sup>

I now return to Colne Engaine. Morant, in his account of *Wakes Colne*, asserts that the manor of Wakes Hall was held under Henry I. by Walter Mascherel—who gave his tithes there to Earls Colne Priory, and, subsequently,—in 1211 by Ermingard Mascherel, but he could not trace the name further or explain how the manor came to Mascherel or passed from their possession. The evidence on which he relied was the Red Book of the Exchequer, where the Boulogne Inquisition cited above contains this passage:—

"Ermingard Maskerel, ij milites in Colum et Legra in Essexa, quas Prior Sancti Botulfi de Colcestria tenet per j militem, et in Bilcho et Horseye in hundredo de Tanrige, quas Abbas de Sancta Ositha tenet per j militem,—summa ij milites" (p. 579).

<sup>1</sup> *Red Book of the Exchequer*, p. 576. Compare *Testa de Nevill*, p. 273. This descent is further proved by *Testa de Nevill*, p. 265, where we find these seven fees in the hands of Roger de Cressi (see pedigree).

<sup>2</sup> Morant knew only that Little Chishall was part of the Honour of Boulogne and was held by 'Wido' of Count Eustace in 1086.

<sup>3</sup> See *Red Book of the Exchequer* (p. 576), where this name was made by the editor into three separate villages!

<sup>4</sup> Ed. 1806, Vol. V., p. 142.

<sup>5</sup> Blomefield converts Robert Fitz Roger into a descendant of Guy the Angevin in his accounts of Anmere and of Little Massingham, of which Guy was tenant in 1086 (Vols. VIII. 334, IX. 14).



I cannot wonder that a passage so corrupt as this led our county historian hopelessly astray. For Ermengard lived under Henry I., not in 1211; nor did she descend from Walter Mascherel, for she was no other than his wife. This I prove by a charter of confirmation to St. Osyth's Priory, which contains the passage:—

“Ex confirmatione comitis Stephani et Matildis uxoris sue et ex dono Walteri Makerel et Ermegard uxoris sue totam terram de Bircho cum omnibus pertinentiis suis per servitium unius militis”<sup>1</sup>

We now begin to see daylight. The manor of “Birchhou (*al.* Birch Hall) with Horsey” in Kirby, of which Morant wrote—

“It came to be part of the possessions of St. Osyth's monastery; but by whom given we have no account: however it was before the year 1437” (I. 484),— was held by ‘Robert’ of the count of Boulogne in 1086. It then came to Walter Mascherel with Ermengard his wife, and thus their gift of it to St. Osyth's had to be confirmed by Stephen, count of Mortain, who was then lord of the Honour of Boulogne in right of his wife Matilda the heiress of its counts. We may now return to Walter Mascherel's gift of his tithes to Earls Colne Priory, which Morant took from the old *Monasticon* (I. 438):—

“Walterus cognomente Macerell decimam totius suæ pecuniæ villæ suæ Colis de feudo Eustachii comitis Bolonensis pratunq̄ue simul contiguum molendino illius loci.”

Walter himself was the heir of Domesday's “Walter the Deacon”; his lands lay in Tendring Hundred, and he there founded Wix Priory. His estate at Colne came to him with his wife Ermengard and was held, like their manor of Bircho, of the Honour of Boulogne, then in the hands of count Stephen, afterwards king of England. This is why ‘Walterus Mascherel’ appears as a witness to a charter of count Stephen and his wife in favour of St. John's, Colchester.<sup>2</sup>

What has now been said is sufficient to explain the mysterious entry in the Boulogne Inquisition by which Morant was misled. Ermengard, wife of Walter Mascherel, *temp.* Henry I., had held of the Honour of Boulogne two knights' fees, one of which, in conjunction with her husband, she bestowed on St. Osyth's Priory and the other on St. Botolph's, Colchester. We have still to find the lands at Colne that she gave to St. Botolph's Priory. Morant, who identified the Mascherel holding, we have seen, as Wakes Hall, does not mention under Wakes Colne any lands as held by St. Botolph's. But under Colne Engaine (II. 220) he tells us that the manor of Shreves had come to the Priory, though he knew not how. It is

<sup>1</sup> *Monasticon*, VI. 310.

<sup>2</sup> *Cartulary of St. John's, Colchester*, I. 49.

obvious that this (and not Wakes Hall) was the manor that Ermengard brought to her husband and that Robert had held of count Eustace at the time of the Domesday Survey (1086).

The result we have obtained may be expressed thus :—

Robert  
Held Bircho in Kirby and  
Shreves in Colne (Engaine)  
of the Count of Boulogne  
in 1086.  
⋮  
Ermengard = Walter  
Held her lands of the Mascherel.  
Count of Boulogne as  
two knights' fees.

Gave Bircho to St. Osyth's and Shreves to St. Botolph's.

It will be observed that Ermengard's gifts were both to houses of Austin Canons.<sup>1</sup>

The only small point about which I am in doubt is that the Boulogne Inquisition connects lands in Layer with the lands in Colne as passing from Ermengard to St. Botolph's Priory. This statement is in harmony with Richard I.'s charter confirming to the Priory, among its possessions, "De Feudo Bolonie . . . omnes terras quas habent apud Colum et apud Legram."<sup>2</sup> Now the manor held by St. Botolph's in the Layers was Blindknights in Layer-de-la-Haye.<sup>3</sup> Morant was unable to explain how it obtained this manor, but he identified it with the 'Layer' held in chief by Hugh de Montfort in 1086. This, however, cannot be, for Hugh de Montfort's fief became known as the Honour of Hagenet (i.e. Haughley), and the 'Layer' portion of that Honour was held in 1212 by Hamon de St. Quintin. The only holding of the count of Boulogne in the Layers, at the time of Domesday, was as yet in demesne, but it may have been subsequently granted to 'Robert' as an addition to his holding. It might thus pass with Shreves in Colne to St. Botolph's Priory and to be the manor known as Blindknights.<sup>4</sup>

I have tried to illustrate in this paper the value, on the one hand, of feudal genealogy and, on the other, of the charters of the local religious houses in tracing the true descent of manors from the time of the Norman Conquest. In a county like Essex where a single name such as that of 'Colne' or 'Layer' includes several parishes,

<sup>1</sup> An interesting return of payments from knights' fees on the Honour of Boulogne (*Testa de Nevill*, p. 265) contains the entry—"De Abbate Sancte Osithe et priore Sancti Botulphi Colecestrie iij marcas de ij feodis." These were the two fees which had belonged to Ermengard.

<sup>2</sup> *Monasticon*, VI. 106.

<sup>3</sup> See Morant's *Essex*, I. 412.

<sup>4</sup> The matter is further complicated by the Priors of St. Botolph's holding some land there by serjeanty.

one has to be particularly careful if confusion is to be avoided. But the system of feudal tenures, when once it has been rightly grasped, is of the greatest possible assistance as a clue to the true descent. When we treat the matter in scientific fashion and cease to make mere 'shots,' it is wonderful how all the evidence falls duly into place.

Incidentally this paper illustrates a matter of importance in the history of our law. Dealing with "Inheritance by co-heiresses" and with "Co-heirs and Parage,"<sup>1</sup> Profs. Maitland and Sir F. Pollock observe of "an inheritance which falls to the dead man's daughters" that "the law will show no preference for the first-born," but that "the king's claim to prevent the partition of a great fee has in the past gone far." Now all that William de Cheney held *in capite ut de corona* was one or two knight's fees in which Blyburgh was included, but his holdings under the Honours of Eye and of Boulogne extended over many manors, and he was also an under-tenant of several other baronies. That Sara, the youngest of his three daughters, should have had to content herself with the manor of Colne (Engaine) while her eldest sister obtained the bulk of her father's estates is remarkably at variance with the accepted principle of equal division among co-heirs. Moreover the Engaines, her heirs, are found holding the manor under the heirs of the eldest sister.<sup>2</sup> Looking at the suit in 'Bracton's Note Book,' from which I quoted at the outset, one can feel little doubt that what Henry II. did was to give Margery, the eldest sister, with all her father's land, to Hugh de Cressi, who is known as one of his trusted officers,<sup>3</sup> and then to portion off the youngest sister, Sara, with the manor of Colne (Engaine) which was, moreover, only to be held of the eldest sister and her heirs, as part of the fief they held of the King (*ut de honore*).

<sup>1</sup> *History of English Law* (1895), II. 274-5.

<sup>2</sup> Compare *Ibid.*, p. 275.

<sup>3</sup> This conclusion is confirmed by the Pipe Rolls. On the roll of Michaelmas, 1174, we find William 'de Caisneto' entered as still in possession of Blyburgh (p. 36), but under his debt of £190 we read "Sed mortuus est et Hugo de Creissi habet terram per regem" (p. 40), and this entry is repeated on the roll of Michaelmas, 1175 (p. 111), where we also find Hugh de Creissi in possession of Blyburgh (p. 107).

one has to be particularly careful if confusion is to be avoided. But the system of feudal tenures, when once it has been rightly grasped, is of the greatest possible assistance as a clue to the true descent. When we treat the matter in scientific fashion and cease to make mere 'shots,' it is wonderful how all the evidence falls duly into place.

Incidentally this paper illustrates a matter of importance in the history of our law. Dealing with "Inheritance by co-heiresses" and with "Co-heirs and Parage,"<sup>1</sup> Profs. Maitland and Sir F. Pollock observe of "an inheritance which falls to the dead man's daughters" that "the law will show no preference for the first-born," but that "the king's claim to prevent the partition of a great fee has in the past gone far." Now all that William de Cheney held *in capite ut de corona* was one or two knight's fees in which Blyburgh was included, but his holdings under the Honours of Eye and of Boulogne extended over many manors, and he was also an under-tenant of several other baronies. That Sara, the youngest of his three daughters, should have had to content herself with the manor of Colne (Engaine) while her eldest sister obtained the bulk of her father's estates is remarkably at variance with the accepted principle of equal division among co-heirs. Moreover the Engaines, her heirs, are found holding the manor under the heirs of the eldest sister.<sup>2</sup> Looking at the suit in 'Bracton's Note Book,' from which I quoted at the outset, one can feel little doubt that what Henry II. did was to give Margery, the eldest sister, with all her father's land, to Hugh de Cressi, who is known as one of his trusted officers,<sup>3</sup> and then to portion off the youngest sister, Sara, with the manor of Colne (Engaine) which was, moreover, only to be held of the eldest sister and her heirs, as part of the fief they held of the King (*ut de honore*).

---

<sup>1</sup> *History of English Law* (1895), II. 274-5.

<sup>2</sup> Compare *Ibid.*, p. 275.

<sup>3</sup> This conclusion is confirmed by the Pipe Rolls. On the roll of Michaelmas, 1174, we find William 'de Caisneto' entered as still in possession of Blyburgh (p. 36), but under his debt of £190 we read "Sed mortuus est et Hugo de Creissi habet terram per regem" (p. 40), and this entry is repeated on the roll of Michaelmas, 1175 (p. 111), where we also find Hugh de Creissi in possession of Blyburgh (p. 107).

obvious that this (and not Wakes Hall) was the manor that Ermengard brought to her husband and that Robert had held of count Eustace at the time of the Domesday Survey (1086).

The result we have obtained may be expressed thus :—

Robert  
Held Bircho in Kirby and  
Shreves in Colne (Engaine)  
of the Count of Boulogne  
in 1086.  
:  
Ermengard = Walter  
Held her lands of the Mascherel.  
Count of Boulogne  
two knights' fees.

Gave Bircho to St. Osyth's and Shreves to St. Botolph's.

It will be observed that Ermengard's gifts were both to houses of Austin Canons.<sup>1</sup>

The only small point about which I am in doubt is that the Boulogne Inquisition connects lands in Layer with the lands in Colne as passing from Ermengard to St. Botolph's Priory. This statement is in harmony with Richard I.'s charter confirming to the Priory, among its possessions, "De Feudo Bolonie . . . omnes terras quas habent apud Colum et apud Legram."<sup>2</sup> Now the manor held by St. Botolph's in the Layers was Blindknights in Layer-de-la-Haye.<sup>3</sup> Morant was unable to explain how it obtained this manor, but he identified it with the 'Layer' held in chief by Hugh de Montfort in 1086. This, however, cannot be, for Hugh de Montfort's fief became known as the Honour of Hagenet (i.e. Haughley), and the 'Layer' portion of that Honour was held in 1212 by Hamon de St. Quintin. The only holding of the count of Boulogne in the Layers, at the time of Domesday, was as yet in demesne, but it may have been subsequently granted to 'Robert' as an addition to his holding. It might thus pass with Shreves in Colne to St. Botolph's Priory and to be the manor known as Blindknights.<sup>4</sup>

I have tried to illustrate in this paper the value, on the one hand, of feudal genealogy and, on the other, of the charters of the local religious houses in tracing the true descent of manors from the time of the Norman Conquest. In a county like Essex where a single name such as that of 'Colne' or 'Layer' includes several parishes,

<sup>1</sup> An interesting return of payments from knights' fees on the Honour of Boulogne (*Testa de Nevill*, p. 265) contains the entry—"De Abbate Sancte Osite et priore Sancti Botulphi Colecestrie iij marcas de ij feodis." These were the two fees which had belonged to Ermengard.

<sup>2</sup> *Monasticon*, VI. 106.

<sup>3</sup> See Morant's *Essex*, I. 412.

<sup>4</sup> The matter is further complicated by the Priors of St. Botolph's holding some land there by serjeanty.

## ESSEX FIELD-NAMES.

COLLECTED AND ARRANGED BY

WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

---

*Part VI. (ii.)*—THE HUNDRED OF HINCKFORD.

---

THE exigencies of space demanded that the field-names for the Hundred of Hinckford, the biggest of all the Essex Hundreds, should be spread over two issues of the *Transactions* of our Society. The second and concluding instalment follows, preceded, however, by a few names which escaped inclusion in their proper alphabetical order in the first half of the list.

NOTE:—In the following lists the numerals put after each name indicate the parishes (see Vol. VIII., p. 77, 78) in which the name occurs. Where the same name is found twice or oftener *in the same parish*, one numeral serves for all instances.

[OMITTED FROM THE LIST in Vol. VIII., pp. 76-103.]

Applebone Field .. .. .	288	Bowling Green .. .. .	286
Alder Meadow .. .. .	288	Boy Pasture .. .. .	288
Ash Ground .. .. .	287	Brooks, Upper and Lower,	287
		Broom Ley .. .. .	288
Bales Close .. .. .	286	Brick Kiln Field .. .. .	288
Bar Field .. .. .	286	Bulmer Croft, Upper, ..	287
Barkers Hill .. .. .	287	Burnt Field .. .. .	287
Barnards Field .. .. .	286		
Bastard Ley .. .. .	286	Calves Pasture .. .. .	288
Batts Croft .. .. .	287	Caney Field .. .. .	286
Betsy Field .. .. .	286	Carey Croft .. .. .	287
Birds Green Field .. .. .	286	Carter Field .. .. .	286
Bishops, 286; —, Little,	287	Chafers, Great and Little,	287
Bitten Field .. .. .	287	Chaff Field .. .. .	286
Blue Door Field .. .. .	286	Chaldron, Upper, .. .. .	288

Chalk Ley .. .. .	287	Flax Ley .. .. .	287
Chapel Croft .. .. .	288	Flowers Field, Great and Little, 286	
Chaseway .. .. .	288	Foxearth Field .. .. .	286
Chelmsford Field .. .. .	288	Gipsey Field .. .. .	287
Christmas Field .. .. .	288	Grange Ley .. .. .	288
Clay Pit Field .. .. .	286	Gravel Pit Field .. .. .	288
Clay Pits .. .. .	288	Grubb Pasture .. .. .	287
Close Bush .. .. .	288	Hagenbags .. .. .	286
Coblin Slip .. .. .	286	Hanging Croft .. .. .	286
Cobs Hill .. .. .	287	Harrington Field .. .. .	286
Coles Field .. .. .	287	Harts Field .. .. .	287
Colemans Field .. .. .	286	Haziers .. .. .	288
Collins Slipe .. .. .	286	Henny Field .. .. .	287
Coney Bottom .. .. .	287	Henry, Middle and Further,	287
Coney Burrow Field .. .. .	286	Hensleys Field .. .. .	287
Coney Fare .. .. .	287	Hodge, First and Further,	288
Cooks Field .. .. .	288	Hods, Little .. .. .	288
Copen Hill Moor .. .. .	287	Hog Field .. .. .	288
Crab-Tree Field, 288; — Mea- dow, 286		Hop Garden, 288; — Ground, 287	
Creeping Hyde .. .. .	287	Hopkins, Great, .. .. .	287
Cross Croft, 288; — Path Field, 286, 287, 288		Hoppet .. .. .	288
Crow Field .. .. .	286	Houndsditch .. .. .	287
Dees, Great and Little, .. .. .	288	Housets Field .. .. .	288
Dennis Land .. .. .	286	Howsetts Meadow .. .. .	288
Dole Piece .. .. .	286	Hyde, Little, .. .. .	287
Dool Field .. .. .	287	Ivy Barn Field .. .. .	288
Dorman Shot .. .. .	288	Kelsea Field .. .. .	286
Dove Croft, 288; — House Field, 287		Kettle Field .. .. .	286
Downs .. .. .	288	Kiln Field .. .. .	287, 288
Dowsetts Pasture .. .. .	286	Kingsland, Upper & Lower,	288
Drift .. .. .	287	Kinkhams Meadow .. .. .	287
Durrants Field .. .. .	286	Knights Pasture .. .. .	286
Edmondsey Ley .. .. .	288	Land Pit Field .. .. .	287
Elmer, Little, .. .. .	287	Levit Ley .. .. .	288
Englands, First and Second,	287	Link, The, .. .. .	287
Feelers, Further, .. .. .	287	Loom Pits .. .. .	288
Fen Field .. .. .	288		

## [LIST CONTINUED FROM VOL. VIII., p. 103.]

Mabs Field . . . . .	244	Margarets Mead. . . . .	257
Madery Field. . . . .	278	Margeries Croft . . . . .	262
Madgemans . . . . .	282	Margery Pightle . . . . .	252
Madges Hill . . . . .	269	Marjorams . . . . .	261
Madleys, Upper and Lower,	256	Market Path ( <i>ga.</i> ) . . . . .	254, 278
Maggs Yard . . . . .	259	Marks Ley . . . . .	253
Magpie Field . . . . .	261	Marldown . . . . .	257
Maidens Ley . . . . .	262	Marrow Bones . . . . .	256
Maids Field, 260; — Gate, 257; — Piece, 248, 258, 274; — Wood, 260		Marshes Field . . . . .	251
Maizey Croft . . . . .	285	Martins, 248, 258; — Great, 253; — Upper and Lower, 256; — Field, 247, 274, 275; — Hill, 266; — Marsh, 281; — Meadow, 249	
Make Beggars, 264, 282, 286; — Moors, 275		Mary Croft . . . . .	257, 268
Mallets Acre, 261; — Field, 261		Marys Field . . . . .	288
Malting Field, 256, 261, 263, 280; — Pasture, 252; — Piece, 269		Masketts . . . . .	245
Malsters Meadow . . . . .	251	Masons Land . . . . .	245
Man Field, 261, 281, 282; — Croft, Glebe in, 258		Match Croft Field, 261; — Field, 250; — Meadow, 285	
Mans Cross Garden . . . . .	290	Mats Meadow, 276; — Croft, Great, 261	
Manges leys, Little, . . . . .	268	Matthew Down . . . . .	290
Mannel Ley . . . . .	257	Mavis . . . . .	290
Manor Pound . . . . .	262, 276	May Field, 256; — Gate, Part of, 283	
Mansfield Meadow . . . . .	288	Mayhew Field . . . . .	256
Manning Pightle . . . . .	276	Mayhill Botton, 254; — Field, 254	
Mannings, Great, 258; — Field, 262		Mayland . . . . .	279
Mansfield, Great and Little, 288		Maynards . . . . .	263
Mapel, Further, 288; — Croft, 262, 280; — Field, 275; — Piece, 280		Mays, Little, . . . . .	251
Maplestead Meadow . . . . .	268	Maywards . . . . .	261
Mapletons . . . . .	250	Meads Field . . . . .	263
Maptons Common. . . . .	270	Meagly Field . . . . .	257
March Field, 258; — Meadow, 263		Meakley Field . . . . .	263
Mare Croft, 252, 258; — Field, 257		Mears Croft . . . . .	263
Mares Field . . . . .	247	Meekens Field . . . . .	286
		Meeking Wood, Great and Little, 263	
		Meeting Acre, 262; — Field, 250	



- Megmores, Little, . . . . . 275  
 Melbournes . . . . . 256  
 Mellis Toes . . . . . 263  
 Merchants Field . . . . . 278  
 Mere Field, 250; — Meadow,  
     283  
 Merewethers . . . . . 259  
 Merkins Field . . . . . 260  
 Messingale . . . . . 258  
 Messons Field, Glebe in . . . . . 245  
 Metsons Meadow . . . . . 281  
 Middleton Land . . . . . 265  
 Midland . . . . . 255  
 Mihills Wood . . . . . 257  
 Miles Field . . . . . 250  
 Milestone Field . . . . . 260, 276  
 Milking Field . . . . . 251  
 Milkhouse Ley, 254; — Wood,  
     265  
 Mill, 258; — Croft, 279; — Field,  
     244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 251,  
     254, 255, 256, 257, 261, 262,  
     263, 264, 268, 272, 273, 274,  
     276, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282,  
     286, 288, 291; — Field  
     Chase, 289; — Acre Field,  
     269; — Barn Field, 248,  
     251; — Hide, 291; —  
     Hill, 247; — Hill Field,  
     251, 285; — Hills, 259; —  
     Hook, 258; — Ley, 249,  
     280; — Meadow, 249, 250,  
     252, 260, 263, 275, 278, 282,  
     288; — Pasture, 248, 263,  
     283; — Post, 257; — Post  
     Field, Little, 245; — Spring,  
     256; — Went Field, 273  
 Milbank Meadow . . . . . 256  
 Millbanks Field . . . . . 260  
 Millhole Pasture . . . . . 273  
 Millers Croft, 270, 277; — Field,  
     251, 256, 278; — Moors,  
     278  
 Miltons Field . . . . . 256  
 Mincing Bottom, 289; — Field,  
     289  
 Mines, Part of, . . . . . 253  
 Mintons . . . . . 264  
 Misinmere, 254; — Cottage, 254  
 Miss Field . . . . . 263  
 Misty Croft . . . . . 261  
 Mitchells, Long, 272; — Spring,  
     272  
 Mites, Little, . . . . . 256  
 Moat, 251; — Bottom, 259; —  
     Croft, 286; — Close, 282;  
     — Field, 249, 253, 256, 259,  
     263, 273, 279, 280, 285, 286,  
     288; — Ley, 261, 281; —  
     Meadow, 271; — Pasture,  
     244, 257, 263, 274, 276; —  
     Spring, 282; — Wood, 282  
 Mock Beggars . . . . . 244  
 Mole Door Slip . . . . . 286  
 Mole-Hill Field . . . . . 256, 262  
 Moles Meadow . . . . . 255  
 Moll Butchers . . . . . 288  
 Money, 281; — Croft, 268; —  
     Field, 281, 288; — Hill,  
     264; — Pit Field, 246; —  
     Pots, Upper and Lower,  
     288  
 Monk Meadow . . . . . 288  
 Monkland Field . . . . . 263  
 Monks, 257; — Field, 250, 257;  
     — Field, Upper and Lower,  
     286; — Meadow, 249  
 Mont, Middle, . . . . . 269  
 Montagues . . . . . 244  
 Moon Field . . . . . 247  
 Moor, 254; —, First, 255; —,  
     High, 251; —, Long, 259;  
     —, The, 244, 280, 283; —  
     Ash Ground, 268; — Croft,  
     282; — Hill, 280; —  
     Meadow, 274; — Piece, 288

- Moore Field, 275; — Pasture, 256; — Spring; 256
- Moore's Hill . . . . . 275
- Moorland . . . . . 257
- Moors, 251, 264, 267, 269, 290; —, The, 244, 256, 272, 273, 277, 278, 279, 280, 282; —, Hither and Further, 255; —, Old, 251; — Field, 261, 286; — Meadow, 258, 261; — Pasture, 245
- Mopsey Field.. . . . 278
- Morlands, Great and Little, 289
- Morris Field, Low . . . 261
- Moses, 276; — Ley, 269; — Upper and Lower, 279
- Moss Chase, 263; — 8-acres, 244; — Lay, 268
- Mott Field . . . . . 263
- Motts, 251; —, Hither and Further, 250; — Field, 249; — Garden, 269; — Ground, 261; — Ley, 263
- Moundsfield . . . . . 251
- Mount and Moat, 280; — Itches, 249; — Pasture, 273
- Mountain Lands . . . . 256
- Mounts Field.. . . . 277
- Mouseland Field, 280; — Wood, 280
- Mousetrap Field, 262; — Pasture, 262
- Moushams . . . . . 277
- Mow Carseys.. . . . 251
- Much Croft, 271; — Field, 274, 277; — Field, First and Second, 286; — Field, Great and Little 253, 280; — Field, Middle and Further, 257, 286
- Michmores Spring.. . . 277
- Muck Field.. . . . 256
- Mud (Mudd) Barn Pasture, 289; — Hall, Hither & Further, 257; — Field, 280, 288
- Mullers Land . . . . . 258
- Mullings . . . . . 261
- Multon Berwick . . . . 285
- Mumfords . . . . . 258
- Munsons . . . . . 250
- Munnel Field.. . . . 279
- Murrells Grove . . . . . 250
- Muscle Hill . . . . . 268
- Mussells, Great . . . . . 248
- Mustard Ley . . . . . 259
- Mutimore, Great and Little, 280
- Myhills Field.. . . . 251
- Nail Wood.. . . . 247
- Nailers Field . . . . . 247
- Nameless Meadow . . . 280
- Nan Johnson, Old, . . . 274
- Nannys Yard . . . . . 257
- Nans Croft . . . . . 282
- Naptons . . . . . 270
- Nats Hopground . . . . 276
- Natsfield, Great.. . . . 255
- Neat House . . . . . 280
- Neaves Croft . . . . . 274
- Neds Field . . . . . 256
- Needhams . . . . . 280
- Neptunes Field . . . . . 260
- Nerevatts . . . . . 245
- Nertle Grove . . . . . 251
- Nether Field, Further, 249; — Pasture, 262; — Wood, 263
- Nettle Field, 244; — Grove, 288
- Nettlestead . . . . . 275
- New House Ley . . . . . 254
- Newborne Field . . . . 256
- Newborns Ley . . . . . 254
- Newland, Upper and Lower, 244
- Newlands, 258, 262, 272, 274; —, Great and Little, 245

- Newmans, 247, 273; — Long, 291; — Field, 251, 280, 288; — Meadow, 260; — Orchard, 256; — Pasture, 288; — Piece, 282; — Pightle, 268
- Newneys, Great . . . . . 253
- Newny Wood . . . . . 274
- Nicholas Field . . . . . 280
- Nichols Field . . . . . 253, 273<sup>1</sup>
- Night Pasture . . . . . 286
- Nightlands . . . . . 282
- Nimcods . . . . . 244
- Nine Corners . . . . . 280
- Ninny Croft . . . . . 254
- Noakes Field . . . . . 272
- Nobles Field . . . . . 286
- Nonny Yard . . . . . 286
- Nonsuch, 254; —, Great and Little, 261
- Nook Acre . . . . . 246
- Nooks, Great, 281; — Field, 281
- Norfolks . . . . . 290
- Nories, Further . . . . . 268
- Normans, 281; —, Upper and Lower, 257
- Norrell, Home and Middle, 282
- North Field, 256, 257; — Ups, 285
- Northeys, Great and Little, 251
- Norton Bit . . . . . 276
- Nortons . . . . . 257
- Notley Field . . . . . 253
- Notleys . . . . . 263
- Nottage, Lower . . . . . 276
- Notts Field . . . . . 256
- Nunnery, Ash Ground by, 262
- Nurse Wood . . . . . 255
- Nursets Field . . . . . 286
- Nut Croft, Little, 257; — Hill Plantation, 266
- Nuthouse Field . . . . . 280
- Nutlands, First and Second, 280
- Nuttings, Great . . . . . 258
- Oak Bottom, New, 249; — Field, 251, 254, 255, 280, 281; — Hill Meadow, 289; — Ley, 261; — Mead, 250; — Meadow, 259; — Pasture, 250, 256, 268, 274, 276, 285; — Pightle, 256
- Oaken Field . . . . . 285
- Oaks, 253, 257; —, Great and Little, 281; — Hill, 268
- Oaky Ley, 276; — Pasture, 276
- Oat Land Meadow, 286; — Ley, 258
- Oatlands . . . . . 259
- Obels Field . . . . . 258
- Oburns Wood . . . . . 257
- Odd Field . . . . . 286
- Oddy Croft . . . . . 272
- Oders Field . . . . . 287
- Odwell Field, 259, 273; — Meadow, 259
- Off Croft . . . . . 252
- Ogar Field . . . . . 285
- Oger Field . . . . . 245
- Oily Down . . . . . 244
- Oldbury, Great and Little, 256
- Oldhams . . . . . 261
- Oldlands Chase . . . . . 280
- Olivers Field . . . . . 260
- Olleys, 280; — Field, 257; — Grove, 280
- Omens, Broad, . . . . . 263
- Onchors, Great and Little, 277; — Pasture, 277
- Onions Ley . . . . . 257, 268
- Orange Hall Chase . . . . . 260
- Orbells Field . . . . . 274
- Orchard Mead . . . . . 257
- Orford Field . . . . . 263

<sup>1</sup> 'Nicholls Crofte.' A.D. 1600.

- Organs Field .. .. . 263  
 Orvice Field .. .. . 280  
 Osborns, 245, 262; — Field,  
 254; — Ley, 245, 262; —  
 Pond Field, 251  
 Osier—*see* Ozier  
 Oskins, Further and Hither, 256  
 Ostend, Great and Little, 260;  
 — Chase, 260  
 Otten Field, 249, 291; — Bel-  
 champ Field, 291; — Cross,  
 248  
 Out Field .. .. . 257  
 Outchings .. .. . 272  
 Outway Field.. .. . 260  
 Oven Field.. .. . 268  
 Ovens .. .. . 266  
 Overhedge .. .. . 259  
 Overthewart Field .. 246  
 Overwart Field .. .. . 267  
 Ovington, First & Second, 249;  
 — Field, 271  
 Owl Field .. .. . 285  
 Ox, Long, 247; — Croft, 257,  
 278, 280; — Eye, 280; —  
 Hall Pightle, Hither, 257;  
 — Shots, 282; — Vineyard,  
 253  
 Oxons, Great and Little, 257  
 Oxley Field, 261; — Field,  
 Great and Little, 269  
 Oxleys, 250; — Field, 286; —  
 Pasture, 279  
 Oxney Spring .. .. . 272  
 Oxpits Field .. .. . 273  
 Oysters .. .. . 282  
 Ozier Bed, 247, 283; — Field,  
 261, 263, 275, 276, 277, 278;  
 — Ground, 249, 251, 253,  
 256, 258, 280; — Ground  
 Meadow, 259; — Ground  
 Piece, 269; — Piece, 288  
 Oziers .. .. . 244, 276, 279  
 Pack Field, Little .. .. 291  
 Paddbrook, Great and Little, 252  
 Page Field, 286; — Green, 282  
 Pages, Great and Little, 280; —  
 Cross, 269; — Field, 256;  
 — Meadow, 251, 263  
 Pagle Fen, 256; — Field, 261  
 Paine Field .. .. . 255  
 Paines Hill, 255; — Field, 247,  
 256, 278  
 Painted Field .. .. . 256  
 Painter Field .. .. . 248  
 Pale Close, 268; — Gate Field,  
 251; — Ley, 280; — Pasture,  
 252; — Pond Field, 256  
 Palm Field .. .. . 257, 276  
 Palmers .. .. . 263  
 Palsey Fen .. .. . 272  
 Pamplins .. .. . 261  
 Panamas.. .. . 269  
 Panells Field .. .. . 290  
 Panes, Coarse .. .. . 278  
 Pan Field, 257; — Field Close,  
 251; — Field Mead, 275;  
 — Field Wood, 272; —  
 Mead, 280  
 Pannels Ash, 262, 268; — Ash,  
 Great and Little, 262; —  
 Ash Pightle, 262  
 Pannington, Further, .. 274  
 Paradise Field, 261; — Pasture,  
 280  
 Park, 253, 261, 285; — The, 251,  
 255, 261; — Little, 248; —  
 Long, 251; — Upper, 250;  
 — Croft, 275, 280; — Field,  
 247, 249, 256, 260, 262, 263,  
 279; — Field, Burnt, 260;  
 — Field, Great and Little,  
 257; — Fen Field, 268;  
 — Hoppit, 249; — Ley,  
 244, 249, 257; — Meadow,  
 250

- Parkers, 258; — Corner, 288;  
     — Field, 256, 261  
 Parkes, Meadow & Pasture, 253  
 Parkins Field .. .. . 261  
 Parkley Hop Garden .. 288  
 Parkwood Field .. .. . 263  
 Parlour Field .. .. . 254  
 Parmenters Field, 247; — Mead,  
     279  
 Parsons Field, 252, 259, 262, 269;  
     — Mead, 275; — Park, 267;  
     — Wood, 254  
 Partridge Field .. .. . 249  
 Pasfield .. .. . 288  
 Pask Field .. .. . 249  
 Pasture Slip .. .. . 256  
 Patch Field, 263; — Hill, Great,  
     257  
 Patches, Long, .. .. . 251  
 Patients Field .. .. . 256  
 Patricks Field .. .. . 244  
 Pattern Lands .. .. . 251  
 Pattisons Land .. .. . 276  
 Pattiswick Pightle .. 282  
 Pavlins Field .. .. . 256  
 Payles Field .. .. . 261  
 Payne Piece .. .. . 257  
 Paynes Ley .. .. . 261  
 Peacocks, 286; — Croft, 286;  
     — Field, 273; — Hill, 261  
 Peahorse Croft .. .. . 251  
 Peak, Great and Little, 270; —  
     Field, 256  
 Peakes, 264; — Grove, 244;  
     — Hall, 256  
 Pear Croft .. .. . 249, 273  
 Peartree Close, 263; — Field,  
     251, 253, 255, 256, 258, 260,  
     263, 273, 279, 280, 282, 286;  
     — Pasture, 281; — Piece,  
     257, 263  
 Pearls Hill .. .. . 268  
 Pearmans Hill .. .. . 269  
 Pease Croft, 264; — Field, 254,  
     257, 291; — Field Slade, 259  
 Peasland .. .. . 280  
 Peats, Great and Little, 256;  
     — Field and Pasture, 256  
 Pedlars Fen, Great and Little,  
     261; — Marsh, 266  
 Peg Field .. .. . 279  
 Pegs, Lower, 279; — Land, 288  
 Pelhams, Little .. .. . 287  
 Pen, Little, 250; — Field, 279  
 Penitent Field .. .. . 266  
 Pennington Field .. .. . 273  
 Penny Brook, 268; — Field,  
     Great, 255; — Field, Great  
     and Little, 255; — Green  
     Garden, 272; — Mead, 251;  
     — Pot Field, 288; — Pots,  
     261, 288  
 Pens Field .. .. . 279  
 Pentels Field .. .. . 283  
 Pepper Mill Hill .. .. . 254  
 Peppers Croft, 288; — Field, 263  
 Percivals Ley .. .. . 279  
 Perry Croft, 288; — Field, 248,  
     251, 252, 255, 256, 259, 263,  
     278, 280, 286; — Garden  
     Field, 288; — Hill, 264<sup>1</sup>;  
     — Yard, 276  
 Perrys, 250; — Field, 256; —  
     Shot and Wood, 282  
 Pescot Field .. .. . 282  
 Pessiter .. .. . 257  
 Pest House Field, 251, 253, 280,  
     288  
 Petchy Reeds .. .. . 263  
 Peters Daw Field, 278; — Grove,  
     251; — Ley, 257  
 Pett Field .. .. . 290  
 Petticoat Meadow, 249; —  
     Pasture, 248

<sup>1</sup> 'Perry Fen,' 'Perry Field' and 'Peryfeld,' A.D. 1600.

- Pettits Field . . . . . 251  
 Petty Croft, 259, 280; — Field,  
     First, 279; — Field Wood,  
     279  
 Pevers Croft . . . . . 263  
 Pewters Field . . . . . 257  
 Philips Field . . . . . 261  
 Picotts Bars . . . . . 275, 277  
 Pick, The, 257; — Field, 279, 288  
 Picket Field . . . . . 282  
 Pickiss Field . . . . . 291  
 Picklands . . . . . 263  
 Pidgeons . . . . . 249  
 Pie Field, 245, 251; — Hawks,  
     245  
 Pies Ley Grove . . . . . 263  
 Pig Field, 276; — Hill, 266  
 Pigs Croft, 273; — Field, 256;  
     — Meadow, 279  
 Pightle, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252,  
     253, 254, 256, 258, 261, 262,  
     263, 266, 268, 269, 270, 272,  
     273, 274, 275, 278, 279, 280,  
     285, 287; —, The, 257, 259,  
     281, 288; —, First, 251;  
     —, Little, 244; —, Upper,  
     245; — Common, 283; —  
     Orchard, 278; — Pasture,  
     245, 248, 258  
 Pigley . . . . . 285  
 Pigram Pond . . . . . 251  
 Pikes Field . . . . . 256  
 Pike Mead . . . . . 256  
 Pile Field . . . . . 266  
 Pill Croft, 257; — Croft Grove,  
     257  
 Pillacork . . . . . 274  
 Pinching Ley . . . . . 255  
 Pinden Meadow . . . . . 288  
 Pinders . . . . . 253  
 Pink Ley . . . . . 268  
 Pinketts Hall . . . . . 255  
 Pinkstone Field . . . . . 261
- Pinnacle Fen . . . . . 288  
 Pinnings Hole and Ley . . . . . 257  
 Pipe-Shanks, Hither, 277; —,  
     Further and Middle, 275  
 Pipers, 257; — Field, 268, 286;  
     — Ley, 283; — Went, 287  
 Pisley, 258; — Field, 267  
 Pit Acre, 259; — Field, 256, 264,  
     275; — Field Spring, 251  
 Pitch Ley, Upper & Lower, 288  
 Pitches Hide . . . . . 247  
 Pitmore . . . . . 266  
 Pitmores Meadow . . . . . 266  
 Pitts, 248; — Croft, 288  
 Pixes, Great and Little, . . . . . 254  
 Plaice Field . . . . . 280  
 Plain Potts . . . . . 286  
 Plains . . . . . 250  
 Planis Close . . . . . 263  
 Plash Ley . . . . . 290  
 Plastow Wood . . . . . 261  
 Playts Field . . . . . 280  
 Pleasant . . . . . 257  
 Plough Brooks, 245; — Field,  
     247; — Peck, 257; —  
     Shallow, 253  
 Plowed Park, 251; — Round, 250<sup>a</sup>  
 Plowrights Field . . . . . 282  
 Plum Field, Great, 278; — Ley,  
     First and Second, 288; —  
     Tree Piece, 268  
 Plumhire Field . . . . . 290  
 Plumbers Field (Plummers) 261,  
     263  
 Plums . . . . . 250  
 Plunders Field . . . . . 261  
 Po Field . . . . . 258, 274  
 Poachers Field, 261; — Hop  
     Ground, 262  
 Pockey Hall . . . . . 247  
 Podds Further Field, 264; —  
     Great and Little and Poor,  
     275; — Oak Field, 288

- Poland, Great and Little, 259;  
— Wood, 259
- Polegate .. .. . 288
- Policy Field, 272; — Meadow,  
272
- Pollands Ley .. .. . 274
- Pollards, 258; — Ley, 274
- Pollbay Field and Meadow, 256
- Polley Field .. .. . 247
- Polleys, 250; — Etch, 272
- Pomforts, Higher, .. .. . 253
- Pond Astern, 283; — Pear  
Tree, 282
- Ponders, 253; —, Great, 251
- Ponds Croft .. .. . 278
- Ponters Field .. .. . 257
- Pool Field .. .. . 262
- Poolden, Little .. .. . 290
- Pooley Field and Wood 273
- Poor Acre, 254; — Bush, Hither,  
250; — Croft, 256; — Field,  
256, 280; — Folks, 280;  
— Ley, 257
- Popes, Hill, 268; — Hill Alder  
Car, 268; — Meadow, 268
- Poplar Croft, 262; — Field, 260,  
279, 280; — Ground, 255;  
— Pasture, 259; — Piece,  
263; — Went, 270
- Poppets .. .. . 268
- Poppladors .. .. . 249
- Poppy, Broom, .. .. . 254
- Port Croft .. .. . 278
- Porters Field, 251; — Mead, 256
- Portex Field .. .. . 277
- Portney, Great, .. .. . 254
- Post Hazells .. .. . 251
- Pot Croft, 250; — Kiln Meadow,  
259
- Potash, 276; — Croft, 288; —  
Field, 251, 256, 260, 263,  
273, 278, 286; — Ley, 256,  
260; — Wood, 272
- Potatoe Meadow .. .. . 288
- Potsheds, Hither & Further, 263
- Pots Wood .. .. . 260
- Pott Field .. .. . 290
- Potten Croft .. .. . 274
- Potters, 244; — Croft, 259; —  
Field, 254; — Hill, 258;  
— Plot, 283; — Well, 276
- Potton Field .. .. . 257
- Pouch Meadow .. .. . 278
- Pould Ley .. .. . 275
- Poulters, Little, 286; — Field,  
278, 280
- Pound Field, 248, 254, 257, 261,  
262, 263, 269, 273, 275, 277,  
285, 286, 289; — Green,  
264; — Meadow, 245, 274;  
— Piece, 274, 280; —,  
The Manor, 246
- Powl Field .. .. . 288
- Prails Pasture .. .. . 279
- Prentice Croft .. .. . 257
- Preslins, Little .. .. . 257
- Pretty Field .. .. . 273
- Price Field .. .. . 244, 250
- Prickness .. .. . 291
- Prickney .. .. . 291
- Pries Grove Field .. .. . 263
- Priest Croft, 257; — Field, 259
- Priests Field .. .. . 256
- Priestly Field, 256; — Wood  
Field, 280
- Prince Field, Great & Little, 256
- Princes Field .. .. . 259, 279
- Priors Field, 256; — Mead and  
Meadow, 251; — Wood  
Field, 255
- Priory Piece .. .. . 288
- Pritchards Mead .. .. . 261
- Private Field .. .. . 256
- Proud, Great and Little, .. 281
- Providence Field .. .. . 256
- Pudding Links .. .. . 282

- Pudney Field, 278; — Wood, 255  
 Pulchers . . . . . 257  
 Pulcroft . . . . . 249  
 Pullers Field . . . . . 256  
 Pump Field, 245; — Wood,  
     251; — Meadow, 254  
 Punts, 254<sup>1</sup>; — Field, 266; —  
     Piece, 262; — Wood, 259  
 Puppets . . . . . 262  
 Puppy Dog Field . . . . . 263  
 Purkes Field . . . . . 279  
 Pursted Field . . . . . 286  
 Put Croft . . . . . 249  
 Putley Lands . . . . . 269  
 Puttock End Field . . . . . 249  
 Puttocks Ley, Great and Little,  
     263  
 Puzzey, Broad and Long, 280  
 Pyes Ley, 262; — Mead, 256  
  
 Quaking Bottom . . . . . 251  
 Quarms, First and Second, 255  
 Quay Meadow . . . . . 246  
 Queach, 244, 260, 261; —, The,  
     259; — by Hearn Wood,  
     259; — Field, 244  
 Quilters Meadow . . . . . 247  
 Quindal Hole . . . . . 280  
 Quoit Field, 286; — Ley, 251  
 Quoits, Upper & Lowe, 257, 279  
 Quys Field . . . . . 286  
  
 Rabbit Burrow, 278; — Hill,  
     261; — Hill Bottom, 268  
 Race Field . . . . . 268  
 Rack Field, 250; — Pasture,  
     247, 248  
 Rackem, Great, . . . . . 273  
 Ragged Spit Field . . . . . 288  
 Rags Field, 286, 290; — and  
     Bags, 260; — and Bags Field,  
     260; — and Bags Wood, 263  
  
 Raily Meadow . . . . . 282  
 Rain Wood . . . . . 282  
 Rainbow, 288; — Field, 253,  
     255, 256, 257, 261, 272, 273,  
     277, 280, 281, 288; — Dines,  
     278; — Noakes, 272  
 Raisins . . . . . 276, 280  
 Ram Meadow . . . . . 249  
 Ramacre (Ram Acre) Wood 259,  
     262  
 Ramages . . . . . 259  
 Rams Croft, Great, 273; —  
     Head (ar. 15a.) 257; —  
     Mead Head, 257  
 Ramsey Valley, 287; — Great  
     and Little, 264<sup>2</sup>  
 Randells . . . . . 249  
 Rands, Further, 280; — Close,  
     288; — Field, 270  
 Range Hill Pasture . . . . . 274  
 Rangers Mead . . . . . 261  
 Rank Pightle, Little, . . . . . 256  
 Ratlings Ley . . . . . 257  
 Rattles Down Ley . . . . . 286  
 Raven, Upper and Lower, 256;  
     — Hall Meadow, 282  
 Ravens Pasture, 276; — Down  
     Pasture, 268; — Stock, 282  
 Ravins . . . . . 280  
 Raw Field . . . . . 260  
 Rawes Field . . . . . 286  
 Rawling Green . . . . . 257  
 Rawlingsons Field . . . . . 257  
 Raylands . . . . . 250  
 Raymond Field . . . . . 256  
 Rayne Field, 272; — Hatch  
     Wood, 261  
 Rayners, 272; — Croft, 264; —  
     Garden, 253; — Wood, 261  
 Raynes Hop Ground . . . . . 261  
 Raynhams . . . . . 268  
 Raynolds . . . . . 290

<sup>1</sup> 'Punts Acre,' in Henny Magna, A.D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Ramsey Valley,' A.D. 1600.



- Rays, Great and Little, 256; — Hill, 268; — Hop Ground, 263
- Reading, 259, 286; — Hill, 286; — Pasture, 276; — Wood Field, 282
- Readings .. .. . 258, 263
- Reads Pieces .. .. . 286
- Red Beard Wood, 290; — Caps, 288; — Field, 263; — House Ley, 263; — Mead, 280; — Robins Pightle, 256
- Redbridge Meadow .. .. . 258
- Redheads, Great and Little, 257
- Redland .. .. . 251, 273
- Redlands .. .. . 250
- Reed Meadow .. .. . 270
- Reeding, Great and Further, 278; —, Upper and Lower, 253, 256, 268; —, White, 253; — Field, 244; — Ley, 256; — Mead, 244; — Wood, 288
- Reedings, 252, 278, 280; — Great and Little, 250, 276; — Field, 273<sup>1</sup>; — Grove, 250; — Ley, 288
- Reedons .. .. . 269
- Reeds Meadow .. .. . 281
- Reeves, 268; — Further, 274; — Little, 248; — Field, 273
- Rent, Great and Little, 259; — Field, 259; — Park, 257; — Bit Wood, 263
- Resting Stool Field .. .. . 251
- Revels Field .. .. . 279
- Reyland .. .. . 290
- Reynolds Field .. .. . 278
- Riars Field .. .. . 247
- Rice Croft, 280; — Field, Upper and Lower, 257; — Bottom Ley, 286
- Rich Field .. .. . 256
- Richardsons, 251; — Field, 245
- Rick Field .. .. . 285
- Ricket Ley, Low, .. .. . 288
- Ricketts Fen .. .. . 288
- Riddings, Long, .. .. . 262
- Ridge Field, 278; — Pightle, 257
- Ridgewell, Upper and Lower, 290; — Field, 276; — Pasture, 250; — Park Field, 250
- Ridley, 259; — Great and Little, 277
- Ridleys .. .. . 259
- Ridney Field .. .. . 275
- Ries Mead .. .. . 280
- Riley Field .. .. . 280
- Rim Acre .. .. . 256
- Rimkins .. .. . 254
- Rims, 250; —, Barren, 250
- Ringates Field .. .. . 278
- Ringers Field .. .. . 261
- Ringewood Field .. .. . 259
- Rises .. .. . 270
- Rivenhall Meadow .. .. . 282
- River Field .. .. . 251
- Rivers Hall .. .. . 248
- Roach Pond Field, 253; — Pond Ley, 280
- Roberts Ley .. .. . 281
- Robertsons Field or Little Dents 257
- Robins, Great and Little, 288; —, Old, 276; —, Round, 288; — Croft, 273, 291; — Wood Field, 263
- Robs Wood .. .. . 253
- Rockolds Field .. .. . 256
- Rodbridge .. .. . 252
- Rodge, Little, .. .. . 281
- Rods, Great, .. .. . 288
- Roger Down .. .. . 279

<sup>1</sup> 'Reading,' A.D. 1600.

- Rogers Field, 272; — Meadow, 276
- Roland Field . . . . . 262
- Rolfes Field . . . . . 256
- Rolley Field . . . . . 256
- Rollingsons Field . . . . . 281
- Rollingstone Pasture . . . . . 281
- Rolls Croft . . . . . 289
- Rolp Field . . . . . 288
- Roman Field . . . . . 248, 249
- Romney Marsh . . . . . 288
- Rood Piece . . . . . 244
- Roods, Short, . . . . . 248
- Rook Hill . . . . . 266
- Rookard Wood . . . . . 247
- Rookers Bottom . . . . . 274
- Rookery . . . . . 248, 256
- Rook Wood Field . . . . . 257
- Rookwoods . . . . . 263, 280
- Root Field . . . . . 251
- Rose Ash, 287; — Field, Upper and Lower, 289; — Land, 282; — Ley, 257; — Garden (ar. 3a.), 251
- Rosemary Pasture . . . . . 262
- Roses, Little, 289; —, Upper and Lower, 247; —, Upper and Middle, 271
- Rosheds, Upper and Great, 244
- Roshet Close . . . . . 280
- Roshua, 287; —, Long, 287
- Rosley . . . . . 257
- Rosy Field . . . . . 269
- Rotten End, 288; — End Field, 288
- Round Croft, 248, 257, 282; — Field, 262, 268, 270, 286; — Field, Short, 244; — Hill, 266; — Ley, 245, 247, 249, 288, 290; — Mead, 280; — Meadow, 247, 248, 249, 251, 253, 257, 258, 259, 263, 268, 276, 281, 285; — Pasture, 247, 250, 256, 264, 271, 276; — Wood, 254, 259; — Hill Field, 261; — House Park, 279
- Roundabout . . . . . 245, 288
- Roundabouts . . . . . 274
- Rovers Field . . . . . 244
- Rowlands, 245; —, Great and Little, 288; — Grove, 282.
- Rowleps . . . . . 263
- Rowley, 257, 279, 283; —, Little, 257, 263
- Rowleys, 280; — Field, 273<sup>1</sup>
- Roydon . . . . . 283
- Royston . . . . . 250
- Rucketts . . . . . 251
- Ruckwood, Upper & Lower, 277
- Ruffles Little Grove, 280; — Pightle, 280
- Rugermans, Great & Little, 256
- Rugged Ley . . . . . 261
- Ruggles Field . . . . . 257
- Rumbles, Hither & Further, 257
- Rumlet Meadow . . . . . 288
- Rumley Wood . . . . . 275, 277
- Rumsey, Great and Little, 280
- Runner Park . . . . . 255
- Runs . . . . . 281
- Runt, Lower, etc. . . . . 286
- Runts . . . . . 257
- Rush Bottom, 247, 291; — Field, 281; — Mead, 256; — Meadow, 245, 248, 249, 261, 274, 285, 288; — Moor, 280; — Pasture, 252
- Rushes . . . . . 257
- Rushy Bottom, 256, 262, 273; — Ley, 255, 279; — Mead, 257; — Meadow, 288; — Moor, 256; Piece, 263
- Rushwood . . . . . 276

<sup>1</sup> 'Rowley Field,' A.D. 1600.

- Russells Wood . . . . . 272  
 Russetts Pasture . . . . . 272  
 Rusts Wood Field . . . . . 279  
 Rutlands Mead and Pasture 256  
 Rye Acre, 280; — Croft, 259,  
 261, 268; — Etch, 277; —  
 Fen, 287; — Field, 251,  
 262, 270, 274; — Hill, 266;  
 — Hills, 261, 278; — Hills  
 Field, 261; — Hyde, 277;  
 — Ley, 248; — Meadow  
 Piece, 263; — Ox, 247;  
 — Park, 288  
 Rye-Grass, 275; — Field, 256,  
 257, 261, 278, 288; — Ley,  
 254; Pasture, 289  
 Ryelands, 286; — Pasture, 247  
  
 Saches . . . . . 259, 273  
 Saddletons . . . . . 262  
 Sadds Field . . . . . 256  
 Sadlers . . . . . 254, 259  
 Saffron Field, 244; — Garden  
 (5*a.*), 288; — Ground, 257;  
 — Shot, 277  
 Sages Field . . . . . 281  
 Saggs, Part of, . . . . . 276  
 Sailing Field . . . . . 280  
 Sale Field (ar.) . . . . . 282  
 Sallow Ground, 261, 263; —  
 Hedge Pasture, 272; —  
 Pond Field, 268  
 Salmons Field . . . . . 257  
 Salt Pasture . . . . . 251  
 Salters, Upper and Lower, 282;  
 — Piece, 263  
 Salwood Field . . . . . 261  
 Sampsons Hyde, 253; — Side,  
 253  
 Sand Hill . . . . . 264  
 Sandals, Great and Little, 279  
 Sandbury Hills . . . . . 260  
 Sandercofts . . . . . 268  
 Sandford, 261; — Piece, 260  
 Sandles . . . . . 286  
 Sandpit Field, 244, 246, 259, 263,  
 268, 269, 274, 282, 289; —  
 Ley, 244, 262; — Pasture,  
 257, 274; — Pightle, 282  
 Sandpits . . . . . 251  
 Sandy Field, 257, 263, 273; —  
 Hill, 288; — Hill Field,  
 262  
 Sandyards (ar. 13*a.*) . . . . . 280  
 Sandys Field . . . . . 245  
 Sare Croft . . . . . 254  
 Sauls Pasture . . . . . 280  
 Saunders Field . . . . . 288  
 Saundry Field . . . . . 257  
 Sauter Field . . . . . 245  
 Savage Field . . . . . 289  
 Savilles Field . . . . . 247  
 Sayers Field . . . . . 257  
 Scales, 258; —, Piece in, 258  
 Scalt Grove . . . . . 245  
 Scatcheons . . . . . 244  
 Scotch Jennys Field, 251; —  
 Pasture, 262 . . . . . 262  
 Scotchmans Piece . . . . . 251  
 Scots Ley, 263; — Pasture, 275  
 Scowneys, Great and Little, 289  
 Scraggs . . . . . 244  
 Scrancheons Green . . . . . 257  
 Screwgates . . . . . 251  
 Scriveners, Long, 289; — Field,  
 259  
 Searland . . . . . 259  
 Searles Field, 257; — Orchard,  
 256  
 Searling, A piece in, . . . . . 259  
 Seatons Meadow . . . . . 250  
 Sedge Croft . . . . . 270  
 Sedgirsts . . . . . 288  
 Seedman . . . . . 257  
 Segmore, Great and Little, 259  
 Self Sown Field . . . . . 279

- Serjeants Close, 262; — Croft, 257; — Pasture, 268  
 Session Field, Great & Little, 272  
 Sewells . . . . . 255  
 Shackle Field . . . . . 279  
 Shadows, Great and Little, 249  
 Shalford Hill Field . . . . . 288  
 Shalgrave Meadow . . . . . 276  
 Shammers Ley . . . . . 247  
 Shanks . . . . . 244  
 Shardloes Wood . . . . . 260  
 Sharp Acre, 254; — Park, 287  
 Sharps . . . . . 257  
 Shave Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Shaving Shot Pasture . . . . . 256  
 Shaws . . . . . 247  
 Shaylers, 245; —, Great and Little, 250  
 Shear Croft, Great . . . . . 251  
 Shear Meadow . . . . . 258  
 Sheds Ley . . . . . 263  
 Sheep Croft, 257, 286; — Croft, 7-acre, 291; — Cote, 249, 255, 259, 262, 268, 270, 277, 288; — Cote, 8-acre, 249; — Cote Field, 277; — Cote Ley, 257, 288; — Wash, Great, 247  
 Sheepland, Great<sup>1</sup> . . . . . 264  
 Sheeps Pightle . . . . . 279  
 Sheer Ley Bottom . . . . . 257  
 Sheering . . . . . 247  
 Sheerings, Great, 278; — Pasture, 247  
 Shelly Field . . . . . 286  
 Shelving Bridge Mead . . . . . 282  
 Shepherds Croft, 257; — Cross, 256; — Land, 276, 279; — Pasture, 276  
 Shermans . . . . . 283  
 Shillingford . . . . . 249  
 Shimbords . . . . . 288  
 Shimboros, Part of, 260; — Hop Ground, 260  
 Shiners Pasture . . . . . 247  
 Shipley, 287; — Field, Great and Little, 279; — Wood, 279  
 Shocrouts . . . . . 261  
 Shoemaker Pasture . . . . . 279  
 Shooters . . . . . 273, 277  
 Shoots Bottom . . . . . 260  
 Shoplands Field . . . . . 261  
 Short Croft . . . . . 258, 276, 279  
 Shortland Field . . . . . 251  
 Shortlands, 250, 251, 253, 256, 257, 280  
 Shot, Upper . . . . . 279, 280  
 Shoulder-of-Mutton Field, 253, 288; — Wood, 251  
 Shoulders, Further, 278; — Field, 278  
 Shrags, Great and Little, 288  
 Shrubs . . . . . 258  
 Shubs Field . . . . . 266  
 Shuttle, 10-acre, 259; —, Upper, 259  
 Shuttlewoods Meadow . . . . . 280  
 Sibley Croft . . . . . 285  
 Sidehill Field, 261; — Pasture, 244, 266  
 Sideys Field . . . . . 287  
 Siggs . . . . . 291  
 Silly Pit Field, Great and Little, 261  
 Silver Edge, 266; — Ley, 256  
 Simkins Field . . . . . 287  
 Simon Field . . . . . 263  
 Simons, 281; —, Great and Little, 257, 281  
 Simpsons, 288; — Croft, 280; — Pasture, 274  
 Sims, 288; — Croft, 276  
 Singers Meadow . . . . . 261  
 Singleton . . . . . 257

<sup>1</sup> 'Shepland Over Went *alias* Horse Pastures,' A. D. 1600.

- Singoes Field . . . . . 269  
 Sippets . . . . . 280  
 Sixpenny, Great and Little, 280  
 Skip Hill Valance . . . . . 263  
 Skingles Wood . . . . . 256  
 Skinners Field, 256; — Meadow,  
 253  
 Skippers, 269; — Meadow, 248  
 Skippets, Black, Upper and  
 Lower, 256  
 Skits Hill . . . . . 253  
 Skutlands . . . . . 256  
 Slade, 249, 252, 267, 276; —,  
 The, 263; —, Hilly, 249;  
 —, The Upper, 254; —,  
 Upper and Lower, 251; —  
 Field, 247, 261, 279; —  
 Hide, 247; — Meadow, 248,  
 276; — Pasture, 258, 267,  
 279; — Pasture, Long,  
 274  
 Slades Meadow . . . . . 248, 257  
 Shalgroves . . . . . 276  
 Slampsey (or Spamsey) Wood  
 261  
 Slansey Folly . . . . . 253  
 Slate Ley . . . . . 263  
 Slaters Piece . . . . . 263  
 Slaughter Field, 256, 286; —  
 House Mead, 252  
 Slaughters Field . . . . . 277  
 Sleckford Vent . . . . . 273  
 Slecksins Pasture . . . . . 274  
 Slip, 278, 288, 290, 291; —, The,  
 250, 256, 257, 259, 262, 263,  
 275, 277, 280, 288, 290; —,  
 Long, 253, 256; —, Upper,  
 250; — Fen, Long, 268;  
 — Field, 256, 257, 279  
 Slipes, Part of the . . . . . 275  
 Slomans . . . . . 288  
 Slomers, Great and Little, 288  
 Slough Field, 244, 251, 256, 262;  
 — Meadow, 259  
 Sloughs, Long, . . . . . 244  
 Slow Field, 280, 286; — Park, 244  
 Slug Budge Wood . . . . . 262  
 Slugs Acre, 256; — Field, 257  
 Sluice Pond Field . . . . . 251, 261  
 Slumber Ley . . . . . 288  
 Sly Croft . . . . . 245  
 Small Bridge, Great & Small, 254  
 Smarts Field, 262; — and  
 Lawrences, 262  
 Smealey Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Smees Meadow . . . . . 257  
 Smith Croft, 268; — Downs,  
 268; — Field, 257, 262, 286  
 Smithfield, Upper & Lower, 290  
 Smiths Close, 256; — Field, 248,  
 286, 288; — Stubble, 257  
 Smock Field . . . . . 244  
 Smooths Ley . . . . . 277  
 Smoothy Basket, 279; — Ley,  
 278  
 Smythers Pasture . . . . . 250  
 Smythies Field . . . . . 269  
 Snade Field, First & Second, 253  
 Snail Croft, 268; — Field Ley,  
 257  
 Snails Croft<sup>1</sup> . . . . . 264  
 Snakes Field, 256; — Island, 244  
 Snares Hills . . . . . 280  
 Snells Field . . . . . 290  
 Snipe Land Field . . . . . 273  
 Snipes, 287; — Field, 287  
 Snow Hill . . . . . 280  
 Snows Field . . . . . 256  
 Snowtons . . . . . 246  
 Snugs Hill Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Snux Hills . . . . . 249  
 Soldiers Field . . . . . 261  
 Solomans Field, Great and  
 Little, 257

<sup>1</sup> 'Snail Croftes,' A.D. 1600

- Sorrells Pasture . . . . . 282  
 Sortrings Meadow . . . . . 287  
 Sour Ley, 257; — Meadow,  
     258, 267  
 South Field . . . . . 245, 248, 256  
 Southey Ley . . . . . 293  
 Sovereigns . . . . . 262  
 Sow Back, 257; — Pits, 266  
 Sowters, 278; — Field, 288  
 Spadelles Park . . . . . 274  
 Spanish Field . . . . . 269  
 Sparkes, 276; — Field, 263  
 Sparlings, 256; — Field, 256  
 Sparrocks, Ley . . . . . 286  
 Sparrow Croft, 244; — Brook, 287  
 Sparrows, 290; — Croft, 257;  
     — Grove, 254  
 Spear Plot . . . . . 268  
 Speer Ley . . . . . 262  
 Spencers . . . . . 277  
 Spenceleys Field . . . . . 273  
 Spendall Bottom . . . . . 262  
 Spice Acres . . . . . 281  
 Spicers . . . . . 248, 249  
 Spices . . . . . 247  
 Spikes Piece . . . . . 274  
 Spinage, Great . . . . . 260  
 Spindles Hill . . . . . 251  
 Spinney, 263; —, Little, 263  
 Spiggins, 244; —, Great and  
     Little, 273; — Wood, 273  
 Spilgroves Meadow . . . . . 285  
 Split Croft . . . . . 269  
 Spittels . . . . . 261  
 Splint Field . . . . . 258  
 Split, Home and Further, 250  
 Spong, The, . . . . . 273  
 Spongs . . . . . 264  
 Spooners Field . . . . . 256  
 Spout Field, 256, 266; — Moor,  
     280  
 Sprat Field . . . . . 246, 253  
 Sprigs Field, 259; — Orchard, 288  
 Spring, The, 251, 256, 288; —  
     Field, 249, 251, 262, 275, 276,  
     277, 278, 280, 281, 282, 286;  
     — Close, 261; — Mead,  
     Upper and Lower, 257;  
     — Meadow, 249, 250; —  
     Wood, 256  
 Spur Field . . . . . 266  
 Spudhocks . . . . . 266  
 Sputtocks Mead . . . . . 244  
 Squally Field . . . . . 278  
 Square Croft, 253; — Meadow,  
     286  
 Squires Field . . . . . 268  
 Stains Field . . . . . 256  
 Stairhole Mead . . . . . 262  
 Stait (or Start), The, . . . . . 257  
 Stallingers . . . . . 248  
 Stambourne Croft, 276; —  
     Pasture, 279  
 Stammage, Two-acre . . . . . 249  
 Stamment Croft . . . . . 263  
 Stammer, Middle, etc., . . . . . 259  
 Stammers Land, 288; — Mea-  
     dow, 285  
 Stanes Meadow . . . . . 268  
 Stanley, Great & Little, 245, 280;  
     — Upper and Lower, 273<sup>1</sup>  
 Stannards . . . . . 252  
 Stanton, 276; — Field, 256  
 Stapleton Pasture . . . . . 286  
 Stapletons . . . . . 290  
 Starlings, 263; — Piece, 280  
 Starts, Hither and Further, 288;  
     — Tye, 255  
 Starve Goose, 257; — Grove,  
     250; — Gut Field, 263  
 Stavers Field . . . . . 288  
 Stebbing Field, 269; — Green  
     Field, 280; — Ley, 248,  
     257; — Pasture, 256

<sup>1</sup> 'Stanley Hall Manor,' A.D. 1600.

- Stebbins . . . . . 255  
 Steed, The, . . . . . 272  
 Steel Yards . . . . . 263  
 Steels Barn Field . . . . . 249  
 Steelyard Field . . . . . 255  
 Steeple Field . . . . . 269  
 Stephens Field . . . . . 251  
 Stetch Meadow . . . . . 274  
 Stettles Meadow . . . . . 248  
 Stevens Field, 257; — Ley, 279;  
     — Piece, 259  
 Stewards, 264; — Ditch, 250;  
     — Fen, 288  
 Stile Field, High, . . . . . 251  
 Stilemans Wood . . . . . 253  
 Stiles, Great, . . . . . 280  
 Stisted Field, 261; — Ley, 251  
 Stisted Mead . . . . . 280  
 Stock Burrow, 257; — Field,  
     256, 261, 278, 288; — Ley,  
     280; — Pasture, 256, 263  
 Stockholds Field . . . . . 257  
 Stockhouse Pasture . . . . . 275  
 Stockland . . . . . 257  
 Stockley Meadow . . . . . 278  
 Stockness Field . . . . . 257  
 Stocks Field, 280; — Meadow,  
     257  
 Stonards . . . . . 276  
 Stone Field, 244, 266, 270; —  
     Hill, 252, 286; — Hook,  
     257; — Meadow, 255; —  
     Daw Ash Ground, 278  
 Stoneation Field, 257; — Grove  
     257  
 Stonehall Field, 280; — Ley,  
     287  
 Stonehouse Field . . . . . 289  
 Stones, Great and Little, 254;  
     — Field, 273, 289; —  
     Garden, 280; — Wood,  
     259  
 Stonhams . . . . . 254
- Stony Croft, 277; — Field, 263,  
     268; — Field, Great and  
     Little, 248; — Land Field,  
     256; — Lands, 256, 279,  
     281, 283; — Ley, 251, 260;  
     — Leys, 261  
 Storeys Field . . . . . 276  
 Storks Meadow . . . . . 263  
 Stours Field, 245, 247, 258, 264;  
     —, Little, 245  
 Stow Pightle . . . . . 256  
 Strait Lane Field . . . . . 256  
 Straits Field, 256; — Ley, 278  
 Stranglands . . . . . 258  
 Strawberry Field, 279; — Ley,  
     251  
 Straws . . . . . 247  
 Street Field . . . . . 251, 275  
 Stub Croft, 253; — Field, 268,  
     282; — Shot Field, 253  
 Stubble Field . . . . . 279  
 Stubbing, Great and Little, 263  
 Stubbings, 256; — Green, 260,  
     288  
 Stubbs, Middle, 257; —, 12-  
     acre, 257; — Ley, 257  
 Stubland . . . . . 250  
 Stubleys . . . . . 261  
 Stulp Barn Field . . . . . 260  
 Stulphs Field . . . . . 263, 281  
 Stulps (ar. 8a.), 249, 291, (Part  
     of) 283  
 Stump Croft, 279, 286; — Hill  
     Pasture, 261  
 Sturbitch . . . . . 257  
 Subcroft . . . . . 263  
 Sucklings Garden . . . . . 260  
 Sudbury, Little, 259, 268; —  
     Field, 254, 289  
 Sudrums . . . . . 263  
 Suffle, Upper and Lower, 280  
 Sugars Field, Great & Little, 263  
 Suke Winifred . . . . . 280

- Surgate Field .. .. . 256  
 Suttle Field .. .. . 273  
 Swains.. .. . 254  
 Swallow Field .. .. . 289  
 Swallows .. .. . 256, 264<sup>1</sup>  
 Swamper.. .. . 244  
 Swampus .. .. . 266  
 Swampy, 264; — Field, 244  
 Swans Nest Pasture, 283; —  
     Pightle Pasture, 248  
 Swanstead Field .. .. . 282  
 Sweating Field .. .. . 256  
 Sweats Field .. .. . 256  
 Sweaty Old Moor .. .. . 256  
 Sweet, 257; — Leys, 286  
 Sweetings, Hither & Further, 251  
 Swelling Field, 286; —, Upper  
     and Lower, 286  
 Swetney, Great, 260; — Field,  
     Great, 263  
 Swill House Meadow .. . 257  
 Syers Land .. .. . 248  
  
 Tabors, Great and Little, 289  
 Tack Minster Grove .. . 283  
 Tagley Field .. .. . 279  
 Tainter Field, 248, 251; —  
     Pasture, 283 (*see also* Tenter)  
 Tainty Field, 257; — Meadow,  
     249  
 Tally, First, Middle, &c., 256  
 Tanners Croft, 283; — Field,  
     251, 253; — Ley, Great and  
     Little, 251; — Pightle, 257  
 Tansey Croft .. .. . 254  
 Tanter Field .. .. . 255, 274  
 Tapers Field .. .. . 269  
 Tare Croft, 261; — Ley, Little,  
     257; — Pightle, 280  
 Taverners, 262; — Field, 261, 269  
 Taylors Croft, 251; — Field, 256,  
     278, 279; — Pasture, 261  
  
 Tazell Field .. .. . 278  
 Teazle, Great and Little, 288;  
     — Field, 256, 288  
 Tedious, Great, 282; — Field,  
     282  
 Teds Field .. .. . 291  
 Temple Barn, 278; — Croft,  
     274; — Wood, 282  
 Ten Pound Pasture .. . 261  
 Tenter Field, 253, 255; — Field  
     Pasture, 262; — Ley, 278  
     (*see also* Tainter)  
 Terry Field, 261, 274; — Pightle,  
     282  
 Terrys Piece Wood .. . 282  
 Tey's Mead .. .. . 275  
 Thatchers .. .. . 277  
 Thicken Acre Coxhill .. . 261  
 Thickett .. .. . 256  
 Thimble Field .. .. . 264  
 Thirley Field .. .. . 288  
 Thistle Field .. .. . 266  
 Thistledown .. .. . 248  
 Thistly Bottom, 249; — Breasts,  
     279; — Croft, 247, 290;  
     — Field, 244, 251, 252, 253,  
     255, 256, 257, 259, 261, 272,  
     279, 289; — Green, 251; —  
     Green Field, 251; — Ley,  
     283; — Mead, 275; —  
     Wigley, 271  
 Thompsons .. .. . 276  
 Thong Pasture .. .. . 255  
 Thongs .. .. . 277  
 Thorley, 288; —, Great and  
     Lower, 288; — Field,  
     263  
 Thorn Croft, 254; — Croft  
     Pightle, 264<sup>2</sup>; — Field,  
     261; — Pasture, 274  
 Thornes, Great and Little, 253  
 Thorney Park .. .. . 254

<sup>1</sup> 'Le Swallowe,' A. D. 1600.<sup>2</sup> 'Thorne Croft,' A. D. 1600



- Thousand Acres (*5a.3r.22p.*) 247,  
 (*oa.or.17p.*) 248, (*oa.2r.10p.*)  
 250, (*oa.1r.17p.*) 270, (*1a.2r.*  
*14p.*) 282  
 Three Chimneys, Great and  
 Little, 250  
 Three-Corner Field, 244, 245,  
 256, 257, 259, 260, 263, 285,  
 286, 288; — Lawn, 280;  
 — Ley, 247, 273; — Marsh,  
 259; — Meadow, 251; —  
 Dock Acre, 257  
 Three-Corners, 253, 255, 256,  
 257, 264, 281, 288  
 Three-Gate Ley . . . . 257  
 Three-Quarter Field . . . . 263  
 Thrift Croft . . . . . 283  
 Thunderpits . . . . . 261  
 Thurst Wood . . . . . 257  
 Thurstons . . . . . 254, 276, 280  
 Tibbs, Little and Lower, 252;  
 — Meadow, 249  
 Tiffens Ley . . . . . 262  
 Tilbury Field, 245, 285; —  
 Hedge Wood, 247  
 Tile Barn Field, 251; — Croft,  
 272; — Kiln, 280; — Kiln  
 Field, 263  
 Tiles . . . . . 276  
 Tilt Croft . . . . . 254  
 Timber Ley . . . . . 251  
 Timmocks, 266; —, Great and  
 Little, 255  
 Tin Meadow . . . . . 259, 276  
 Tinkers Chase, 251; — Close,  
 263; — Croft, 257; — Field,  
 263, 278; — Meadow, 257  
 Tinks Field . . . . . 277  
 Tint Croft, Great, . . . . 257  
 Tinter Croft . . . . . 280  
 Tithe Dock-Acre . . . . . 257  
 Tithe-free, Part of, 276; —  
 Field, 245  
 Toft Ley . . . . . 263  
 Togs and Tups . . . . . 285  
 Toll Dish Field . . . . . 268  
 Toldish Hall Field . . . . . 268  
 Tom Clarks Field . . . . . 248  
 Tomboy Field . . . . . 288  
 Tomboys . . . . . 263  
 Tomlands, 6-acre, . . . . 276  
 Tommy Lane Field . . . . . 288  
 Toms, Great and Little, 257; —  
 Croft, 289; — Field, 267;  
 — Ley, 288  
 Tongue Wood . . . . . 257  
 Toothill Field . . . . . 261  
 Topland . . . . . 244  
 Toppesfield . . . . . 256  
 Torps Field . . . . . 256  
 Tortories (or Tortoise) Field,  
 First and Second, 263  
 Totman Mead . . . . . 263  
 Tottles, Great and Little, 257,  
 287; — Field, 288  
 Tower Field . . . . . 251  
 Towerlands Meadow . . . . 251  
 Town Field, 251, 253, 257, 261,  
 279, 280, 282, 286, 289;  
 — Land, 283; — Land  
 Field, 262; — Ley, 263;  
 — Meadow, 257, 288; —  
 Pasture, 261, 273; —  
 Wood, 288  
 Travellers . . . . . 250  
 Traylands . . . . . 276  
 Treadsells Wood . . . . . 288  
 Tredgwells, Third, . . . . 263  
 Trefoil Field . . . . . 257  
 Trevit Field . . . . . 253  
 Trews Field . . . . . 280  
 Trickets Pasture . . . . . 258  
 Trip Field . . . . . 247  
 Troublesome . . . . . 250  
 Trucketts, Great and Little, 288  
 Trumple . . . . . 282

- Trumps, Little, 281; — Pasture, 281  
 Trunley Meadow .. .. 257  
 Tubbs, 267; — Queach, 267; — Pasture, 267  
 Tuckland, Great, 259; — Field, 259  
 Tuff Tree Field .. .. 286  
 Tuffins Field .. .. 258  
 Tuft, 263; — Field, 263  
 Tufts Meadow and Field .. 279  
 Tumblers, Upper and Lower, 255  
 Tumbleys, Great, .. .. 282  
 Tunbridge Field .. 251, 261  
 Tunleys, Little, .. .. 282  
 Tups Piece .. .. 274  
 Turban Field .. .. 270  
 Turbits .. .. 276  
 Turncoates .. .. 276  
 Turners Field, 249, 251, 256, 278; — Meadow, 281; — Piece, 271  
 Turning Bit .. .. 278  
 Turnpike Field .. .. 251  
 Turpitts Hop Ground .. 262  
 Turtles, Great and Little, 282  
 Tweeds Field .. .. 278  
 Twigs .. .. 280  
 Twillage, Long, .. .. 289  
 Twinstead Croft .. .. 264  
 Twist Harts .. .. 257  
 Twisted Field .. .. 251  
 Tye, Part of the, 259; — Field, 286; — Field, Great and Little, 254; — Field, Upper and Little, 249; — Pightle, 248; — Pond Field, 253; — Wood, 254  
 Tylers, 250, 261; — Ash Ground, 261; — Field, 256; — Ley, 273  
 Ugley Field .. .. 273  
 Underwoods .. .. 253  
 Unwins .. .. 257  
 Uplands Piece .. .. 256  
 Upsets .. .. 263  
 Valance, Great and Long, 263; — Field, 244  
 Vale Meadow .. .. 286  
 Valey .. .. 279  
 Valley, 256; —, The, 262; —, Hither, 254; —, Croft, 255; — Green, 255; — Mead, 257  
 Vastly .. .. 280  
 Vauxhall Hop Ground .. 262  
 Vents—see Elm, also Sleckford  
 Vicarage, Great and Little, 247; — Meadow, 246  
 Vicars Land .. .. 280  
 Vickney .. .. 280  
 Vinets .. .. 244  
 Vineyard, Ox, .. .. 253  
 Violets, Great and Little, 286  
 Wabeys Field .. .. 289  
 Wadding, Upper & Lower, 276; — Field, 276  
 Wades Garden .. .. 278  
 Wakelands Meadow .. 281  
 Wakelings Field .. .. 288  
 Wakes Croft .. .. 247  
 Walfords, Great and Little, 257  
 Walk Field .. .. 256  
 Walkers Ley .. .. 280  
 Wales, Little, 272; — Field, 272  
 Wallis, Great and Little, 256  
 Walls Field .. .. 251, 269  
 Walnut-Tree Field, 256, 263, 273, 274, 281, 282; — Mead, 257; — Meadow, 248; — Pasture, 252, 276; — Yard, 250

- Walnuts Croft .. .. 263  
 Walters .. .. 248  
 Waltons Croft .. .. 270  
 Wannells Field, 280; — Mead,  
 280  
 War Field, Upper, Middle and  
 Green, 280  
 Ward Meadow, Little, .. 255  
 Warden, Further,.. .. 248  
 Wards, 252; — Field, 261, 263;  
 — Pasture, 261  
 Warmans Field .. .. 273  
 Warmings Field .. .. 256  
 Warners, Great, 244; — Field,  
 Glebe-piece in, 244  
 Warning Meadow .. .. 263  
 Warnings Field .. .. 263  
 Warplot .. .. 258  
 Warren, The, 257, 272; —  
 Field, 262, 278; — Marsh,  
 278  
 Warrens, 262; — Croft, 263;  
 — Field, 288; — Meadow,  
 256, 285  
 Wases, Little, .. .. 257  
 Waseys Barn Field .. 257  
 Wash Field, 261; — Hill, 255;  
 — Ley Pasture, 274; —  
 Meadow, 258, 276; —  
 Pasture, 274; — Piece,  
 276  
 Washen Field .. .. 247  
 Washes Field.. .. 273  
 Watch Acre, 261; — House  
 Field, 256; — House Grove,  
 256  
 Water Dod, 270; — Log, 280;  
 — Slade Field, 281  
 Watermere, Great .. .. 286  
 Wathen Field .. .. 247  
 Watsons, 253, 257, 274, 277; —  
 Croft, 288  
 Watts Field .. .. 250  
 Waver Field .. .. 289  
 Way Field, 253; — Field  
 Spring, 253; — Pightle,  
 248  
 Weanels Croft .. .. 257  
 Weasel Hedge .. .. 248  
 Weathersfield Pasture .. 278  
 Weavers, 267; — Field, 286,  
 288; — Haventon, 258; —  
 Meadow, 282  
 Webbers Croft .. .. 291  
 Webbs Field .. .. 268, 274  
 Wedlocks Field.. .. 264  
 Weed Field .. .. 253  
 Welcome Mead.. .. 257  
 Well Field, 256, 261; — Ley,  
 248; — Meadow, 249  
 Wells, 283; —, High, 252; —,  
 Little, 248, 274; — Close,  
 263; — Field, 256  
 Wenton, Great and Little, 266  
 Wents Field .. .. 261  
 West Field, 259; — Moor  
 Lands, 251  
 Westbury Pightle .. .. 259  
 Westcroft, Great and Little, 257  
 Western Field .. .. 247  
 Westlestead .. .. 263  
 Westley .. .. 249  
 Westleys.. .. 280  
 Westons, Great, .. .. 280  
 Westropps, Great.. .. 259  
 Wet Meadow .. .. 251  
 Weybridge Mead .. .. 279  
 Wharley Ley .. .. 282  
 Wheat Meadow, 282; — Park,  
 257  
 Wheelwrights Field .. 247  
 Whey Croft, Great and Little,  
 286  
 Whippers Land .. .. 282  
 Whistlers Field.. .. 287  
 Whistock Field .. .. 288

- White Ash, 251; — Field, 257, 261, 288; — Gate Field, 268; — Hill, 264; — Hart Pasture, 258; — Horses Field, 261; — House Common, 248; — House Field, 259; — House Ley, 280; — Land, 254, — Orchard, 261; — Post Field, 253, 259, 261, 263, 268, 269, 288; — Top, 259, 291
- Whitefields Pasture .. 257
- Whitehouse Wood .. .. 247
- Whitelands, 278, 287; —, Great and Little, 244
- Whitens .. .. 251
- Whites Croft .. .. 276
- Whitsheds Wood .. 273
- Whitley Field, 250; — Mead, 257
- Whitleys .. .. 268
- Whitlocks, Great and Little, 244; — Field, 286
- Whitmore Field .. .. 280
- Whitstock Field .. .. 288
- Whittons .. .. 257
- Wick Field, Upper and Lower, 261; — Hazel, 248
- Wicked Hill .. .. 264
- Wicken Hill .. .. 287
- Wickham Field and Ley, 259, 289
- Wickins .. .. 280
- Wicks .. .. 275
- Widdocks Pasture .. .. 286
- Widow Turners Field .. 245
- Wiggery, 259; — Leys, 289; — Wood, 259
- Wigleys Field .. .. 271
- Wigmore, Upper and Lower, 256
- Wild Boar Field, 253; — Croft, 258; — Field, 257, 263; — Shot Ley, 281
- Wilderness, Old, 255; — Hill, 256
- Wilds, The, 251; — Field, 287
- Wiles .. .. 244
- Williams Field .. .. 288
- Wilkins, Little, .. .. 256
- Will Field .. .. 266
- Williams Wood .. .. 288
- Willoughby Cross .. .. 251
- Wills Aly .. .. 278
- Willow Croft, 280; — Field, 257; — Ground, 253, 280, 290; — Hedge, 247
- Willows Field, 256; — Green Pasture, 256
- Wills Ally Wood .. .. 278
- Wilymore .. .. 256
- Wilsons Field .. .. 282
- Winch, Upper and Lower, 288
- Winchlows .. .. 255
- Winding Acre, 258; — Field, 249, 263, 266, 273, 286, 287, 288, 289, 291; — Dean, 249; — 8-acre, 262; — Ley, 247, 291; — Piece, 256, 287
- Windmill, 262; — Field, 253, 255, 274, 281; — Hill, 266; — Hill Field, 267
- Windsor Field .. .. 286
- Wine Galls .. .. 244
- Winnells .. .. 273
- Winnex .. .. 280
- Winney Field, 258; — Ley, 248
- Winsey Wood .. .. 257
- Winters .. .. 290
- Wintons, Great .. .. 249
- Wisbeys Field .. .. 261
- Wisheys Garden .. .. 261
- Wisemans, Long, .. .. 290
- Wit Hedge .. .. 247
- Witch, Upper and Lower, 286
- Woadley, Little, .. .. 244

- Wood Field, 245, 247, 248, 249,  
250, 252, 255, 256, 258, 259,  
274, 290, and others omitted;  
— Ley, 244; — Norrell,  
282; — Warts, 255
- Woodbuds, Great and Little,  
257
- Woodcock Field .. .. 269
- Woodland Field.. .. 256
- Woodnuttings .. .. 258
- Wool Field, Great and Little,  
254; — Pits, 277
- Woolmers .. .. 253
- Woolpit Down .. .. 255
- Woolney, Great and Little, 282
- Woolsden .. .. 283
- Workhouse, 280; — Field,  
256, 262, 281, 282, 289; —  
Meadow, 251
- Worlds, with Hop Ground, 271;  
— End Field, 263, 282
- Worsteads .. .. 281
- Wolves Field .. .. 268
- Wren, Great, 279; — Park,  
244, 263, 268, 290; —  
Pasture, 279
- Wrens Croft, 285; — Park,  
261, 277
- Wrestlers, Great and Little, 280
- Wrestling Place .. .. 262
- Wrights, Little, 257; — Croft,  
287; — Pasture, 286; —  
Wood, 263
- Wrongs, 244; — Plantation,  
244; — Field, 273
- Wyatts Field, 246, 280; —  
Meadow, 281
- Wyberghs Land .. .. 286
- Wybrews.. .. 286
- Wyebridge Meadow.. .. 286
- Yalfords .. .. 248
- Yards, Small, (6a. ar.) .. 256
- Yawney Fen Mead, 275; —  
Field, 275; — Meadow, 278
- Yeldham Ley.. .. 257
- Yelfords .. .. 257
- Yerford, Little, .. .. 248
- Yew Tree Field.. .. 256
- Youngs Field.. .. 281
- Zex Field .. .. 250

## COLCHESTER BAYS, SAYS AND PERPETUANAS.

BY ELIOT HOWARD.

IN the Act of Parliament 13th Anne, *c.* 20, A.D. 1713, "for the speedy and effectual preserving the navigation of the River of Thames by stopping the breach in the Levels of Havering and Dagenham in the County of Essex, &c.," after enumerating certain dues which might be collected from vessels entering the Thames towards the cost of the repairs, there occurs the following final clause:—

"Provided always that nothing in this Act contained shall charge the Two Colchester Packet Boats above four times in the year with the said duties of 3/- a voyage they going weekly from Wivenhoe to London with Bays, Says and Perpetuanas, and from London to Wivenhoe with Wooll to be manufactured at Colchester."

The fact that the Bays, Says and Perpetuanas of Colchester, were of sufficient importance to find their way thus into an Act of Parliament appears to justify an attempt to save from oblivion what little knowledge can now be gathered about them, but on looking through the information obtained from various quarters, I find that there is little to add to what I have received through the kindness of Dr. H. Laver of Colchester and our excellent Secretary Mr. G. F. Beaumont.

In Murray's *English Dictionary* we find, under "Baize" the following forms, "bayes, baies, bease, bayze, bayz, bays, baize (1570 in Godefroi "les baies et sargés"). Latin *badius*, chestnut coloured, *bay*: so named from its original colour, &c. A coarse woollen stuff having a long nap, &c."

In the memorandum book of one of the old woollen mills in Somersetshire, under date 1804, reference is made to "Orange list bay—Colchester bay—Long bay—South sea bay," and in 1813 "Lisbon or broad baizes—Meltons or R.M. Baizes." Again in 1821 "made some baizes or more properly raised serges." But the present owners of the mills are unable now to trace what the fabrics so described may have been.

At first sight it would appear that *bays* are the same fabric as we now call *baize*, and that *says* are what we call *serges*. But we shall see that such a conclusion may prove to be too hasty.

In the present day we generally connect baize with green colour and think of a specially coarse kind of cloth, but apparently this quite misleads us as to the nature of the "Colchester bays."

Dr. Laver points out the strange fact, that although the manufacture died out so recently that one or more of those who were engaged in the work may be still alive, all knowledge on the subject seems to have disappeared.

There is, however, in the Colchester Museum a small piece of the fabric, about six inches square, secured by Dr. Laver at great expense, and this is the only sample in good condition known to exist. The fabric appears to have been of fine texture woven like serge, that is, formed like a twill, the shuttle not passing over and under alternate threads as in calico, but passing over more than one thread.

In spite of the supposed origin of the name from *badius* or bay colour, the Colchester bays appear to have been generally pure white, but that they were sometimes coloured seems probable from the minutes of the Coachmakers' Company, 11th Nov., 1690, when the purchase was ordered of "— yards of Colchester bays to line the Company's standing on my Ld. Mayor's day."<sup>1</sup>

In the records of the Somerset Mills is found frequent mention also of "Says" but here again there is little to guide as to the details of the manufacture, and especially on the question whether in the West of England they were the same as serges. Dr. Laver says that the Colchester *Says* were not serges, that is to say, they were woven with one thread up and one down like calico, and not by passing the shuttle over several threads so as to form a twill. The specimens he has seen were green and appear to have been used commonly for bed-hangings, being frequently mentioned in old wills. In Dawson Turner's *Domestic Architecture*, pt. I., p. 71, in a foot note, "a fringe of say" is mentioned.

In the Autobiography of Mrs. Gilbert (Ann Taylor) edited by her son, the late Josiah Gilbert of Ongar, we find the following note on the subject (page 68, Fifth Edition, 1888).

"The 'bay' and 'say' manufacture was brought into Colchester in 1570 by eleven Dutch families flying from the Alva persecution.

<sup>1</sup> From old records quoted in Beaumont's *History of Coggeshall* it would appear that the Essex "bays" were, as sold by the weavers generally white, and subsequently dyed to suit the taste of the purchasers.

'Say' was a kind of serge, all wool, much used by the 'religious' for shirts and by the English Quakers for aprons. The word is said to be derived from *sagum*, a soldiers coarse cloak or a kind of blanket."

As regards Perpetuanas we have been quite unable to trace any such long historical sequence or in fact to find much trace of any kind. The name is quite unknown in the West of England and does not appear in books of reference, but it seems clear that the fabric so known was a cloth of very durable character. The name was doubtless given as a sort of trade mark and connected with *perpetual* wearing qualities and not with the obscure black letter Saint Perpetua who appears in our Calendar on March 7th.

---



## ARCHÆOLOGICAL NOTES.

---

**Essex Deeds.**—Mr. C. L. Shadwell, Honorary Fellow of Exeter College, has issued, for private circulation, a valuable calendar of the deeds relating to the foundation for St. Antony's Exhibitions in that College. These, of which there are more than 140, relate to lands in Dagenham, Havering and Barking, namely Valance, Brokmans, Gallants, Belhouse, Copped Lands, Firstlings, Alberd's, Newman's, Lynne's, Pound's, Aldwyne's, Attegrove, Everard's, East Hall, and Pyreman's. All personal and place names are duly given in the Calendar.

J. H. ROUND.

**Creffeld family.**—I have always believed that this family, though found in Essex at an early date, derived its name from a place in Suffolk; but from which place seemed doubtful. Mr. Walter Rye's Calendar of Suffolk Fines, lately published, contains fines of 11-12 Edward II. to which the same man is party as William de 'Crosfeld' and William de 'Creffeld.' It is quite clear that 'Crosfeld' was Crowfield in the heart of Suffolk near Needham Market, which appears constantly under that form. In Essex the family name first appears as 'Cresfeld' about the middle of the thirteenth century, when they were benefactors at Horkesley to the Priory there, as is evidenced by the charters preserved in the Bodleian Library. The "Alan son of Henry de Cresfeld" of these charters seems to have been the "Alan de Crepfeld" who witnessed Bergholt and Fordham charters in the Colchester Cartulary (pp. 411, 414, 657). The family held their small estate in Great Horkesley by knight-service, as is shown by a list of fees in the Red Book of the Exchequer, assigned to the reign of Henry III., in which we read: "Alanus de Crepfeud x. partem [unius militis] in Horkeslega" (*Liber Rubeus*, p. 739). This tenth of a knight's fee was held in 1303 by Andrew son of Robert "de Creffeld" (or "Cressefeld"), then a minor (*Feudal Aids II.*, 138). Crowfield, I find, occurs as 'Cressfield' in a Bodleian charter of 21 Ric. II. [1397-8]. It is singular that, even in the eighteenth century, Le Neve who was present at the funeral of Sir Ralph Creffeld's son at Colchester, spells the name throughout (in his 'Book of knights') as 'Cresfeld.'

J. H. R.

**An early Essex will** (A.D. 998).—In what is known as “the Crawford charters” edited by Professor Napier and Mr. W. H. Stevenson (*Anecdota Oxoniensia*, mediæval and modern series, part VII.) there is printed (p. 22) the will of Leofwine son of Wulfstan in favour of Westminster Abbey. The editors observe that—

“Although this will has been printed thrice (by Madox, Thorpe, and Kemble), its chief interest has not, we believe, been pointed out. It is the will of Leofwine son of Wulfstan, an Essex landowner, and it is dated nearly seven years later than the battle of Maldon. Now one of the heroes of this battle, the man who guarded the bridge, and who seemingly struck the first blow, was Wulfstan son of Ceola. . . . It is highly probable that the testator was the son of the Wulfstan of the song, because Brihtnoth’s force must have consisted principally of the local levies, and the testator’s possessions were close to Maldon. It was probably this local connection of Wulfstan’s that caused Brihtnoth to select him to guard the bridge” (p. 123).

I give the suggestion for what it is worth, though I think it rather hazardous. The will itself, however, is in any case, of local interest, for it mentions land ‘æt cynlaue dyne,’ ‘æt mearcyncg seollan,’ ‘of purlea in to hnutlea,’ ‘heafodbotles on purlea,’ and ‘æt berlingum.’ The editors explain that the first is Kelvedon (not Kelvedon Hatch), where Domesday assigns five hides to Westminster Abbey; that the third and fourth relate to Purleigh and Notley (‘heafodbotl’ is the later ‘chief messuage’), where Westminster is not recorded as holding land; and that the last place is Barling. I have no doubt myself that the remaining place is Marks Hall (near Coggeshall), though the editors, on philological grounds, hesitate to assert the identity. It is remarkable that, under Edward the Confessor, lands at Kelvedon, Marks Hall, and Purleigh were held by Gudmund, who was succeeded under William the Conqueror, by Hugh de Montfort. This is in favour of the identity of Marks Hall, but makes the connection with Westminster Abbey difficult to understand.

J. H. R.

**The Churches of High Ongar, Stanford Rivers, Langenhoe, and Little Laver.**—In the “List and Index of Ministers’ Accounts” issued by the Public Record Office (1897) there is mention of a ‘pension’ payable from the Essex church of Sonningdon to the Priory of ‘Romney,’ this latter name being given in error for that of Rumilly in the Boulonnais, where a Cluniac Priory was founded early in the twelfth century. There is further mention of this pension, as payable by the abbot and monks of Coggeshall, on the rolls of Richard II. That the church of Sonningdon was at Coggeshall there can be little doubt, but Mr. Beaumont is investigating this question for himself.

What I have to do now is to show that this same Priory had secured other Essex churches, although the fact seems to be unknown and certainly was so to Morant. In my "Calendar of documents preserved in France," issued by the Public Record Office, I have given (p. 507) the charter by which count Eustace of Boulogne, in 1125, gave to this Priory a rent-charge of £10 on his manor of Fobbing—one of his many Essex manors—and another of £10, which is found to have been charged on Shenfield.<sup>1</sup> A document has now come to light which proves that a Count of Boulogne—doubtless the same Eustace—gave also to the Priory the churches of High Ongar, Stanford Rivers, Langenhoe, and Little Laver, all of which were demesne manors on the Boulogne fief in Essex.

On the Close Roll of 7 Edward I. (m. 3d) there is enrolled an agreement between Queen Eleanor and the Prior and monks of Rumilly, by which they demise to her the rent-charge of £20 from Fobbing and Shenfield (then payable by Sir Robert de Camville, knight), together with the advowsons of the above four churches, to which they had been unable to maintain their right at a distance. They stipulated for a certain sum to be paid them by the queen in return for the rent-charge and advowsons, and they reserved to themselves the pensions that they "were wont to receive in times past from the churches, to wit 16 sh. from the church of Langenhoe, 50 sh. from the church of High Ongar, 50 sh. from the church of Stanford, 16 sh. from the church of Little Laver."<sup>2</sup>

There can, I think, be little doubt that these churches, as well as that of Sonningdon (Coggeshall), were given to the Priory by Count Eustace in the days of Henry I. The above agreement now explains how the priory came to part with them.

J. H. R.

**Rayleigh Mount.**—Writing on this earthwork in Vol. V. of our *Transactions*, I adduced from Mr. Clark's work on "Mediæval Military Architecture," as against its alleged resemblance to the mound at Old Sarum, the statement that "the central knoll of Sarum is 500 feet wide at the top" (p. 42). Mr. Clark's work definitely states (II. 449) that: "Commencing with the interior, the central mound is, at its top, about 500 feet across." It appears, however, that the real diameter is rather 50 than 500 feet, which, of course, destroys the argument based upon the larger figure. Mr. Clark's reputation, among archæologists, on these subjects has stood so high that one would naturally accept his definite statements without question; but my fate should serve as a warning to others.

J. H. R.

<sup>1</sup> *Resid Book of the Exchequer*, p. 501.

*Calendar of Close Rolls*, 1272-9, pp. 577-8.

**The Wardstaff.**—The wardstaff of the Hundred of Ongar is a well-known Essex institution, thanks to the fortunate preservation of the formalities still associated with it in the time of Henry VIII. Less familiar is the wardstaff of the Half Hundred of Harlow, adjoining that of Ongar, although Morant has mentioned its existence under Hatfield Broadoak. I now find that the Hundred of Barstable, which adjoined to its north-east the Hundred of Ongar, also had a wardstaff. The Colchester Cartulary (Roxburghe Club) contains (pp. 472-9, 552) a series of documents relating to lands in Little Bemfleet, Nevenden, and Bowers Giffard, which belong to 14—17 Edw. I. (1285—1289). In the first of these we read (p. 473) “that the whole undivided holding owes the ward of two men for one whole night after Easter to the Hundred (*ad Hundredum*) of Barstaple, which belongs to the king’s consort the queen, which is called ‘Wardstaf’ (*quod vocatur Wardstaf*), which service is valued (*extenditur*) at one penny a year.” It will be perceived that the watching service was similar to that in the Hundred of Ongar, (Kelvedon-Hatch, for instance, was held “by the service of finding two men to watch the wardstaff”) and that thus a line drawn through Essex from Harlow to Canvey Island would pass through three contiguous Hundreds in all of which is found this archaic institution.

J. H. R.

**Worked Flint found at Loughton Hall.**—In November, 1899, while trenches for the foundations of a garden-wall between the Hall and Hatfields were in progress, certain flints were found in the gravelly soil. As they appeared to have been artificially worked they were submitted to Sir John Evans, who wrote that he was sorry to say that, with one exception, the flints were the work of nature, not of art. The exception was the largest of a group of five, which he thought to be a kind of hoe, as figured in *Stone Implements*, fig. 15. This remains in the possession of the Rev. J. Whitaker Maitland, by whom it was found. Some of the specimens were curiously pitted—a result due, it is thought, to the action of frost.

w. c. w.

**Discovery of Roman Coins at Little Waltham.**—About the end of February last, two workmen engaged in opening a new gravel-pit in a field on Sheepcotes Farm, Little Waltham, which is occupied by Mr. Louis Campen, discovered a hoard of Roman coins, about 180 in number, some three feet below the surface of the ground, and lying together, as though they had been enclosed in some receptacle which had disappeared totally through decay. The coins, which are all of bronze and small, are now in the possession of

Lt.-Col. W. Nevill Tufnell, of Langleys, the owner of Sheepcotes Farm. They are, for the most part, in poor condition. Mr. G. F. Hill, of the Coins and Medals Department of the British Museum, who has been good enough to look at a selected few of the coins, informs me that they are of the type most commonly found in this country and probably present no point of very special interest. They belong to the latter half of the third century and comprise (so far as he could see at a hasty glance) coins of Postumus, Victorinus, Tetricus, and Claudius Gothicus. It may be mentioned that, in Roman times, Little Waltham was probably a place of some consequence, being situate at the point at which the remarkably straight Roman road running through Braintree and Gosfield, branched off from that leading from Chelmsford to Dunmow, Thaxted, and Saffron Walden.

MILLER CHRISTY.

**Roydon Whipping-posts and Stocks.**—During the winter of 1889-1900 these had fallen into considerable disrepair, the whipping-post lay prone on the ground owing to decay at its base and both the head of this and the stocks supports had commenced to rot at the tops. I had some correspondence with the Parish Council with reference to putting them into a state of repair and that body proved fully in sympathy with my desire to preserve these relics of bygone days but found that they could take no steps in the matter as these instruments of punishment were erected on the manorial waste. I thereupon suggested application being made to the lord of the manor for permission to repair and paint them and in this I presume the Council was successful, as, at a recent visit, I found the whipping-post had been spliced and replaced in position and a zinc cap affixed and both this and the stocks well painted. I think now these will last for another decade without any further attention.

W. B. GERISH.

---

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, SATURDAY, 9th JUNE, 1900.

---

NEVENDEN, SOUTH BEMFLEET, AND THUNDERSLEY.

---

Meeting at Wickford Railway Station, the Society first visited Nevenden church, where Mr. G. F. Beaumont, F.S.A., Hon. Sec., read the following paper:—

### NEVENDEN CHURCH.

“This church was visited by your late Hon. Sec., Mr. H. W. King, in the year 1856, and from his notes made at the time and recorded in his *Ecclesia Essexienses*,<sup>1</sup> and from an inspection of the church which I made on the 29th of last month, I am enabled to give you some account of the building in which we are gathered as it appeared forty-four years ago, and to remark upon the changes which have since taken place.

Mr. King prefaces his description of the church by saying that the parish is incorrectly written at the present day ‘Nevendon’ instead of ‘Nevenden.’ ‘Den’ signifies a wooded valley, whereas ‘don’ is indicative of the converse, pointing to location on high ground. The parish is situate on low ground, and in rainy seasons the roads in the neighbourhood are greatly flooded.

The church, which is dedicated to St. Peter, is of very early erection and of small dimensions, consisting of a nave and chancel without aisles. At the west end of the nave is a low wooden bell turret. The nave and chancel are almost of equal length, the former being 24 feet long and 20 feet wide, the latter about 22 feet long and 18 feet 1 inch wide. The buttresses are set at the angles. There is no dividing arch between the nave and chancel.

#### *The Chancel.*

The chancel is Early-English: of as early a date as the reign of Richard I. or the close of the twelfth century, but alterations and insertions have been made at subsequent periods.

The east window, which in 1856 was in the Perpendicular, is now, as you will observe, in the Decorated style, having three trefoil-

headed lights with a quatrefoil over each of the side lights and a circular window of six foils over the central light.

In the north wall are two single lancet windows one foot wide on the outside and splayed inward to a width of four feet. These windows formerly rested upon a moulded string, which was once continued round the chancel but was subsequently broken by the insertion of the east window. What remained of the string-course at the date of Mr. King's visit has since been either destroyed or plastered over.

Upon the south side the two lancet windows were in the fifteenth century converted, so that, when inspected by Mr. King, the easternmost of these windows was pointed, divided by a single mullion and the head was rather singularly cusped. The second window had its internal opening of rather square form. It consisted of two lights, each acutely trefoiled. One painted quarry remained in this window, the pattern being an interlaced ribbon or bow. Since Mr. King's visit, the fifteenth century windows have been replaced by two lancet windows, to correspond with those in the north wall.

Occupying an unusual position in the east wall of the chancel on the right hand side of the altar, there was, in 1856, a remarkably perfect and well preserved *piscina* with projecting basin in the form of an inverted cone resting upon a ledge with two scrolls of foliations. Upon the front was sculptured a cross formée. The preservation of this *piscina* was considered by Mr. King as somewhat remarkable, as a cross so conspicuously placed would ordinarily have ensured destruction. As I was unable to find any vestige of this *piscina* on my recent visit, I can only conclude that it was removed during the restoration which was effected about the year 1875. Perhaps it may not yet be too late to recover and replace it. Until the erection of the present gawky font, this *piscina* was used as a baptismal font, to which purpose it may have been long previously appropriated.

#### *The Nave*

is lighted by two well proportioned square-headed windows, each of two trefoiled lights. Although the stone is new, the windows appear to be reproductions of the windows existing in 1856, except that the dripstones resting upon corbel heads have neither been preserved nor replaced.

The old west or belfry window, which consisted of three acutely pointed lights with intersecting mullions but the openings in the head not feathered, has been renewed in the same style.

The north doorway is pointed, and the arch mouldings, consisting of two ogees, are continued down the jambs to the plinth. The dripstone terminates in two defaced corbel heads.

The south doorway, which was blocked in 1856, is now opened. It is similar to the north doorway except that it has no dripstone or corbels.

In the south wall of the nave, near the entrance to the chancel, is a trefoil-headed piscina.

*The Roof*

of the nave and chancel is supported by four tie-beams with king-posts, each having four struts. The angles of the posts and under edges of the ties are plainly chamfered. The roof, which was formerly ceiled, is now open.

The royal arms, carved in wood, are set up in the nave over the westernmost tie-beam. This tie-beam and the west wall support the bell turret.

*The Font,*

an ill-proportioned new one, the shaft being much too high, stands at the west end of the nave. The basin, shaft, and plinth are octangular and quite plain."

At South Bemfleet the party was hospitably received and provided with light refreshments by the Rev. C. F. Box, the Vicar, and Mrs. Box, in the parish room. Here a general meeting was held under the presidency of Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., and the following were unanimously elected members of the Society:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—

ELWELL, M. C., Liverpool Street Station, G.E.R.	Mr. H. Wilmer.
BULLER, W., Myland, Colchester.	Mr. H. Laver.
CHAPMAN, ALFRED, Fairview, Rayleigh.	Mr. S. S. Baker.

Mr. Laver then read the following paper on Bemfleet Camp:—

BEMFLEET.

"The first mention of this parish in history is in the Saxon Chronicle under the date A.D. 894, where the events are recorded which led up to the building of a camp here by the Danes, and of its capture by the forces of King Alfred.

"But Hastein the Dane, abandoning all hope of resistance, began to devise by what means he might deceive the most merciful King by his fraudulent acts. Accordingly, sending messengers to the king, he promised by oaths and by offers of hostages that he would for the future desist from harrassing him and the kingdom of England, if he might be allowed to depart in peace; and moreover, for greater security, he sent to the king his two sons, who were children, that he might if he pleased consecrate them with the sacrament of the faith and of baptism. Then that most pious King, who was always more eager to deliver the souls of the Pagans than slay them, granted their request, and the boys having been generated at the sacred font, he permitted their father Hastein with all the other infidels to depart in peace, according to the covenant that he had made."

I have made this extract from Matthew of Westminster as it explains more fully Alfred's conduct, when his army captured these



same children the next year at Bemfleet as is recorded in the Saxon Chronicle under the date 894.

After the Danish defeat at Farnham, still following the account by Matthew of Westminster, we find that those Danes who escaped over the Thames went after a time from Mersea to their countrymen in Essex. There they found that most wicked traitor Hastein, who in contravention of the treaty which he had made with King Alfred was already dwelling near the town of Beamfleet, which was fortified with wide and deep fosses; and making continual sallies out of it, he laid waste the whole country. Then the Pagans who, as has been already mentioned, had settled at Appledore, joining Hastein, made a very numerous army of soldiers.

In the meantime those soldiers whom King Alfred had sent away to attack them, uniting themselves to the citizens of London at the command of the King, marched in hostile manner upon Beamfleet but did not find Hastein in the town. Nevertheless they fought a most severe battle against his companions who sallied out of the town against them, and at the first onset they compelled them to flee, and entering the town destroyed it and loaded the wife of Hastein and his two sons with chains, burnt some of his ships, (please note this) and carried off some to the city of Rochester and sent Hastein's wife and his two sons to the city of London. After these exploits, King Alfred, having without much difficulty defeated and scattered and driven to the ships those Pagans on whose account he had gone to Exeter, returned to the city of London, where Count Ethelred presented the wife of Hastein and his two sons to him, begging him to decide what should be done with the wife and children of that traitor who had violated the covenant which he had made with the king. Then, though it had been adjudged by everyone that they were worthy of the most shameful death, the King was unwilling to do them any harm, because, as has been before related, he had stood godfather to one of the children at the sacred font and Count Ethelred had been godfather to the other, and so he allowed both the mother and children to depart with their liberty.

The statement in the Saxon Chronicle under the date A.D. 894, is very similar to that by Matthew of Westminster, but it is not so full, it says—

“ When the King turned westward towards Exeter with all his force, except a very strong body of the people eastward. These went onward until they came to London and then with the Townsmen and the aid which came to them from the west they went east to Bamfleet, Hasten was then come there with his band which before sat at Milton and the great army was also come thereto, which before sat at Appledore, near Limne-mouth.

The fortress at Bamfleet had been ere this constructed by Hasten, and he was at that time gone out to plunder; and the great army was therein. Then came they thereto, and put the army to flight, and stormed the fortress, and took all that was within it as well the property as the women, and the children also, and brought the whole to London, and all the ships they either broke in pieces or burned, or brought to London, or to Rochester; and they brought the wife of Hasten and his two sons to the King; and he gave them up to him again, because one of them was his godson and the other Ethered the ealdorman's. They had become their godfathers before Hasten came to Bamfleet, and at that time Hasten had delivered to him hostages and taken oaths, and the king had also given him many gifts, and so likewise when he gave up the youth and the woman."

The account then seems to have gone backwards somewhat and refers to Hastein's coming to Bamfleet, for it says—

"But as soon as they came to Bamfleet, and the fortress was constructed, then plundered he that very part of the King's realm which was in the keeping of Ethered his compeer, and again this second time, he had gone out to plunder that very same district when his fortress was stormed."

It would appear, from the continuation of the narrative, that, after this defeat, Hastein and his army, with remains of the other armies, took refuge in the Camp at Shoebury, and there we must leave them.

In volume II. of the *Transactions* of this Society, p. 75, is an article by the Rev. W. E. Heygate on this Camp and its history. Some portion of his account is necessarily the same as that which I have just given you, as both of us have gone to the same authorities for our information, but there are some statements in the Rev. gentleman's paper, which I think are incorrect. The first is as to the position of the camp. It has always been imagined that it was on the high ground seen from the railway station and it is here that signs have always been sought for, but in my opinion, without any success. It was, I know, the opinion of our late able secretary, Mr. King, that the site of the camp was more likely to be found on the low ground near the brook and the position of many Danish camps on low ground lends probability to the suggestion. At all events a careful survey by some resident in the district able to note in the various seasons of the year any differences in the growth and colour of the vegetation might give some clue which would assist in determining the exact site and size of this interesting camp.

Mr. Heygate also mentions that there were foundations in an orchard—on the north side of the rising ground I suppose—and that these might have been the remains of a castle built by King Alfred to guard the creek. I am afraid there is but little ground for this supposition.

Our late friend (Mr. King) informed me that when the railway bridge was made over the creek the workmen, in excavating for the

piers and for making the railway, came on the remains of burnt vessels, to a considerable extent, and this statement is corroborated by Mr. F. C. J. Spurrell in his paper on the "Early Sites and Embankments on the Margins of the Thames Estuary" in the *Archæological Journal*, vol. xlii., p. 294, he says—

"The low spit at Benfleet was the site of the camp and banks may be feebly traced, about the whole area of the village and churchyard. There is no other spot suitable to the need of the Danes, or which shows even the semblance of earthworks. Of his fleet, the sunken ships remain in the fleet close to the camp. to this day; for during the construction of the railway bridge there, some thirty odd years ago, (he was writing in 1885) the navvies came upon the ships many of which were charred, and in and about them lay great quantities of human skeletons."

A later visit to Bemfleet convinces me, that the opinion above expressed, with reference to the site of this camp is correct. Although I could not trace the whole of the camp, there is quite enough remaining around the churchyard to mark out one corner of the fortress, a sufficient clue to enable anyone with time and opportunities to follow up, and trace out the whole course of the earthworks of this historic camp."

The Church was next visited, and after time had been allowed for a general inspection of the edifice, Mr. G. F. Beaumont read the following paper:—

#### SOUTH BEMFLEET CHURCH.

"This church, which is dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary, was visited by Mr. H. W. King in 1845 and again in 1848. He considered it one of the finest specimens of ecclesiastical architecture in the county. It was erected principally in the first half of the fifteenth century but in the tower there are remains of Norman work and in the south aisle some Decorated columns. It is of noble elevation with a remarkably well pitched roof, and comprises a nave with north and south aisles, a large chancel, a low west tower with stunted wooden spire and a beautiful Perpendicular timber porch on the south side. The church is built of ragstone with an admixture of ancient brick. Both nave and chancel are tiled, but the aisles are leaded. The south aisle is embattled but the battlements have been removed from the north aisle.

#### *The Porch.*

The porch is said by Mr. Miller Christy to be the finest timber porch in Essex next to that at Margaretting. It is of the Perpendicular period. The interior has richly carved spandrels and embattled

beams and the gable and sides are filled with mullioned tracery. Though fifty years ago in a sadly dilapidated state it has since been judiciously restored.

#### *The Nave*

is three bays in length. The arches on both sides are of two reveals with plain chamfered edges springing on the north side from clustered shafts with well moulded plinths and capitals, the angles of which are hollow moulded, that is to say, the circular shafts are separated by a hollow and two fillets; on the south side the columns are octagonal and are in the Decorated style, the two responds and one of the columns being original, but the other or eastern column was re-built in the fifteenth century as is shown by its mouldings. The floor of the south aisle appears to have been at a higher level than that of the nave. It has, however, since been lowered and the rough foundations of the columns are now visible above the floor.

Anciently the roof, which is now segmental and plastered, must have been of open oak timber as is evident from the eight stone corbels from which the principals sprung. These corbels are:—on the south side, proceeding east to west, a grotesque head between two hands; an eagle; a winged lion; and another grotesque head: on the north side, proceeding in the same direction, a grotesque head, a demi-angel; a winged ox; and a grotesque head. Four of these corbels form the evangelistic symbols.

There are six clerestory windows, each of two cinquefoil headed lights, square headed.

#### *The North Aisle*

has four windows, one pointed, but the remaining three have elliptical arches; of these, two are let in the side wall and one at each end; the eastern most of the two former consists of three cinquefoil headed lights and the remainder are of two lights and all are of the same character, except that, that at the west end is pointed and has mullioned tracery in its head like the two windows in the south aisle. The north doorway, placed in the centre of the wall, is pointed but is blocked. In the north-east corner of this aisle is an angular recess the object of which is not apparent. In the north wall are the stairs which formerly led to the rood-loft and as these stairs are to the westward of the three-light window and there is a piscina in the return wall there was doubtless a chapel at the east end of this aisle.

#### *The South Aisle.*

The windows in this aisle, as has been before noticed, differ from those in the north wall. They occupy corresponding positions but

are pointed and each of them has, like that at the west end of the north aisle, two cusped lights with super-mullioned tracery. At the east end is a piscina and above it a very large niche with projecting stone bracket for a statue.

#### *The Chancel.*

The nave opens into the chancel by a magnificent and spacious arch of two reveals with hollow chamfered edges springing from clustered shafts with moulded capitals and bases of Early English date, probably about 1240. The arch itself is of the Perpendicular period.

The floor is elevated five paces above the nave and is paved with black and white marble.

There are four windows, two in the north wall and two in the south, similar to those in the south aisle but more pointed. They are comparatively new and do not appear to be true representations of the former windows, as Mr. King says that these windows were identical with those in the south aisle.

The east window, which is modern, in the Decorated style, takes the place of one of three lights inserted about 1840 by the then lord of the manor and is characterized by Mr. King as 'most barbarous.'

On the south side of the altar, which is raised three paces, is a cinquefoil headed piscina with shelf.

#### *The Tower*

retains vestiges of its Norman foundation, the only entrance to it being by a low semi-circular doorway of that period with plain soffit-arch. It was partly rebuilt and greatly altered in the fifteenth century. It consists of a basement and two stories; the upper or bell-chamber, containing five bells, is lighted by three square headed double-light windows; the lower by small single-light cusped openings. Very low massive buttresses of two stages are placed at the angles and on each buttress is a consecration cross, three of red brick and the fourth—that on the north side—of white stone set in red brick."

#### THUNDERSLEY CHURCH.

An examination of this interesting little structure of the Early English period in the first stages of its development was next made, and after a few remarks thereon by the Honorary Secretary, the party was driven to Rayleigh, where they partook of tea at the Crown Hotel, and thus ended a delightful excursion through a diversified tract of country quite unknown to many of the party.

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, WEDNESDAY, 22nd AUGUST, 1900.

---

HARLOW, GREAT HALLINGBURY, STANSTED MOUNTFITCHET,  
AND BISHOPS STORTFORD.

---

This Excursion, taken in conjunction with the East Herts Archæological Society, was well attended, the company present numbering about seventy.

Proceeding from Harlow Station to a mound on the west side of the Railway, Mr. I. C. Gould, under trying circumstances, for a strong wind was blowing and rain was falling heavily at the time, read the following paper:—

### LATTON HILL MOUND, HARLOW.

“Five years ago I read a paper on this site—a paper which professed only to be suggestive—but in my wildest flight of suggestion I did not claim this as a “Roman camp.”

I claimed evidence of its occupation in Romano-British time as I always understood that early pottery and Roman coins were found here when the Great Eastern Railway was constructed. Mr. Barnard of Harlow mentioned this in my presence many years ago, it has been referred to several times since, and so far back as 1821 a notice of this hill was published in the *Gentleman's Magazine* which assumed it to be the site of a Roman *castellum*.

I do not endorse that writer's view as to the *castellum* but have no doubt his idea originated with the finding of coins and pottery here long before the discoveries incident to the making of the railway. 1821 may be considered a dark age of archæology, but we ought not on that account to ignore its evidence.

It is of far more interest to me to enquire whether we have any sign of occupation in the days of contest between the Saxon and the Dane.

We know from the study of that fountain of information, the Saxon Chronicle, that the Danes pushed up the valleys in their shallow-draught war vessels. The Lea was at one time their high way—the Stort is but an adjunct of the Lea—and we may be sure that this country side felt the keen edge of their devastating weapons. We know their custom of throwing up easily constructed forts. Is there any sign of their handiwork here?

Those who have examined the mound and court forts which abound in England will perhaps recognize, though very faintly, some indications of similar work in the scarping off of this hill on the north-west side, leaving thereby this round summit and forming something approximating to the form of a base court on the northern side. I am aware that there should be a moat between the mound and its court, but moats were not always there, for example see Bakewell, which the Saxon Chronicle tell us was *gewyrcan* by Saxon Edward in 924. It has been objected that there is no sign of rampart or fosse surrounding the works, but in this case none was needed as the waters of the Stort—not then confined to their narrow bed—practically surrounded the hill, making it an island, as it would be now in flood time, but for the railway embankment and other modern works.

That this is speculative I must admit when a geological expert, such as our friend Mr. Holmes, tells me that there is nothing here but the work of natural agencies, at the same time I am a believer in tradition generally having some foundation, and tradition long ago appears to have assigned a fort or other mysterious purpose to the hill. The tradition has its echo to-day in a remark made by an aged labourer: 'I allus heard there was summat in it.'

Notice also the sunken road approaching the hill, it is 25 or more feet across and tells of much traffic. Again, where the road to the mound passes down from the high land to the marsh level it is sunk some eight feet. Man's handiwork or very considerable traffic, alone, can account for such a depression; part of it being cut through rising ground, water cannot have accomplished this. Labourers who have taken carts over the hill in hay time tell of the hollow sound they hear, a hollow sound which is hardly compatible with the theory that there is nothing here but London clay.

From both the *Gentleman's Magazine* and *Archæologia* of 1821 we learn that at a few feet below the surface, very strong walls have been found.

The Saxons and Danes were builders with timber rather than stone, but may not those strong walls have been the work of Norman successors?

Perhaps the pick and spade alone can settle the questions which have been raised about this spot, but I hope you will admit that a site of so much mystery ought not to be left unvisited by our Archæological Societies to-day."

WALLBURY.

Wallbury was next visited and here again Mr. I. C. Gould, who has made an examination of very many earthworks in this country and elsewhere and may be regarded as one of the best authorities on the subject of early fortifications, read a short paper on the earthworks here (see p. 139) and generously handed to everyone present a plan of the camp.

Driving through Hatfield Forest by the kind permission of Colonel Archer-Houblon, the Portingbury Hills were inspected under the guidance of the Rev. F. W. Galpin.

At Stansted Mountfitchet Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., read an interesting paper on the Castle (see page 141).

At Bishops Stortford the Societies were hospitably welcomed and entertained to tea by Mr. and Mrs. Marshall Taylor in the Castle grounds, and here Mr. J. L. Glasscock afterwards read a paper in which he traced the history of the castle and alluded to the excavations recently made by Mr. Taylor to whom, he remarked, both the Essex and the East Herts Societies were greatly indebted for much excellent work done in the interests of local archæology.

A hearty vote of thanks was proposed by Mr. G. A. Lowndes to Mr. and Mrs. Taylor for their entertainment, and thanks were also returned to those who had read papers during the day.

The following new members were elected:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—	
HULTON, Rev. Canon, Great Waltham Vicarage, Chelmsford.	} The President.
HASLER, W., Dunmow.	
TOWNSHEND, HOWARD, 86, High Street, Colchester.	Mr. H. Laver.
PIERCE, Rev. F. D., F.R.Hist.S., Wickford.	Rev. H. W. Jukes.
DENT, F., Hatfields, Loughton.	} Mr. I. C. Gould.
HOLMES, T. V., F.G.S., Crooms Hill, Greenwich.	
WEBB, WILLIAM, 39, New Broad Street, London, E.C.	Mr. G. F. Beaumont.



## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, TUESDAY, 25th SEPTEMBER, 1900.

STURMER, STEEPLE BUMPSTED, BIRDBROOK, STAMBOURNE,  
AND GREAT YELDHAM.

Starting from Haverhill Station, members and their friends proceeded first to Sturmer church, a small building with an interesting Norman doorway on the south side and other work of the same period. Mr. F. Chancellor made a few remarks upon such of the architectural features of the edifice as were observable on a cursory inspection.

Steeple Bumpsted was next visited and after luncheon the church was inspected and observations thereon were made by Mr. Chancellor. An account of this church by Mr. C. F. Hayward, F.S.A., as it appeared in 1878 will be found in Vol. ii. (new series) of the *Transactions* of the Society.

At Birdbrook church Mr. F. Chancellor read extracts from his description of the building, the full account of which appeared in the *Essex Review* for 1892.<sup>1</sup>

A description of Stambourne church, which was reached about four o'clock, was given in 1878 by Mr. Hayward on the occasion of the Society's visit in that year (see Vol. ii., new series, 107).

Reaching Great Yeldham about five o'clock the party was cordially welcomed and hospitably entertained to tea by the Rector, the Rev. W. J. Earle, in his charming grounds adjoining the churchyard. The house, gardens, and surroundings were pronounced by the visitors to be one of the most picturesque spots in the county. The Rev. H. L. Elliot read a short paper upon the old oakwork of one of the rooms at the Rectory, and Mr. Chancellor made a few remarks upon the church. Under the presidency of the Rev. H. L. Elliot a general meeting was held at the Rectory and the following were elected members of the Society:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—

DURANT, THOS., 5, Guildhall Chambers, Basinghall Street, E.C.	}	Mr. G. F. Beaumont.
BROWNE ROBERT HOLLINGWORTH, Stapleford Abbots, Essex.		
TOMSON, The Rev. E. L., Great Yeldham.	}	Mr. Miller Christy. Miss Suckling.
PORTEOUS, W. W., Bellevue House, Saffron Walden.		
FOSTER, Mrs. Foxearth Rectory, Long Melford.		

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i., 33.

## GENERAL MEETING OF THE ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY HELD AT COLCHESTER CASTLE ON THURSDAY, THE 18th APRIL, 1901.

G. ALAN LOWNDES, ESQ., M.A., PRESIDENT, IN THE CHAIR.

The Hon. Secretary read the Annual Report, and the Treasurer's Financial Statement was laid before the meeting and the same were approved.

A vote of thanks was passed to the President, Council and Officers, for their services during the past year and they were re-elected with the addition of the Rev. J. W. Kenworthy to fill the vacancy on the Council caused by the death of Mr. J. R. Vaizey, and the Right Rev. The Bishop of Barking, M.A., F.S.A., was elected a Vice-president of the Society.

A vote of thanks was accorded to Mr. James Round, M.P., for the use of the Castle Library.

Mr. Douglass Round, Mr. Charles Benham, and Mr. P. G. Laver were re-appointed the Society's representatives on the Museum Committee of the Corporation of Colchester.

Mr. H. A. Doubleday, who was introduced by Mr. J. H. Round, gave an address on the Victoria History of the Counties of England with special reference to the County of Essex.

Papers were read by Mr. J. H. Round on "The Order of the Hospital in Essex," (*ante* p. 182) and "Helion of Helion's Bumpstead" (*ante* p. 187).

Mr. W. C. Waller, F.S.A., read a paper by Mr. Eliot Howard on "Colchester Bays, Says and Perpetuanas" (*ante* p. 223).

Mr. Miller Christy, on behalf of Lieut.-Col. W. Nevill Tufnell, exhibited some Roman bronze coins found at Little Waltham (*ante* p. 229). Mr. J. C. Shenstone exhibited a series of photographs of ancient records of the Borough of Colchester.

The following candidates were elected members of the Society:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—	
WALLER, Miss JANE E., 2, Victoria Road, St. Leonards-on-Sea.	} Mr. W. C. Waller.
THE ESSEX INSTITUTE, Salem, Mass.	} Mr. G. F. Beaumont.
COLES, FERDINAND, 53, Brooke Road, Stoke Newington Common, London, N.	} Mr. J. Avery.
NORRIS, H. C., 15, Richmond Road, Walthamstow.	} Mr. T. Forster.
COCKIN, The Rev. J. I. B., Oxford Road, Colchester.	} Mr. G. W. Rickword.
KIRK, ALASTAIR, Fitzwalters, Shenfield, Brentwood.	} Mr. Alexander Ward.
ELD, The Rev. F. J., F.S.A., Polstead Rectory, nr. Colchester.	} Rev. L. N. Prance.

## REPORT FOR 1900.

---

The Council, in presenting this its forty-eighth Annual Report, regrets to have to record that since the last Annual General Meeting Mr. J. R. Vaizey, LL.M., who for twenty-two years was one of its members, has been removed by death. It is recommended that the Rev. J. W. Kenworthy be elected to fill the vacancy thus created in the Council and that the Right Rev. The Bishop of Barking, M.A., F.S.A., be elected a Vice-President of the Society.

The total membership, which last year stood at 358, is to-day as under:—

Annual Subscribers ... ..	292
Life-compounders ... ..	48
Honorary Members ... ..	8
	348
Elected to-day ... ..	7
	355

The accounts for the past year may, on the whole, be considered satisfactory, the balance in hand at the end of the year being 6*l.* 17*s.* 6*d.*, as compared with 23*l.* 4*s.* 8*d.* at its beginning. There are, however, out-standing bills amounting to 136*l.* 12*s.* 7*d.*, which sum includes 44*l.* 1*s.* 0*d.* expended for printing and issuing the General Index.

The total cost of the General Index was 86*l.* 11*s.* 0*d.*, towards the payment of which about 40*l.* has been received, and the Council anticipates that, so soon as the value of the Index is realised, the deficiency on this account will be liquidated. The Council regrets that the Index was not so freely subscribed for by Members of the Society as was expected; and it takes this opportunity of impressing upon them the usefulness of the work, urgently asking those who have not already done so, to obtain a copy.

The accounts have been audited by Mr. W. C. Waller, F.S.A., to whom the Council tenders its thanks. The usual financial statement is appended.

During the past year Members have received Part I. of Volume VIII. of the *Transactions*; the Index to Vol. VII.; and a further instalment of the *Feet of Fines* for the county. Owing to the somewhat heavy outlay incurred in preparing for the press and publishing the General Index and the Index to Volume VII. of the *Transactions*, the funds of the Society did not admit of the issue of more than one part of the latter during the year.

A list of donations to the Society is subjoined.

In addition to the short excursion after the last Annual Meeting, when one of the interesting earthworks at Lexden was inspected under the guidance of Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., excursions were made to Nevenden, South Bemfleet, and Thundersley; to Harlow, Wallbury, Stanstead, and Bishops Stortford; and to Sturmer, Steeple Bumpsted, Birdbrook, Stambourne, and Great Yeldham; all of which were well attended.

It is proposed that the excursions this year shall be made in the neighbourhoods of Brentwood, Dunmow, and Lawford.

In conclusion, the Council desires to urge upon the Members the desirability of securing additional support for the Society, being convinced that, with a small effort on the part of individuals, many more Subscribers might easily be obtained in all parts of the county. Each year sees more material placed by the central authorities at the disposition of students of local history, and it mainly rests with the local Societies to encourage them to make due use of it.

---

## DONATIONS TO THE SOCIETY.

---

From the Editor East Anglian Notes and Queries—  
Vol. VIII., Jan. to Dec., 1900.

From Mr. G. H. Overend, F.S.A.—  
Queen Elizabeth at Helmingham by J. A. C. Vincent.

From Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A. (in aid of the *Transactions*)—  
Plan and Sketch of Ancient Rampart through Lexden Park.

*From Societies in union for the exchange of publications.*

Society of Antiquaries of Scotland—  
Proceedings, Vol. XXXII. and XXXIII.

Royal Archæological Institute—  
Archæological Journal, Vol. LVII.

British Archæological Association—  
Journal, Vol. VI. (New Series.)

Royal Institute of British Architects—  
Journal, Vol. VII., parts 3 and 4 and Vol. VIII., parts 1 and 2.  
Kalendar for 1900-1901.  
Congress Supplement to Vol. VII.

Saint Paul's Ecclesiological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. IV., part 5.

Bristol and Gloucester Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. XXII.

Cambridge Antiquarian Society—  
List of Members of the Society 1900.  
The MSS. in the Library at Lambeth Palace.  
Report of the Library Syndicate 1899.

- Chester Archæological Society—  
Catalogue of Roman Inscribed and Sculptured Stones in the  
Grosvenor Museum, Chester.
- Essex Field Club—  
Essex Naturalist, Vol. XI., Nos. 4-12, April to Dec., 1899.
- East Herts Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. I., part 2.
- Leicestershire Architectural and Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. IX., part 1.
- Powys-Land Club—  
Collections, Vol. XXXI., parts 2 and 3.
- Somerset Archæological Society—  
Proceedings, Vol. XLVI. (Vol. VI., 3rd series.)
- Suffolk Institute of Archæology—  
Proceedings, Vol. X., part 3.  
A Calendar of the Feet of Fines for Suffolk.
- Surrey Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XV.
- Sussex Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XLIII.
- Thoresby Society—  
Miscellanea, Vol. IX., part 3.  
Leeds Parish Registers, Vol. X., part 2.
- Wiltshire Archæological Society—  
Magazine, Vol. XXXI., Nos. 93 and 94.
-



# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY:

## LIST OF PUBLICATIONS.

---

**Transactions.** The Society's un-issued stock of the First Series (1858-73) was destroyed by fire in the year 1874.

Of the Second Series (seven volumes, 1878-1900), a few copies only remain in stock. To be had, in parts, at per volume £1:0:0

**Register of the Scholars admitted to Colchester School, 1637 - 1740**, edited, with additions, by J. H. Round, M.A., from the transcript by the Rev. C. L. Acland, M.A., cloth boards .. .. . 3:6

**Catalogue of Books, Pamphlets, Periodicals, MSS. and Scrap Collections in the Society's Library** 1:0

**General Index to the Transactions of the Society.**  
Vols. I. to V., and Vols. I. to V. New Series .. 12:0

All publications are demy 8vo in size.

Members of the Society are entitled to one copy of any of the above at a reduction of 25 per cent.



# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

## MUSEUM, COLCHESTER CASTLE.

### OFFICERS AND COUNCIL FOR 1901.

#### President.

GEORGE ALAN LOWNDES, Esq., M.A.

#### Vice-Presidents.

The Right Hon. LORD EUSTACE CECIL.  
The Right Rev. The LORD BISHOP OF ST. ALBANS, D.D.  
The Right Hon. LORD BRAYBROOKE, M.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD RAYLEIGH, M.A., F.R.S.  
The Right Hon. LORD ROOKWOOD, M.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD HAWKESBURY, F.S.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD CLAUD HAMILTON.  
The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF COLCHESTER, D.D.

The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF BARKING, D.D., F.S.A.  
Sir M. E. GRANT-DUFF, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S.  
Sir H. SEYMOUR KING, K.C.I.E., M.P.  
JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.  
Colonel A. R. M. LOCKWOOD, M.P.  
Major F. C. RASCH, M.P.  
GEORGE COURTAULD, Esq.

#### Council.

The PRESIDENT (*ex-officio*).  
G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Major-General B. R. BRANFILL.  
FREDERIC CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.  
MILLER CHRISTY, Esq., F.L.S.  
The Rev. A. F. CURTIS, M.A.  
The Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, D.D.  
The Rev. CECIL DEEDS, M.A.  
The Rev. H. L. ELLIOT, M.A.  
E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.  
The Rev. F. W. GALPIN, M.A., F.L.S.  
A. R. GODDARD, Esq., B.A.

I. C. GOULD, Esq.  
The Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.  
HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.  
WILLIAM MACANDREW, Esq.  
FRANCIS M. NICHOLS, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Rev. CANON NORMAN, M.A.  
The Rev. L. N. PRANCE, M.A., F.S.A.  
G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.  
DOUGLASS ROUND, Esq., M.A.  
J. HORACE ROUND, Esq., M.A.  
C. F. D. SPERLING, Esq., M.A.  
W. C. WALLER, Esq., M.A., F.S.A.

#### Treasurer.

JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.

#### Honorary Secretary.

G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Lawn, Coggeshall.

#### Collector.

Mrs. PARISH,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Honorary Curator.

HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Sub. Curator.

Mr. F. SPALDING,  
The Museum, Colchester.

#### Local Secretaries.

Braintree—Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.  
Brentwood—F. LONDON, Esq.  
Billericay—Major-Genl. B. R. BRANFILL.  
Bishops Stortford—G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Chelmsford—F. CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.

Coggeshall—G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Colchester—H. LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.  
Loughton—I. C. GOULD, Esq.  
Maldon—E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.  
Southend—W. H. DRAFER, Esq., B.A.

*Free to Members; Price to Non-Members, 5/-.*

# TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

**Essex Archæological Society.**

---

---

VOL. VIII., PART III.

NEW SERIES.

---

---



COLCHESTER :

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY AT THE MUSEUM IN THE CASTLE.

1901.

CONTENTS OF PART III., VOL. VIII.

	PAGE
I. <i>Some Interesting Essex Brasses.</i> By MILLER CHRISTY and W. W. PORTEOUS ... ..	249
II. <i>Lawford Church.</i> By the Rev. E. K. GREEN, M.A. ...	286
III. <i>The Churches of Great and Little Bromley.</i> By the Rev. H. H. MINCHIN, M.A. ... ..	292
IV. <i>Essex Field Names.</i> Collected and arranged by WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. <i>Part VII.—The Hundreds of Uttlesford and Clavering</i> ... ..	295
V. <i>Great Easton Mount.</i> By I. CHALKLEY GOULD ...	324
VI. <i>Stukeley's "Temple" at Navestock.</i> By I. CHALKLEY GOULD	327
<i>Archæological Notes</i> ... ..	329
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Thursday, 23rd May, 1901</i> ...	336
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Tuesday, 30th July, 1901</i> ...	337
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Saturday, 5th October, 1901</i> ...	338

---

*For Illustrations see inside back cover.*

## SOME INTERESTING ESSEX BRASSES.

BY MILLER CHRISTY AND W. W. PORTEOUS.

(Continued from vol. viii. (1900), p. 54.)

THE brasses selected for notice on this occasion form a somewhat miscellaneous assortment. We treat, however, of the entire series of brasses belonging to South Weald and Great Coggeshall respectively. Those at the last-named place have already been figured by Mr. Beaumont, but from sketches only, in his *History of Coggeshall* (1890).

We shall, as on previous occasions, thank any of our readers who may be kind enough to draw our attention to points of interest which have escaped our notice in connection with any of the brasses described.

We are much indebted to various friends who have rendered us valuable assistance. Mr. E. Bertram Smith has been indefatigable both in obtaining for us rubbings suitable for reproduction and in gathering information. Mr. Mill Stephenson, F.S.A., has given us help and advice on many points. Mr. G. F. Beaumont, F.S.A., has supplied the blocks of the brasses at Great Coggeshall. The Rev. H. L. Elliot has advised us on heraldic points, especially those connected with the brass at Belchamp St. Paul. Mr. A. B. Bamford, in charge of the Museum at Colchester Castle, has kindly facilitated access to the Holman Manuscripts preserved there. Canon Fraser and Mr. Arthur H. Brown have given us much indispensable help and information as to the brasses at South Weald, and the latter has allowed us to reproduce his rubbings of them, taken about 1850, when some which are now lost existed. Our figures of the lost Parker brass (1673) formerly at Brentwood and the partially-covered Torrell brass (about 1450) at Willingale Doe are also from rubbings taken many years ago by Mr. Brown. To all of these gentlemen and to Mr. John Sands (mentioned hereafter), we tender our thanks.

BELCHAMP ST. PAUL.—*Two Compositions, originally distinct, but now remounted, without method, upon a single new Slab. Dates about 1591 and 1595.*

The visitor to the church of Belchamp St. Paul may well be puzzled to explain the relations which the various portions of this remarkable composition (as now fixed) bear to one another. It consists, indeed, of the remaining portions of *two separate brasses* which have been torn

[VOL. VIII. NEW SERIES.]

from their original slabs and remounted, in unintelligible order, on a new slab, which now lies in the centre of the chancel. They were probably torn up and refixed when the church was restored in 1873.<sup>1</sup>

The two brasses commemorated, apparently, (1) Mrs. Elizabeth Golding (*née* West: died 1591), her first husband, John Buckenham, and her second husband, William Golding, with her children by each, and (2) William Golding, his wife Elizabeth, and his children by her—all being thus shown a second time.

It is unusual to find a lady, her second husband, and her children by him all commemorated twice over by two different brasses in the same church. The only explanation we can suggest to account for it having been done in this case is that the lady pre-deceased her second husband; that, on her death in 1591, a brass to her memory was laid down, on which she herself, her two husbands, and all her children by both were represented; and that, on the death of her second husband a few years later, another brass to *his* memory was laid down, on which the lady in question and her children by him were shown again.

Both brasses were originally on altar-tombs which stood on the north side of the chancel.

It is obvious that, when the remaining plates (eleven in number) were refixed, no regard was paid to their respective relationships to one another, and that they were re-arranged solely in order that they might form, as a whole, a neat and symmetrical design. An inscription to Mrs. Golding (whose effigy is lost) is placed at the bottom. Immediately above it is an effigy of William Golding, whose inscription is lost; while, above his head, is his achievement. On either side of his feet and immediately above the inscription are groups of children—on the dexter, a boy and girl (Edmond and Dorothy Buckenham): on the sinister, a boy (Edward Golding). Level with the man's middle, on either side, are other groups of children—on the dexter, three daughters (Elizabeth, Margery, and Mary Golding): on the sinister, a son and three daughters (Edward, Elizabeth, Margery, and Mary Golding, shown a second time). Level with his head, on the dexter side, is a large shield belonging to William Golding, and, on the sinister, a smaller shield bearing West. At the top, on either side of William Golding's achievement, are two more shields belonging, we believe, to Mrs. Golding's brass.

In addition to these eleven plates, now refixed to a new slab, there are also in the church, let into the south wall of the chancel, beneath

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Charles J. Blomfield, son of the late Sir Arthur Blomfield (who restored the church), has been good enough to make search among his father's original drawings and measurements relating to the church, but can find therein nothing relating to the brass.

the canopies of the sedilia, two well-carved lozenge-shaped panels of Purbeck marble, into which are let two brass shields bearing, respectively, the arms of Golding and Buckenham. These panels came from the side of the altar-tomb bearing Mrs. Golding's brass.

Neither the British Museum nor the Society of Antiquaries possesses a rubbing of either of the two brasses as they were originally; and no rubbing of either now exists, so far as we know. Among the Holman Manuscripts (date about 1710) now preserved at Colchester, there are, however, full descriptions (quoted hereafter) of the two brasses as they were at that date. We have thought it best, therefore, to treat of and illustrate them *separately*—not jumbled together as they are now.

We had decided, indeed, to do this, and had separated the two brasses, as far as was possible, following the guidance afforded by the inscription and the armorial bearings, before we discovered that Holman's Manuscripts threw much light upon the problems to be solved. In doing this, we had had the advantage of the invaluable advice of the Rev. H. L. Elliot, who had made a most careful study of the brass and the heraldic problems it presents. He first pointed out to us the fact that the various plates now jumbled together so meaninglessly on one slab belonged, apparently, to two different compositions: also that the two shields on panels came, probably, from the sides or ends of the altar-tomb. Without his kind and very liberal help, we should have been quite unable to separate and re-arrange the eleven existing plates with any confidence. He is to be congratulated, we think, on having solved a difficult and complicated problem without falling into any error which the information at his disposal made it possible for him to avoid.

Holman's knowledge of heraldry was evidently limited. His blazon, though intelligible, is very peculiar. There is also, apparently, some confusion in his arrangement of the shields on Mrs. Golding's brass. In our figures, we have arranged each of the shields in the position it was evidently meant to occupy—that is, over the effigy of the person it was clearly intended to commemorate.

The Goldings came originally from Halstead, says Morant, who adds that they "were for a while considerable in the parish [of "Belchamp St. Paul]," which they held for a long period from the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's. John Golding, of Belchamp St. Paul Hall, was one of the Auditors of the Exchequer in the beginning of the sixteenth century. His elder son, Sir Thomas Golding, was Sheriff of Essex and Herts in 1561 and of Essex alone in 1569. The latter's brother William was the person commemorated by this brass. He died, probably (judging from the style of his

armour), soon after his wife (1591). Their sister, Margaret, married John de Vere, sixteenth Earl of Oxford, and became the mother of Edward the seventeenth Earl. The three bezants (or golden roundels) in the armorial bearings of the family form, without doubt, a rebus upon the name, as also does the motto—*Use bien vostre bezant* (Make good use of your gold).

I.—*Inscription to Mrs. Elizabeth Golding (formerly Buckenham: née West), with two Groups of Children (one Son and one Daughter, one Son and three Daughters, respectively), and three Shields; also two smaller Shields [a third being lost], from the sides of the Altar-tomb. [Effigies of the Lady and her two Husbands lost.] Date 1591.*

Holman's description of this brass, as he saw it about 1710, is as follows:—

"In the Chancell, on the North Side, under a Gray marble monumt, by the wall, lie interred the Persons following, with this Inscription, on a plate of Brasse Inlaid:— . . . [see *post*].

"At the upper end of this tomb are 3 Escocheons inlaid in brass:—

"On the right side, an Escoccheon parted per Pale. The first Pale contains 2 Quarters; in each quarter 3 Coats . . . [Golding, Worthe, and Warner blazoned]. The 2<sup>d</sup> Quarter has 3 Coates . . . [Helyon, Swynborne, Toughe blazoned]. In the 2<sup>d</sup> Pale [is] but one Coate—West.

"The second Escoccheon is parted p' Pale. In the first Pale, 4 coates: (1) The Armes of West,<sup>1</sup> (2) 5 Barres [Pever?], (3) 3 Bezants pierced with a cross Crosslet [Heath?], (4) as the first.<sup>2</sup> In the 2<sup>d</sup> Pale [are] the Armes of West, *ut supra*.

"On ye left side, near the wall, is the 3<sup>d</sup> escoccheon, containing only the Armes of West.

"Beneath these Escoccheons are the Portraitsures of a Woman betwixt 2 Men in Brasse, wh. I suppose to be her 2 Husbands.

"At the lower end of this Stone, under the Inscription aforesaid, are the Pourtraictures of a Son and 3 Daughters, on the right side: and the like of another son and Daughter on the left; supposed to be the Children she had by her 2 Husbands.

"Underneath, on the foreside of the Monumt, are 3 Escoccheons inlaid in Brasse (1) The Armes of Golding, (2) a Lyon rampant gules, Buckenham, (3) The Armes of West, *ut supra*."

Turning to the brass as it exists to-day, we find that all the plates described by Holman still remain except the three principal effigies and one of the small shields from the front side of the altar-tomb.

The inscription (25 by 4½ inches) relates in English that Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Edmond West, Esquire, of Cornard, Suffolk,

<sup>1</sup> Here Holman is in error. The coat is that of Buckenham (a lion rampant gules): not that of West (a lion rampant argent, collared).

<sup>2</sup> Here again Holman errs. The lion rampant lacks the collar, which that of West has; while it cannot be that of Buckenham either, as it is of a different colour.

had married, firstly, John Buckenham, Esquire (by whom she had Edmond and Dorothy—the latter deceased), and, secondly, William Golding, Esquire (by whom she had Edward, Elizabeth, Margery, and Mary—the two former deceased), and that she died 20th May 1591.

These children by her two marriages (a son and a daughter by the first: a son and three daughters by the second, as stated in the inscription) are represented separately.

The two sons (each about 7 inches high) are attired alike, in doublet, knee-breeches, hose, and low shoes, with a short cloak having a large collar overall. The four daughters are also attired alike, in Paris bonnet, neck-ruffs, over-gown, tied at the waist by a sash, but open below, showing the under-gown, which is plain.<sup>1</sup>

The three shields placed above the heads of the effigies bear respectively:

(1).—Quarterly, 1st Buckenham,<sup>2</sup> 2nd Pever,<sup>3</sup> 3rd Heath,<sup>4</sup> 4th ———?,<sup>5</sup> all impaling West.<sup>6</sup>

(2).—West.



Three Effigies gone from here

Here lye the bodies of Elizabeth one of the daughters & coheires of Edmond West late of Cornard Esquyre first married to John Buckenham Esquyre by whom she had Edmond yet living & Dorothy deceased and after married to William Golding Esquyre by whom she had Edward & Elizabeth deceased and Margery and Mary yet living obijt xx May 1591.



ELIZABETH GOLDING (FORMERLY BUCKENHAM:  
*née* WEST), 1591, AT BELCHAMP ST. PAUL.

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Golding's six children all have, it will be observed, a half-turn to the sinister, which is unusual. This may be accounted for, perhaps (as Mr. Elliot suggests), by the tomb having been placed against the wall, but is intended, more likely, to show that they are by different husbands.

<sup>2</sup> [Argent], a lion rampant [gules].

<sup>3</sup> [Or], two bars [sable].

<sup>4</sup> [Argent], three roundles [each charged with a cross crosslet].

<sup>5</sup> [———?], a lion rampant [or].

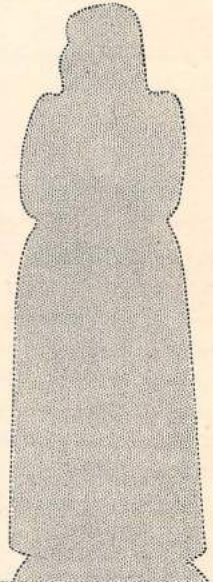
<sup>6</sup> [Sable] a lion rampant [argent], collared [or].



(3).—Quarterly of six, 1st Golding,<sup>1</sup> with a crescent for difference, 2nd Worth or Worthie<sup>2</sup>, 3rd Warner,<sup>3</sup> 4th Helyon,<sup>4</sup> 5th Swynborne,<sup>5</sup> 6th Tonge, Toughe, or Sloughe,<sup>6</sup> all impaling West.

These represent, of course, the lady's own paternal coat (in the centre); the coat of her first husband Buckingham, impaling her own (on the dexter); and the coat of her second husband (Golding), also impaling her own (on the sinister).

Of the three small shields (placed originally on the front side of the altar-tomb, and bearing the arms of West, Buckingham, and Golding, respectively), all still remain, except the first named.



<sup>1</sup> [Gules], a chevron [argent] between three bezants. Crest: A dragon's (or mastiff's) head erased [? vert], collared and ringed or.

<sup>2</sup> [Gules], a saltire [argent], fretty [azure], between twelve cinquefoils [or] (3, 3, 3, and 3).

<sup>3</sup> [Or], a bend engrailed between six roses [gules].

<sup>4</sup> [Gules fretty argent], a fess [or].

<sup>5</sup> [Gules], crusily and three boar heads coupéd [argent].

<sup>6</sup> [Argent], three billets palewise in fess [sable], in chief as many torteaux. (This coat is assigned, in Harl MS. 1541, fo. 107b, to Tonge; in Harl. MS. 1137, fo. 47, to Sloughe.)



WILLIAM GOLDING AND WIFE, ABOUT 1595,  
AT BELCHAMP ST. PAUL.

II.—*Effigy of a Man in Armour* [William Golding, Esquire], with two Groups of Children (one Son and three Daughters respectively), an Achievement, and a Shield. [*Effigy of his Wife, Elizabeth, and the Inscription lost.*] Date about 1595.

Of this brass Holman says:—

"On the same [north] Side of the Chancel, near the East Windowe, stands an Anciente Tomb of [ ] Marble.

"Att the upper End are 2 Escocheons, the first p'ted p' Crosse, containing Golding, Worth, Toughe, and Golding, *ut supra*. On the left side, by the Wall another Escocheon p'ted p' Pale—in the first pale the same Coates as before last mentioned: in the 2<sup>d</sup> Pale, the Armes of West, *ut antea*.

"Beneath these Escocheons are the Portraictures in Brasse of a man and his wife. Yt belonging to the Woman is torne of. At their feet was an inscription on a brasse plate, but y<sup>t</sup> is likewise lost.

"Under the man is the Effigies of a Male and under the woman of 3 females, on a Brasse plate."

Of the five plates here mentioned by Holman as existing when he wrote, all still remain.

William Golding (24½ inches high) stands, with a half-turn to the left, on a piece of chequer-paved foreground. He wears a large neck-ruff and armour of the Elizabethan period—a long-waisted cuirass, with large épaulières, long tassets (both scollop-edged), &c. The rivets, bolts, hinges, and staples by means of which the various plates are held together are very obvious. The sword is suspended diagonally behind. He has beard and moustache.

The son (7¼ inches high) wears the long gown of a slightly-earlier period, with long false-sleeves and large neck-ruff.

The daughters (6½ inches high) wear the Paris bonnet, with long gowns, tied by a sash at the waist, open below (displaying the under-gown), and neck-ruff.<sup>1</sup>

The achievement (on a plate 9½ by 8 inches) bears Quarterly, 1st and 4th Golding, 2nd Worth or Worthie, 3rd Tonge, Toughe, or Slowghe, with the crest of Golding.

The shield bears Golding quarterly (as above) impaling West.

Although the inscription was lost, even when Holman wrote, the arms on the shields sufficiently indicate the brass as that of William and Elizabeth Golding.

BRENTWOOD.—[*Inscription to John Parker, with a Representation of St. George and the Dragon above and an Achievement of Arms below; all on one plate. Now lost.*] Date 1673.

This rectangular plate (11¼ by 15 inches) was formerly in the Church of St. Thomas the Martyr, Brentwood (rebuilt 1882-3), but is now lost. Our figure is from a rubbing taken by Mr. A. H. Brown

<sup>1</sup> The inscription to Mrs. Golding shows that the son's name was Edward: the daughters' names, Elizabeth, Margery, and Mary.

on 11th August 1859, when the brass was in the keeping of Mr. Brown, as churchwarden of the parish. The design was so lightly engraved that Mr. Brown found it impossible to make a satisfactory rubbing of it, though he made many attempts. It is of a kind not very unusual at the period, when the art of engraving monumental brasses was all but extinct.

The inscription (which is in Roman capitals) consists, in addition to the name and date of death ("Johanes Parker, April y<sup>e</sup> xix<sup>th</sup> 1673"), of this legend:

*Post pugnam  
totamq<sup>e</sup> fidem  
cursumq<sup>e</sup> peractum  
quiete, victor in  
Deo, frvor, meo.<sup>1</sup>*

St. George, wearing a helmet and bearing an oval shield charged with the Cross of St. George, is represented with uplifted sword and standing upon the dragon.

The shield bears Parker.<sup>2</sup>

We know nothing of John Parker and have failed to discover any family of the name bearing the arms shown. There were Parkers at Shenfield at the end of the sixteenth century.<sup>3</sup>

DENGIE.—*Effigies of a Lady (slightly mutilated), five Sons, and three Daughters. [Inscription lost.] Date about 1520.*

This brass is not referred to by Haines, nor (so far as we know) by any other writer. It lies on the north side of the nave. With scant appreciation of the oldest monument in the church, the stove has been placed on the top of it, so that, in order to rub it, one must first remove the ashes from the stove and then reach right underneath it.

The lady (15 inches high) wears the usual long, low-necked, tight-fitting gown of the period, with close-fitting fur-cuffed sleeves, and

<sup>1</sup> Having fought the fight, and kept the faith, and finished the course, a conqueror through God, I enter into the enjoyment of my rest.

<sup>2</sup> A stag statant, collared and chained: crest, a wild man wreathed about the loins, holding in his dexter hand a cross-bow.

See *Visitations of Essex*, p. 260.



JOHN PARKER, 1673, FORMERLY AT BRENTWOOD.

confined at the waist by a girdle which fastens in front by means of a clasp consisting of three rosette-like objects, from which hangs, by a chain of three strands, some kind of ornament. Her shoes are exceedingly broad-toed. Over her head she wears a plain kerchief, which falls upon her shoulders and may indicate widowhood.<sup>1</sup> The expression on her face is that of advanced age. A small portion of the head has been broken out.

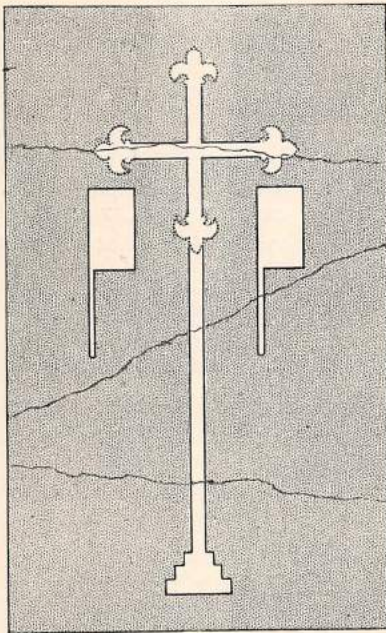
The inscription ( $2\frac{3}{4}$  by 23 inches) is lost.

The children are of the ordinary type of the period. The daughters wear their hair down their backs, indicating that they were unmarried.

There is no clue to the lady's identity.



A LADY, ABOUT 1520, AT DENGIE.



CROSS FLORY, WITH BANNERETS (MATRIX),  
ABOUT 1420, AT FYFIELD.

FYFIELD.—[*A Latin Cross-flory, with two Bannerets. All now lost.*] Date about 1420.

The slab ( $63\frac{1}{2}$  inches by 39 inches) which formerly bore this elegant and rather uncommon design lies on the north side of the chancel. It is broken across in more than one place and the matrix in which the brass was set is exceedingly worn—so much so that one cannot now make out where the inscription was placed. Possibly it was on the cross itself. The whole has recently been covered by the organ.

<sup>1</sup> The only other Essex figures with similar head-dress are at Saffron Walden (about 1510) and Nettiswell (1522). The latter (though larger) is otherwise so closely similar in every detail (except the girdle) that there can be no doubt both were engraved by the same hand.

The cross (about 56 inches in height) was of the usual type—a plain Latin cross-flory, with a tall slender stem rising from a stepped Calvary. Many of its details are now defaced, but the general design is still traceable. We have no cross of this type now remaining in the county, but there are matrices of such crosses at Danbury and Terling.

The bannerets (on shafts 16 inches in length) form an unusual feature on a brass. They are placed one on each side of the stem of the cross.

It is quite useless to speculate as to whom this cross may have been intended to commemorate.

GREAT COGGESHALL.—*Six Compositions, most of them mutilated, ranging in date from about 1490 to 1599.*

This church must have been once very rich in Monumental Brasses. In addition to the six here noticed, we find, in the pages of Weever and Symonds, references to the former existence of five or six others now lost. Holman says, in his unpublished History of Essex (about 1710), now preserved at Colchester Castle:—

“In the floor of this Church and Chancell have been several fair Grave-stones, with Pourtraictures and Inscriptions in Brasse, which are torne of by sacrilegious handes or worne out by frequent calcation, so that the remembrance of the persons interr'd had utterly perished, if it had not been for some Remaines preserved by Mr. Weever and Mr. Symonds in their Collections.”

Of the six compositions which remain, the plates of three (those numbered I., II., and VI. in the following list) had long been detached from their original slabs and so remained until recently, when they were affixed to the walls of the church at the expense of the churchwarden, Mr. G. F. Beaumont, F.S.A., our Honorary Secretary.<sup>1</sup>

I.—*Effigies of the two Wives of —— (perhaps Paycock). [Effigy of the Man, Inscription, and perhaps other parts lost.] Date about 1490.*

These companion effigies, belonging evidently to one composition, have been detached for many years from their slab. When Haines wrote, in 1861, they were loose at the vicarage.<sup>2</sup> Recently, they have been affixed to the wall of the north aisle.

The effigies (24½ inches in height) have a half-turn towards one another and towards that of the husband, which must have been placed, as usual, in the middle, but has long been lost. They are

<sup>1</sup> The Society has also to thank Mr. Beaumont for kindly defraying the cost of making the five blocks of the Coggeshall Brasses, here inserted.

<sup>2</sup> *Manual*, p. 55.



TWO WIVES OF — PAYCOCK (?), ABOUT 1490,  
AT GREAT COGGESHALL.

almost exact counterparts of one another, differing only in a few most trifling details of costume and slightly in feature. They wear the butterfly head-dress in a not-very-pronounced form, with plain, tight-fitting, low-necked gowns, having tight sleeves with large furred cuffs and a plain narrow girdle over the hips. The edge of an undergarment is visible at the neck. A small portion is broken from the lower corner of the effigy of the first wife.<sup>1</sup>

As to the identity of the two ladies, one can only surmise that they may have been wives of some early member of the Paycock family—a famous Coggeshall family of cloth-makers.

II.—*Effigies of a Civilian (slightly mutilated: probably a member of the Paycock family) and his second Wife. [Effigy of his first Wife, Inscription, and perhaps other parts lost.] Date about 1520.*

These figures have long been reaved from their slab, of which we know nothing. In 1861, they were loose at the vicarage,<sup>2</sup> but are now mural in the north aisle. We have, indeed, no actual evidence that they really belong to one another, but the fact that both are of about the same date and proportionate in size leaves little doubt that they represent man and wife, whilst the fact that the husband is full-faced



CIVILIAN AND WIFE, ABOUT 1520,  
AT GREAT COGGESHALL.

<sup>1</sup> Two very similar effigies, recently preserved at Audley End House, but now refixed in Saffron Walden Church, have been figured by us previously (see *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, N.S., vii., p. 241).

<sup>2</sup> See Haines: *Manual*, p. 55.

and the wife has a half-turn to the right towards him shows that there was once another (first) wife, who was placed on his right hand with a half-turn to the left, towards him.

The male effigy (25 inches in height) represents him in the long, plain, fur-trimmed, loose-sleeved, civilian gown of the period and very round-toed shoes. A gypcière hangs from his girdle.

The lady (23½ inches in height) wears the pedimental head-dress and a low-necked, tight-fitting, close-sleeved gown, girt at the waist by an embroidered girdle the long ornamented end of which hangs nearly to the ground.

There can be little doubt, though there is no proof, that these effigies represent members of the Paycock family of Coggeshall. Weever mentions<sup>1</sup> two inscriptions in brass which, though now lost, existed in Coggeshall Church in 1631, both of which commemorated members of this family who had two wives and died about the date of these effigies. The inscriptions were to Thomas Paycock, clothworker, who died on the 4th September 1518, and his two wives, Margaret and Ann, and to Robert Paycock, clothworker, who died on the 21st October 1520, and his two wives, Elizabeth and Joan. In all probability, the effigies here figured belonged to one or other of these inscriptions.

III.—*Effigies of John Paycock and Joan his Wife.* [*A Mouth-scroll to each of the principal Effigies, a Figure of Christ standing on a Scroll above their heads, a Foot-legend, two Groups of Children (? three Sons and a Daughter), a Mouth-scroll to each Group, four Shields (placed at the corners), and a Marginal Inscription all lost.*] *Date 1533.*

The large slab bearing this fine composition is of grey marble and lies in the north chancel aisle. The brass is of interest as being undoubtedly the work of a company of brass-engravers known to have been established about this time in Suffolk. The costume, especially that of the lady, presents marked peculiarities.

The man (36 inches high) wears a tight-sleeved doublet, long hose exceedingly-ugly broad-toed low shoes, fastened by straps over the instep, and over all a long gown, reaching below the level of the knees, open down the front, turned back at the neck, and having long capacious false-sleeves, through holes in the sides of which his arms are thrust. His hair is long.

The lady (also 36 inches high) is attired in the costume usually shown on brasses executed by the Suffolk engravers. It consists of

<sup>1</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, p. 618.

a long gown, cut low and square at the neck, where an undergarment is visible, with fairly-loose sleeves (turned back at the wrists to form cuffs, which leave visible the sleeves of an undergown), and confined



JOHN AND JOAN PAYCOCK, 1533.  
AT GREAT COGGESHALL.

loosely at the waist by a sash, tied in a bow, with the ends hanging down. The skirt of the gown is of that very peculiar kind which was so long that the bottom had to be caught up behind and before and held in position by a band encircling the hips, leaving the undergown exposed from about the level of the knees downwards. Her shoes are exceedingly broad-toed. A short tippet covers her shoulders. On her head is the round, flat, tam-o'-shanter-like cap, with lappets covering the ears, which is usually associated with this costume—the Suffolk Costume, as one may call it.<sup>1</sup>

All the accessories mentioned above have been, we believe, long lost. The figure of Christ, which appears to have been crowned, existed in Holman's time. The shields were, doubtless, armorial.

<sup>1</sup> We have already figured in these pages other figures, very similarly attired and ranging in date from about 1530 to about 1540, which may be found at Toppesfield, Saffron Walden (Audley End) and Elmdon, in this county. In Suffolk, such figures are fairly common.



The Foot-legend bore (according to Weever<sup>1</sup>):—*Orate pro anima Johannis Paycock et Johanne uxoris eius, qui quidem Johannes obiit 2 Aprilis 1533.* The Marginal fillet bore, according to the same writer, the Creed in Latin:—*Credo in Deum Patrem, &c.*

IV.—*Effigy of Thomas Peay-cocke, with Foot-legend, and part of Marginal Inscription.* [Rest of Marginal Inscription, a Mouth-scroll, four Escutcheons, and a Merchant's Mark lost.] Date 1580.

The slab bearing the remains of this brass lies in the north aisle. Weever, curiously, does not mention the brass, though he mentions others, now lost, from the same church. The effigy and foot-legend have been figured by Mr. Beaumont from a sketch.

The effigy (27 inches in height) wears, over a doublet, an ample gown, with striped false-sleeves. His face is clean shaven.

The Foot-legend (5 by 14½ inches) consists of four English verses of religious exhortation.<sup>2</sup>

The Marginal Inscription (on a fillet 1⅞ inch broad) read, when complete, as follows:—*Here lyeth buried Thomas Peaycocke, the Sonne of Robert Peaycocke, who Departed this Lyfe the xxvi<sup>th</sup> daye of December 1580, and Left behinde*



THOMAS PAYCOCKE, 1580,  
AT GREAT COGGESHALL.

<sup>1</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, p. 618.

<sup>2</sup> The same lines are to be found at Wootton-Underwood, Bucks (1587); Berry Pomeroy, Devon (1590); and Ufford, Suffolk (1598).

*hym too | Daughters, Johan and Anne; w<sup>ch</sup> [Thomas Peaycocke dydd gyve CC pounds to buy land for the continuall relief of the poore of Coxall for ever].*<sup>1</sup>

The four square plates (each 6½ by 6 inches) placed in the four corners were, perhaps, armorial. They were lost even before Holman's time. The plate (4 inches square) which was placed above his head bore his merchant's mark, of which Holman gives a very crude sketch. According to Holman, the mouth-scroll bore the words *Only Fayth justifyeth*.

The house in which Thomas Paycock resided still stands in West Street and is one of the most interesting buildings in the town. Mr. Beaumont has described its finely-carved oaken entrance gateway and front. By his will, he left a sum of £200 to found Thomas Paycock's Charity, which still exists.

V.—*Inscription (only) to George Laurance, with his Merchant's Mark (on the same plate). Date 1594.*

This brass (on a single plate measuring 5 by 22½ inches) lies in the North Chancel aisle. It is chiefly remarkable from the fact that the merchant's mark of the person commemorated (of which his initials, "G. L.," form a part) is added.

HERE LYETH BVRYED THE BODYE OF GEORGE LAVRANCE  
THE SONNE OF IOHN LAVRENCE SOME TYME CLOTHIER  
OF THIS TOWNE WHICH GEORGE DYED THE .XIII.  
DAYE OF NOVEMBER IN THE YEARE OF OVRE  
LORD GOD.1594

AL  
GL  
XX

INSCRIPTION TO GEORGE LAURANCE, 1594, AT GREAT COGGESHALL.

The inscription, which is in Roman capitals and small capitals, is common-place.

We know nothing of the persons commemorated. John Laurance, the father, who is described as having been formerly a "clothier" (that is, a cloth-weaver), of Coggeshall, can hardly have been the John Laurance, sexton of Coggeshall, whose burial on December 28th, 1558, is recorded in the second entry in the Parish Register of burials.<sup>2</sup> George Laurance was probably, judging from his possession of a

<sup>1</sup> A rubbing preserved in the British Museum shows only what now remains, but an older rubbing belonging to the Society of Antiquaries shows, in addition, the words *and Anne, w<sup>ch</sup>*. The rest of the inscription, as given in square brackets, is taken from Holman's Manuscripts at Colchester.

<sup>2</sup> See Beaumont's *History of Coggeshall*, p. 37.

merchant's mark, also a "clothier," of Coggeshall—one, doubtless, of the many for which the town was famed at the period in question. He was one of those who, on 17th March 1584, were appointed Trustees of Thomas Paycock's Charity.<sup>1</sup>

VI.—*Inscription to John Oldam, Gentleman. Date 1599.*

This plate (9 by 17½ inches) is now mural in the room over the porch. So far as we know, there was never an effigy belonging to it.

The inscription (which is in Roman capitals) reads:—

"For the memorye of John Oldam, of East | Tilbvrve, Gent., who dyed the  
24. day of | Avgvst, in the yeare of ovr Lord 1599 & | of his age the xxxth.  
Fravnces, y<sup>e</sup> daughte of | Richard Brewninge, of Wimeringe, in the | Covnty  
of Southampton, Esquire, & his late | wife, mother to one onely daughte by  
him, | named Marye, hath set this to remayne."

We know nothing whatever of this person.

LITTLE ILFORD.—*Effigy of Thomas Heron (child aged 14), with  
Foot-legend. Date 1517.*

This brass, formerly in the chancel (according to Haines), is now affixed to the north wall of the nave. It commemorated a school-boy and is the only figure of its kind and date which we have in Essex. Haines gives<sup>2</sup> a small figure of the effigy only.

The effigy (16½ inches high) represents the youth with long hair and clothed in the long wide-sleeved gown of the period. From his girdle hang an ink-horn (or gypcière ?) and pen-case.

The former hangs from his left side, which is unusual, and both appear to have been represented by white-metal or enamel let in.

The inscription (5½ by 20 inches) reads:—*Hic iacet Thomas Heron etatis xiiij annos, filius et | heres Johis Heron militis Thesaur' Came' e' dñi Regis | qui obiit in Alderbroke xvij die m'cij A dñi m<sup>o</sup> v | xvij et anno Reg' Henrici octavi Nono.* | <sup>3</sup>

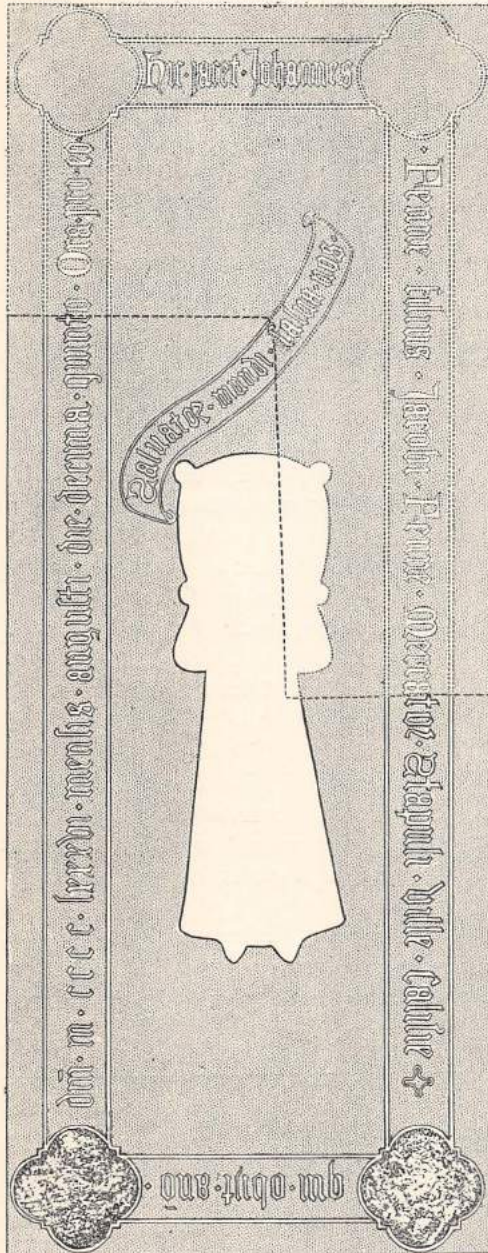


THOMAS HERON (SCHOOLBOY), 1517,  
AT LITTLE ILFORD.

<sup>1</sup> *Hist. of Coggeshall*, p. 162.

<sup>2</sup> *Manual*, p. lxxxvi.

<sup>3</sup> Here lies Thomas Heron, aged 14 years, son and heir of John Heron, Knight, Private Treasurer of our Lord the King, who died at Alderbrook the 18th day of March, in the year of our Lord MDXVII., and in the ninth year of the Reign of King Henry VIII.



JOHN FENNE (MATRIX OF EFFIGY AND INCISED INSCRIPTION), 1486, AT ST. MARY'S, MALDON.

T

According to the county historians, the Manor of Aldersbrook was probably granted by Henry VIII. to Sir John Heron, Treasurer of the Household. He died on the 8th July 1521, leaving five marks per annum, payable by the Fishmonger's Company, to the rector of the parish and his successors. The estate then passed, apparently, to his son, Sir Giles Heron (a brother of the Thomas Heron whom this brass commemorates); but, he being beheaded, it was forfeited to the Crown.

MALDON (SAINT MARY'S).—*Effigy (now lost) of John Fenne, Merchant, with Marginal Inscription and Mouth-Scroll (both cut in the stone). Date 1486.*

We have, in Essex, no other monument of this character. Indeed, monuments combining (as does this) the brass with the incised slab are, we believe, very rare. Strictly speaking, this monument is (now, at any rate) more nearly of the nature of an incised slab than a brass;

but we describe it as a brass because it seems more convenient so to deal with any monument of the kind which bears or ever has borne any portion of brass inlaid.

The slab in question is large (measuring  $70\frac{1}{2}$  by  $27\frac{1}{2}$  inches) and consists of some hard, close-grained, dark-coloured, slate-like stone. It lies near the east end of the nave. Unfortunately, the upper end and part of the sinister side has been covered, within recent years, by the steps of a new stone pulpit, and the portion which remains exposed is a good deal worn, so that the inscription is not very legible. The slab is, in all probability, of foreign workmanship.

The effigy (29 inches high) has been long lost, though it remained, apparently, when Holman wrote, about 1710. It appears from the outline of the matrix (which is still sharp) to have been of a very unusual character—at least in this county. The merchant seems to have been represented in a long gown, from below the bottom of which his toes protuded. His head appears to have rested upon a very large cushion or wool-sack.

The incised marginal inscription commences in the upper dexter corner and is intended to be read from the inside. It is placed between incised lines (4 inches apart), with large quaterfoils containing representations of the Apostolic Emblems (now very much defaced<sup>1</sup>) at the four corners. The letters are each about  $2\frac{1}{4}$  inches in height. It is in Latin and reads:—[*Hic jacet Johannes | Fenne, filius Jacobi Fenne, Merca]tor Stapuli Ville Calisie ☩ | qui obiit* anō | dn̄i M CCCC LXXXVI, mensis augusti, die decima quint[o. Ora pro eo.]<sup>2</sup> Salmon says<sup>3</sup> that Symonds observed this slab about 1650, when it was “almost covered with pews,” and that he gives the inscription—presumably in his MS. notes now in Herald’s College.

The mouth-scroll ( $2\frac{1}{4}$  inches wide) bears the legend, *Saluator mundi* [*salua nos*].<sup>4</sup>

Of John Fenne, we know nothing, except what the inscription tell us.

<sup>1</sup> So much so that we have not attempted to show them in our illustration.

<sup>2</sup> Here lies John Fenne, son of James Fenne, merchant of the Staple of the Town of Calais, who died in the year 1486, on the fifteenth day of the month of August. Pray for him. The portions now covered (enclosed above in square brackets) are supplied by Mr. Fitch (*Maldon and the River Blackwater*, 1898, p. 42), who recently possessed a rubbing taken before the pulpit was put up. The “S” in *Stapuli* is reversed.

<sup>3</sup> *Hist. of Essex*, 1749, p. 425.

<sup>4</sup> Saviour of the World, Save us. The last two words (enclosed above in square brackets) are now covered and are supplied from Mr. Fitch’s book.

ROMFORD (*private possession*).—*Three Effigies of Civilians. Dates, respectively, about 1450, about 1480, and 1606.*

Several years since, Mr. John Sands, of Dagenham Priory, Noak Hill, near Romford, informed us that he possessed several ancient monumental brasses and asked us to examine them. This we have been enabled to do lately, through his kindness.

The brasses, which are all in excellent condition, are affixed to the panelling on the walls of the entrance-hall of the house, where they are accompanied by many other curious, artistic, or ancient objects. Mr. Sands knows nothing as to the source whence these brasses came, as they were in the house before he had it. Inasmuch, however, as one of them came, without doubt, from the church of South Weald, about two miles distant, it seems probable that the two others came also, at some time, out of the same church, though they may have come from those of Havering, Romford, or Hornchurch, all of which are near. On the other hand, they may have come from some distant part of the country.

I.—*Effigy of a Civilian. Date about 1450.*

This figure (18 $\frac{3}{4}$  inches high) is attired in the long gown of the period, reaching just below his knees. It is slightly open at the bottom in front, girt at the waist with a belt, fur trimmed along the lower margin, and round the cuffs and collar. The sleeves are very loose, but not bagged, as at an earlier period. The shoes are very pointed. The head is bare and the hair has the appearance of being brushed up.

It is just possible that this may be the effigy of a certain William Carde who died in 1456. According to Lysons,<sup>1</sup> the records of the Visitations of Essex, preserved in Herald's College, mention the former existence, in Romford Chapel, of a brass to this man; but it had disappeared when Lysons wrote in 1796.

II.—*Effigy of a Civilian. Date about 1480.*

This figure (18 $\frac{1}{2}$  inches high) wears a long gown girt at the waist by a belt, from which hangs a gypcière and a twelve-beaded rosary.

This may possibly be the effigy of Avery Cornburgh, Esquire, 1480, to whom and his wife Beatrice, there was (according to Weever<sup>2</sup>), in 1631, a monument in Romford Chapel, with a very long inscription which Weever gives.

<sup>1</sup> *Environs of London*, iv., p. 196.

<sup>2</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, pp. 618-649.



THREE CIVILIANS, ABOUT 1450, ABOUT 1480, AND 1606, RESPECTIVELY,  
IN PRIVATE POSSESSION AT ROMFORD.

III.—*Effigy of a Civilian. Date 1606.*

This effigy (24½ inches high) affords a large and excellent representation of a venerable long-bearded man attired in large neck-ruffle, doublet, and trunk hose, with a cloak overall reaching to the level of the knees and embroidered down the edges. The sword, usually seen in effigies of this character, is lacking in this case.

There can be no doubt, we think (for reasons given hereafter), that this is the effigy of Arthur Crafford, 1606, of South Weald, whose inscription remained in the church of that place till 1868 (see *post*).

SOUTH WEALD.—*Ten Compositions, all now lost or mutilated. Dates from 1450 (about) to 1634.*

Any account of the Monumental Brasses now or formerly existing in the fine church of South Weald must include, of necessity, a lamentable tale of destruction at the hands of the church restorer.

Buckler, writing in 1856, remarked<sup>1</sup> that "many ancient grave-stones, with fragments of brasses, suggest that this church was "formerly rich in monumental records." Such was, indeed, once the case.

In 1868, however, the church was "restored," and the brasses it contained were treated with a disregard which was remarkable, even for that time. All, with one exception, were torn from their slabs, and the slabs themselves were either broken up, removed elsewhere, buried, or used to pave the church-yard paths.

One of the tombs destroyed was that of William Salmon, a benefactor of the church, who died in 1504.

The only brass which was allowed to remain on its slab was treated with scarcely less indignity than the others; for the fine sixteenth-century altar-tomb on which it lay was completely destroyed, only the top-slab being preserved. The treatment of the altar-tomb (that of Sir Anthony Browne, who died in 1567,) was the more remarkable, in that the eminent man to whose memory it was erected came of a family long of high standing in the county; he was successively a Sergeant-at-Law and Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas; and he founded and endowed the Parish Almshouses and the Grammar School at Brentwood. He was also, without doubt, a benefactor to the church, for he owned and resided at Weald Hall, one of the most beautiful of Essex residences. Yet these facts did not avail to preserve his fine tomb from utterly wanton desecration and purposeless destruction.

At the same time, a helmet, a shield, a sword, a pair of gauntlets, and a tabard, which hung upon the south wall of the chancel, high up, near the roof, disappeared and their whereabouts is not now known. Their pecuniary value may have been anything up to £500.

All this was done, so far as one can see, without the slightest need, and apparently in a spirit of wanton destruction or criminal carelessness.

It is only fair to the present vicar, Canon Fraser, to add that these senseless acts were committed long before his time.

But for the fact that, about the year 1850, Mr. Arthur H. Brown, of Brentwood, our veteran Essex brass-rubber, took rubbings of all the brasses then existing in the church, we should have been ignorant of the former existence of several of those now lost, and quite "at sea" as regards the relationship of several plates which still remain. Our figures of all brasses which are lost are from Mr. Brown's rubbings, which he has placed most kindly at our disposal, together with such information as he possesses.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Twenty-two of the Churches of Essex*, p. 198.



At some period since the "restoration," one of the brasses (an inscription to a later Sir Anthony Browne, who died in 1623) was refixed in a new slab, which lies in the south chapel. It was thus refixed, however, without the two achievements of arms which originally accompanied it. One of these is lost, but the other is preserved loose in the vestry. There it forms one of eight brass plates (belonging, we believe, to five different compositions) which, some years after the *débauché*, were discovered in the establishment of Messrs. Gawthorp, of Long Acre, identified by means of Mr. Brown's rubbings, and secured by Canon Fraser, who now treasures them. They are kept locked up in the iron chest in the vestry.

It may be mentioned that the information given by Haines as to the South Weald brasses is extremely faulty.

I.—*A Group of Children (six Sons and six Daughters). [Effigies of a Civilian and his three Wives, with Foot-legend, and two other Groups of Children (those by the first and third Wives) all now lost, but the Civilian, his second and third Wives, known from an extant Rubbing.] Date about 1450.*

The destruction of this brass is particularly regrettable. Not only was it a fine example of its kind, but we have in the county no other quite like it. Our figure is from a rubbing—probably the only one now extant—taken by Mr. Brown in 1851.<sup>1</sup> Even at that time, the effigy of the first wife, the inscription, and the first and third groups of children were lost, as will be seen. Mr. Brown states that the brass lay originally in the north chapel (now the chancel). The despoiled slab now lies in the churchyard, against the north wall of the nave. The remaining group of children is preserved in the vestry.

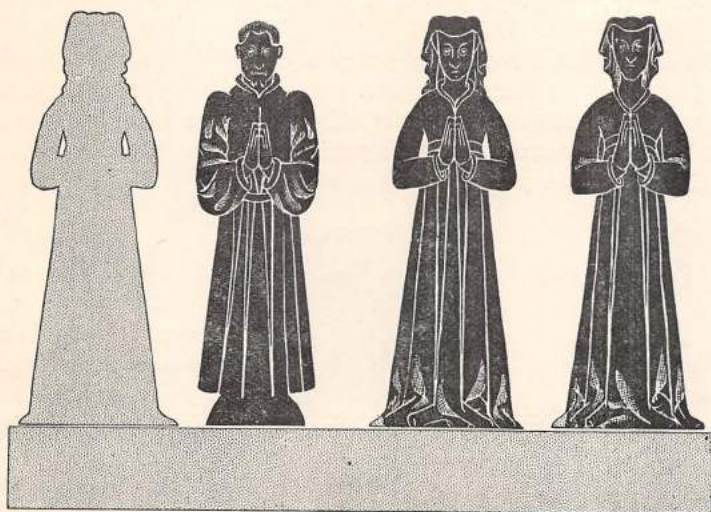
Haines makes, apparently, two different brasses out of this composition. He says:—"I.—A Civilian, c. 1460, with 6 daughters; "wife, daughters, and inscription lost. II.—A Civilian and 2 wives, "with 6 sons, c. 1540 [? 1450]."

The man (11 $\frac{3}{4}$  inches high) is attired in the very simple, loose-sleeved, tight-cuffed, civilian gown of the period, girt at the waist, and reaching only to the ankles. By some oversight of the engraver, the man's feet and the usual fur-edging to the bottom of his gown have been omitted. His hair is close-cropped, but he wears a small moustache and a very short forked beard—the latter unique, so far as Essex brasses of the period are concerned. At a somewhat earlier

<sup>1</sup> It was reproduced in the *Churchwoman* of the 4th August 1899.

period, such forked beards were not uncommonly represented on brasses, though we have no Essex examples. Chaucer speaks<sup>1</sup> of "A marchaunt . . . with a forked berd."

The three women (each 12 inches high) are remarkable for being slightly larger than the man. The only difference between the two which remain lies in the expression of the face (that of the third wife belonging, apparently, to a very elderly person) and in the fall of the folds of the cover-chief. Each is attired in a long tight-sleeved gown, girt below the breast, and falling in folds upon the ground, and each has a wired head-dress with a cover-chief over it. The first wife was, apparently, similar to the two remaining.



CIVILIAN AND WIVES, ABOUT 1450, FORMERLY AT SOUTH WEALD

The lost groups of children by the first and third wives appear to have represented about four or five children each, making (with the twelve shown in the remaining group) at least twenty children

<sup>1</sup> *Canterbury Tales*, The Prologue, line 272.

altogether.<sup>1</sup> The six sons shown in the remaining group are attired as is their father, but their gowns are shorter, and their sleeves less bagged than his. Their hair is cropped close. The six daughters much resemble their mother, but their gowns are more *décolleté* and they lack the coverchief. They wear large cuffs to their sleeves.

The inscription ( $20\frac{3}{4}$  by  $2\frac{1}{4}$  inches) was placed immediately below the effigies.

To speculate as to whom this brass represents is useless.

II.—*Effigies of seven Sons and seven Daughters.* [*Two principal effigies, a Shield, and Inscription lost.*] *Date about 1500.*

The slab to which these two groups of children were affixed lay in the chancel, as we learn from Mr. Brown's rubbing, taken on 26th August 1854, when the two chief effigies and the inscription were already lost. It disappeared during the restoration. The two groups of children are now preserved in the vestry.



SONS AND DAUGHTERS, ABOUT 1500,  
AT SOUTH WEALD.

The children (on plates 5 by  $4\frac{3}{4}$  and  $5\frac{1}{4}$  by  $6\frac{1}{2}$  inches respectively) are of types very common at the period. They are exceedingly badly engraved, the heads of the daughters being far too large in

proportion to the size of their bodies, and their faces are absurdly ugly. There is no clue to their identity.

III.—[*Effigies of a Civilian (probably William Salmon) and Wife, and a group of Sons, and a group of Daughters, with Foot-legend, four Shields, and a Salmon (mutilated).* *All now lost, but the Salmon known from an extant Rubbing.*] *Date about 1504.*

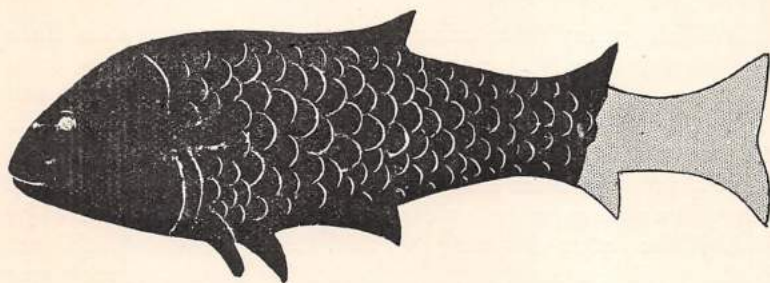
The slab which once bore this brass lay, some fifty years ago, in the nave, in front of the rood (of which portions remained), as we are informed by Mr. Brown, who can remember it. It disappeared during the restoration. Mr. Brown has a rubbing of the fish, taken on 26th August 1854, when all else was lost.

<sup>1</sup> A brass at Writtle to a man and four wives (name unknown: date about 1510) shows twenty-one children in three families. Another at Lambourne to Robert Barfoot (1546) shows nineteen children by, apparently, two wives, though only one is shown.

There can be no doubt, we think, that this brass commemorated William Salmon of Brentwood, who, by will dated 6th May 1504 and proved 5th March 1505-6, desired to be buried "in the pysshe chirch of Southweld, w<sup>in</sup> the small south dore of the same chirch, "in the aleye before the Roode."

Elsewhere in his will he says<sup>1</sup> "I will to have a stone of marbyll, ordeyned ayent my monethys mynde, to be leyde upon my grave, of the valewe of iiij mrks." The "stone of marbyll" is, doubtless, identical with the slab now under notice, and it is interesting to know that it cost (including, of course, the brasses on it) four marks.

William Salmon bequeathed also five shillings to the altar of South Weald Church, and five marks towards the building of the beautiful stone tower, which was then in hand; beside a "reasonable" sum for the glazing of the windows of the said tower.



A SALMON (PART OF THE BRASS OF WILLIAM SALMON), 1504,  
FORMERLY AT SOUTH WEALD.

The salmon was originally about six inches long, but its tail, to the length of about an inch and a half, has been broken off. It was meant, in all probability (as Mr. Brown suggests), to form a rebus upon the name of William Salmon.

IV.—[*Effigies of a Civilian, his Wife, — ? Sons, and five Daughters, with an Inscription. All now lost, but the Group of Daughters known from an extant Rubbing.*] Date about 1510.

This small plate (6 by 5½ inches) was, Mr. Brown informs us, affixed to a slab, now lost, which lay in the north aisle (now the chancel). Mr. Brown's rubbing, from which our figure is

<sup>1</sup> See *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, vol. iv., p. 20.

taken, was made on the 26th August 1854. A note on it states that two large effigies, a group of sons, and an inscription were lost from the same slab.

The girls wear the pedimental head-dress, with the usual long low-necked gown, and have their hair hanging down their backs.

We have no idea whom this brass commemorated.



FIVE DAUGHTERS, ABOUT 1510, FORMERLY AT SOUTH WEALD.

V.—*Effigy (mutilated) of Sir Anthony Browne, Kt., with Foot-legend, Marginal Inscription (mutilated), an Achievement of Arms, and a Shield. [Effigy of his Wife, two more Shields, and the remainder of the Marginal Inscription, together with eight Shields formerly on the sides of the Altar-tomb, all lost.] Date 1567.*

The slab bearing the remains of this once-fine brass now lies in the north-east corner of the south chapel (formerly the chancel), where it forms part of the flooring. It has been turned north and south and its foot is partly covered by a modern altar-tomb commemorating a member of the Tower family. It formed originally the top-slab of a fine altar-tomb, which stood near the same spot. The tomb is well shown in a plate representing the interior of the church, engraved by E. L. Roberts after a drawing by F. W. L. Stockdale, and published in 1818<sup>1</sup>; while a corner of the tomb, showing one of the panels, was figured by Buckler in 1856.<sup>2</sup> Buckler says of it:—

“Under the easternmost arch, and elevated on a platform of masonry level with the top step of the altar, is a square tomb to the memory of Sir Anthony Brown, Knight, . . . . The design is simple and the workmanship delicately executed. On the sides are three lozenge-shaped panels, and one [panel also] at each end, minutely moulded and cusped. In the panels are indents for shields of engraven brass. The top slab, of highly-polished black marble, contains mutilated figures of Sir Anthony and his Lady, with a Latin inscription at their feet. At the four corners are shields. [The whole is] surrounded by a border of brass, with an inscription in English: most of the metal is gone and the few fragments that remain are loose.”

At the “restoration” in 1868, this tomb was utterly destroyed, only the top slab being preserved. Fortunately, Mr. Brown has a rubbing, taken by himself on the 2nd September 1854, when parts of the brass now lost were still in existence, and from this our figure has been taken.

Both effigies were perfect about 1710, when Holman wrote.

<sup>1</sup> *Antiquarian Itinerary*, vol. vii. (no page.)

<sup>2</sup> *Twenty-two of the Churches of Essex*, p. 195.

Of the effigy of Sir Anthony Browne (originally 20½ inches high) only the lower twelve inches remains. It represented him in the long flowing robe of the period, with a large gypcière hanging from his

girdle, kneeling before a fald-stool, on which is an open book with large clasps.

The effigy of the wife, Joan (20 inches high), was similarly represented kneeling, but has long been lost. She appears from the matrix to have worn the French head-dress, with a small neck-ruff.

Immediately below the effigies is the foot-legend (4¾ by 25 inches) recording in Latin that Sir Anthony Browne, Knight, one of the Judges of the Common Pleas, died the 16th of May 1567, aged 57, and that his wife Joan (only daughter and heir of William Farrington, Esquire, son and heir of Sir Henry Farrington, Knight) died the 8th of November in the same year, aged 52 years.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A full translation reads as follows: Anthony Browne, Knight, one of the Judges of the Common Pleas, died the 6th day of May in the 9th year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth and the year of Our Lord 1567, his true age being 57; and Joan his wife, who was only daughter and heir of William Farrington, Esquire, son and heir of Henry Farrington, Knight, died the 8th day of November in the year of the Queen and of Our Lord aforesaid, her age being 52.



SIR ANTHONY BROWNE AND WIFE, 1567,  
AT SOUTH WEALD.

The achievement bears, Quarterly, 1st and 4th Browne,<sup>1</sup> 2nd and 3rd, also Quarterly, 1st and 4th ———?,<sup>2</sup> 2nd and 3rd Francis.<sup>3</sup>

The remaining (upper sinister) shield bears Quarterly, 1st and 4th Farrington<sup>4</sup>; 2nd ———?<sup>5</sup>; 3rd Clayton.<sup>6</sup>

The lower dexter shield, now lost, remained when Holman wrote and bore, he says, the arms of Farrington, as above.

The lower sinister shield (about half of which remained when Mr. Brown made his rubbing in 1854) bore Browne, as above.

Surrounding the entire composition is the marginal inscription (on a fillet  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches wide), which is in English and intended to be read from the centre. It was perfect when Holman wrote about 1720, all except the words *ck descend, Doth*. A considerable portion had disappeared even in 1772; for a writer in the *History of Essex*, by a "Gentleman,"<sup>7</sup> in that year, says:—"A brass legend originally "surrounded the tomb, part of which is now torn away, and the "inscription on what remains is not worth recording." Mr. Brown's rubbing, already mentioned, shows what remained in 1854. Since then, other considerable portions have disappeared. In the following, the portions lost before 1854 are shown (copied from Holman) in square brackets: those portions shown in italics have been lost since 1854: the rest still remains. Although the inscription is printed continuously in one running line, it is evidently intended to be metrical, and we so print it:—

[With nestor's speech, ye hidden] truth  
Of lawes who did [make] plaine,  
*And did excell in Nature's giftes*  
As few did earst attaine.

*A younger sone of knyghtly [race,*  
For vertu is meide a knight  
Go]od Justice Browne is tobēd<sup>8</sup> here,  
*Who helpt ye poore in Right*

*His Ladie Jane, who did likewise*  
From knyghtly sto[ck descend,  
Doth] lie him by; *who, after him,*  
*Her life did sh[ortly end.]*

[Her virtues rare to poor]s reliefe  
*On earth deserude great praise,*  
And now in heuē<sup>9</sup> these twaine, no dout,  
Enioie<sup>10</sup> there lasting D[ai]es].

<sup>1</sup> [Gules], a chevron between three lion's gambes erect and erased [argent], within a bordure of the second; on a chief [argent], an eagle displayed [sable], armed and crowned or. Crest: a lion's paw erect and erased, holding a wing expanded [sable].

<sup>2</sup> [Azure], a chevron [or], between three swans [argent].

<sup>3</sup> Per bend sinister [azure and or], a lion rampant gules counterchanged.

<sup>4</sup> [Argent], a chevron [gules] between three leopards' faces cabossed [sable].

<sup>5</sup> [Gules], three cinquefoils [azure].

<sup>6</sup> [Argent], a cross engrailed [sable] between four pellets.

<sup>7</sup> *Op. cit.*, vol. v. (1772), p. 17.

<sup>8</sup> tumbled (=buried).

<sup>9</sup> heven (=heaven).

<sup>10</sup> enjoie (=enjoy).

Sir Anthony Browne, Knight, a son of Sir Wistan Browne, Knight, of Abbess Roothing, was born in Essex in or about 1510. He was educated at Oxford and studied at the Middle Temple. He was appointed Sergeant-at-Law in 1566 and Chief Justice of the Common Bench in 1558. In 1566, he was knighted for his services. His wife is said to have been twice widowed before he married her, having married firstly Charles Booth, Esquire, of Hackersall, and secondly Charles Beconsall, Esquire. The Grammar School at Brentwood was founded by him in July 1557. He purchased Weald Hall about 1550 and resided there till his death in 1567. Being childless, it passed to a great nephew, Wistan Browne, a grandson of his brother John.

VI.—[*Effigy of Arthur Crafford, Gentleman, with Inscription and Shield. Now lost.*] Date 1606.

Our knowledge of this brass is derived from Holman's Manuscripts, from Mr. Brown's rubbing of the inscription and shield, taken on 26th August 1854, and from the effigy, which exists in private hands.

The effigy remained when Holman wrote about 1710, and he describes it as that of "a venerable old man in brass, with a long beard, having on him a cloak faced with gold lace; his hands "folded." This effigy was lost in 1854, when Mr. Brown rubbed the inscription, but Holman's description leaves no reasonable doubt that it is the latest of the three effigies now in the possession of Mr. John Sands, of the Priory, Noak Hill, scarcely two miles from South Weald Church, as already described (see p. 268).



HERE LYETH THE BODYE OF ARTHVR CRAFFORD  
GENTLEMAN WHO SOMETIME LIVED AT HIS  
MANNOR OF DOWNESELLS IN THIS PARISH AND  
BEINGE OF THE AGE OF 72 YEARES DEPARTED THIS  
WORLD THE XI OF MAY IN THE YEARE OF  
OVR LORD 1606. HE HAD ISSVE 2 DAUGHTERS  
MARIE AND WINIFRID.

INSCRIPTION TO ARTHUR CRAFFORD, 1606,  
FORMERLY AT SOUTH WEALD.

The inscription (7 by 20½ inches) is in Roman capitals and small capitals. It states that Arthur Crafford owned the Manor of Downsells, in South Weald, where he resided, and that he died, aged 72, on the 11th May 1606.

The shield bears Quarterly, 1st and 4th Crafford<sup>1</sup>: 2nd and 3rd Bodley,<sup>2</sup> with a crescent on the fess point for difference.

<sup>1</sup> [Or], on a chevron [vert], three hawk's heads erased [argent].

<sup>2</sup> [Gules], five martlets [argent]; on a chief indented [or], three crowns [azure].



This Arthur Crafford married, apparently, a member of the Bodley family. Morant says that he left only two daughters—Winifred, who was married to John Gittens, and Mary, who subsequently married — Jermin, but she died soon after, on 13th June 1608, when her moiety of the estate went to her sister.

VII.—*Inscription to Elizabeth Wyngfeild, with Shield. Date 1616.*

This brass formerly lay (as Mr. Brown inform us) in the lady chapel (now the chancel).



HERE LYETH BVRIED THE BODY OF ELIZABETH  
WYNGFEILD, FIRST MARRIED TO RICH. SAUNDERS  
GENT. BY WHOM SHE HAD ISSUE ONE. SOLE ONLYE.  
SHE DECEASED MAIJ Y 14. 1616. AGED 76 YEARES  
HER FAITH AND PATIENCE IN HERTMORTALL PAYNE  
REQUIRES A STONE OF MARBLE TO REMYNE  
HER LABOVS, PAYNES & PAINES ARE PAST  
SHE NOW INIOYES MOST BLESSED REST ATT LAST  
IOHANNES SAUNDERS E LONDINI GENE. FILIVS AMANTISSIMVS  
ET MOSTISSIMVS. AMORE ET PIETATE ERGO  
HOC MONVMENTVM POSVIT

INSCRIPTION TO ELIZABETH WYNGFEILD, 1616,  
AT SOUTH WEALD.

The shield bears Saunders,<sup>1</sup> impaling ———<sup>2</sup>

We have failed to obtain any information as to the identity of this lady, other than that given in the inscription.

VIII.—*Inscription to Sir Anthony Browne, Knight, with a Shield.*  
[Another Shield lost, but known from an extant Rubbing.] Date 1623.

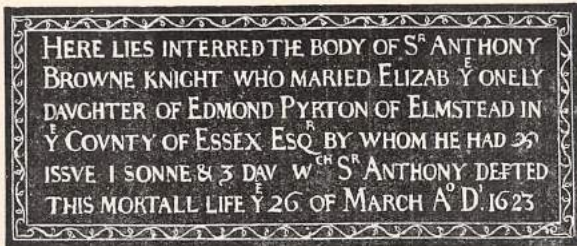
The inscription is now affixed to a new slab which lies in the south-east corner of the south chapel (formerly the chancel), the old slab having disappeared. One shield is now preserved in the vestry, but the other is lost. Mr. Brown, has, however, a rubbing, taken by himself on the 26th August 1854, when the brass was perfect.

<sup>1</sup> Per chevron sable and or, three elephants' heads erased [counterchanged].

<sup>2</sup> [Azure] a chevron [ ] between three cocks' heads erased [ ].

The inscription (6 $\frac{3}{4}$  by 16 $\frac{1}{2}$  inches) is in English and relates that Sir Anthony died the 26th of March 1623, having married Elizabeth only daughter of Edmond Pyrton, of Elmstead, by whom he had a son and three daughters.

The shield (8 $\frac{1}{4}$  by 7 inches) now lost bore Browne, as above. That which still exists bears Browne, as above, impaling Pyrton.<sup>1</sup>



INSCRIPTION TO SIR ANTHONY BROWNE, 1623, AT SOUTH WEALD.

This Sir Anthony Browne owned Weald Hall, which he inherited from a descendent of the Sir Anthony Browne (died 1567) already mentioned, to whom he was distantly related. He was a son of John Browne, Esquire, of Wickham Hall, Essex, and was succeeded at Weald Hall by his only son, also named John. His widow, after his death, married a member of the Latham family.

IX.—[*Inscription to John Saunders, Gentleman, with Achievement of Arms. Now lost.*] Date 1633.

Our knowledge of this brass is derived from Mr. Brown's rubbing taken by him on the 26th August 1854.

<sup>1</sup> Ermine, on a chevron engrailed [azure], three leopards' heads cabossed [or].



HERE LYETH THE BODY OF JOHN SAUNDERS GENT.  
 WHO MARRIED LVCRETIA THE DAUGHTER OF THOMAS  
 FARNI OF VPHAVEN IN THE COUNTY OF SOMERSET GENT.  
 BY WHOME HE HAD ISSVE 4 SONNES & 5 DAUGHTERS  
 HE DEPARTED THIS LIFE THE 14<sup>TH</sup> OF SEPTEMBER  
 ANNO DOMINI 1633  
 Aske how hee liv'd and thou shalt knowe his ende  
 Hee dyde A SAINT to GOD to poore A freinde  
 HE WAS THE SONN OF THIS M<sup>RS</sup> WYNGFEILD BY HER FIRST  
 HUSBAND

INSCRIPTION TO JOHN SAUNDERS, GENTLEMAN,  
 1633, FORMERLY AT SOUTH WEALD.

The inscription (8 by 19 inches) is in Roman characters.

The achievement is on a rectangular plate (8½ by 7½ inches) placed 18 inches above the inscription. The shield bears Saunders?<sup>1</sup>

This John Saunders was a son of the Mrs. Wyngfeild (already noticed) by her first marriage. We know nothing of him, except that he was of London and laid down the brass (described above) to the memory of his mother.

X.—*Effigies of Robert Picakis and Allen Talbott (children).* [*The Inscription cut in the Slab.*] Date 1634.

This is a curious brass in some respects. The two boys commemorated both died in September 1634. Though bearing different names, they were probably related—perhaps children of one mother who had been twice married. Each is engraved very crudely on an irregularly-shaped plate (7¾ inches high), and is represented bare-headed, with curly hair, and kneeling beside a fald-stool, upon a cushion, placed on a chequer-paved floor, with a half-turn towards the other. On the 8th October 1851, when Mr. Brown rubbed the brass, it lay in the chancel. Now, the slab lies in the churchyard, near the north-east corner of the church, while the plates are preserved in the vestry. Cases in which the inscription belonging to a brass was cut in the stone were not very uncommon at the period when this brass was laid down. Haines erroneously associates<sup>2</sup> the representation of a salmon



ROBERT PICAKIS AND ALLEN TALBOTT  
 (CHILDREN), 1634, AT SOUTH WEALD.

<sup>1</sup> [Argent], on a chevron, between three elephants' heads erased [sable], as many plates. Crest: a dexter arm in armour, embowed, grasping a sword, all proper.

<sup>2</sup> *Manual*, p. 64.

(mentioned above) with this brass, perhaps because he connected it with the name Picakis.

Robert Picakis wears a long waistless gown, fastened down the front with buttons and bows, and having a large collar.

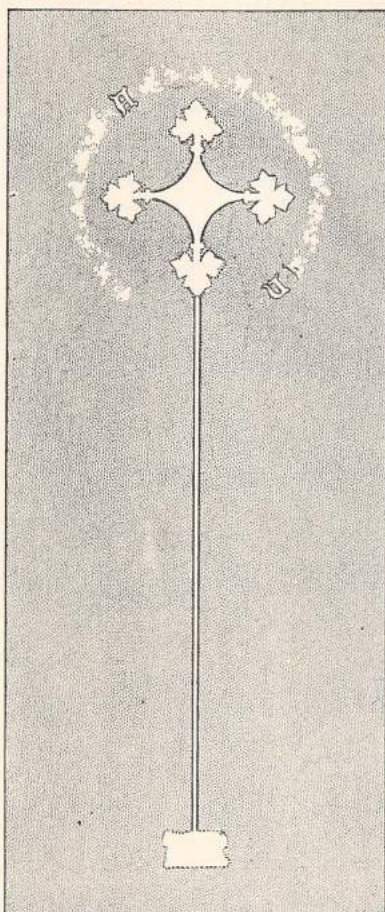
Allen Talbott wears a gown composed of bodice and skirt, with a large collar and apparently a cloak or mantle hanging from the shoulders down the back. The costume, though resembling that of a girl, might well be worn by an infant less than three years old.

The inscription is cut in the stone above the two figures. It is much defaced, but appears to read:—*Roberte Picakis, 7 ye|ares, died the 10 of | September. Allen | Talbott, 2 yeares three | quarteres; he died ye | 29 September 1634.*

TOLLESHUNT D'ARCY.—[*A large floriated Cross, the head encircled by an Inscription in single Longobardic Characters.*] *Matrix only now remaining. Date about 1310.*

We have already figured and fully described in these pages a couple of brasses (or, rather, the matrices of brasses) of this type which exist at Felstead and Great Horkesley respectively.<sup>1</sup> That shown here is unique (so far as we know) among memorials of this class in Essex, in that the inscription surrounds the head of the cross, instead of running (as usual) around the margin of the slab. Possibly there was once also a marginal inscription; but, if so, it has disappeared entirely.

The slab (which measures 78 by 33 inches) is rectangular and lies in the south porch of the



A CROSS (MATRIX ONLY), ABOUT 1310,  
AT TOLLESHUNT D'ARCY.

<sup>1</sup> *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, n.s., vol. vii. (1900), pp. 219-222.

church. Its surface is exceedingly worn, but the general features of the design it once bore may still be traced in the much-defaced matrix.

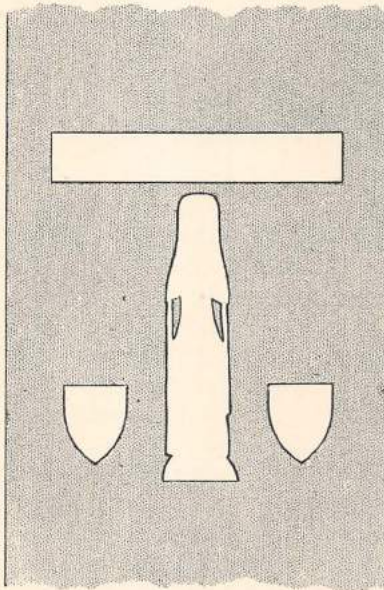
The cross is of the usual elegant floriated type, with its tall slender stem rising from the back of some animal. Of the inscription round the head of the cross, only the faintest traces remain. It consisted, apparently, of about fifteen letters, of which two only are now legible—namely, an A and an N.

WENNINGTON.—[*Effigy of Marjorie de Gildesburgh (?)*, with *Inscription and two Shields.*] *Matrix only now remaining.* *Date about 1380.*

The slab bearing the matrix of this interesting and very unusual brass now lies at the east end of the chancel, beneath the altar-table. It measures 69 by 25 inches. There can be little doubt, we think, that the brass it once bore commemorated Marjorie wife of John de Gildesburgh. When Weever wrote, in 1631, there still remained in the church three brasses commemorating, respectively, the lady

named, her husband (who died in 1389), and two of their children (both named, apparently, Joanna), and Weever gives<sup>1</sup> the three inscriptions belonging to them, which were all in French. All traces of these brasses, except this matrix, have, however, now disappeared.

The effigy (18½ inches high) appears from the outline of the matrix to have represented the lady in the reticulated head-dress and the long, tight-fitting, tight-sleeved gown of the period. From her elbows hang long lappets reaching almost to her feet. The effigy must have borne much resemblance to that of Isabel Beaufoy (about 1370), at Waterperry, Oxfordshire, as figured by Haines.<sup>2</sup>



MARJORIE DE GILDESBURGH ? (MATRIX),  
ABOUT 1380. AT WENNINGTON

<sup>1</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, p. 601.

<sup>2</sup> *Manual*, p. clxviii.

The inscription (3 by 19 inches) was placed immediately above the lady's head. If it really was that to Marjorie de Gildesburgh, it read (according to Weever):—" *Mariovi qe fust la feme [de] Johan de Gildesburgh gist icy. Dieu de s'alme eit mercy. Amen.*"<sup>1</sup>

The two shields were placed immediately on each side of the figure, a good deal below its middle.

WIDDINGTON.—*Effigy (mutilated) of a Civilian.* [All else lost.]  
Date about 1445.

This is not mentioned by Haines. It was found buried beneath the flooring, but still affixed to its slab, during some repairs to the church in 1874, when it was detached roughly from its matrix and was, unfortunately, broken in the process. The lower part, bearing the feet, is missing. What remains is now affixed to the north wall of the nave.



CIVILIAN, ABOUT 1445,  
AT WIDDINGTON.

The effigy (originally about 23 inches in height) has lost the lower four inches, or thereabouts. The man's attire is typical of the period—a long fur-lined tunic, slightly open at the bottom in front, girt transversely at the waist, with very "baggy" sleeves, narrowing at the wrists, fur-cuffs, and collar. The hair is worn short and has the appearance of being brushed upwards and backwards.

Not improbably, this effigy represents John Green, Esquire, who acquired the manor of Widdington by marriage with Agnes, the daughter and heir of John Duke, of Widdington. He presented to the living in 1435 and 1466. In the middle of the seventeenth century (according to Salmon<sup>2</sup>), Symonds noted in the church the following inscription to him:—[*Orate pro*] *Anime Johis Greene, de Wedyngton, Armigeri, et Agnetis uxoris ejus, quorum Corpora hic jacent, et aīe Ommuin fidelium defunctorum p' mia Dei Ihu Xpi in pace requiescant. Amen.*

<sup>1</sup> Marjorie who was the wife of Johan de Gildesburgh lies here. May God upon her Soul have mercy. Amen.

<sup>2</sup> *History of Essex*, p. 107.

WILLINGALE DOE.—*Effigy (slightly mutilated) of Thomas Torrell, Esquire, in armour, with one Shield.* [*Inscription and three other Shields lost.*] *Date about 1442.*

This interesting effigy (which is of a type represented by only one other example in the county) has been partly covered for many years by a stove, which not only prevents a rubbing being taken of it, but is also, unfortunately, causing permanent injury to the brass. It is to be hoped that, before long, a fresh position may be found for either the stove or the brass. Our figure is from a rubbing taken by Mr. A. H. Brown, of Brentwood, before the stove was placed in its present position, and now in his possession. The slab to which the brass is affixed is large, measuring  $91\frac{1}{2}$  by 35 inches. It lies in the north aisle.

The effigy (37 inches high) represents the warrior in the complete plate armour of the period. The head is bare and the hair has the appearance of being brushed up. Gauntlets cover the hands. The feet rest upon the back of a crouching hound, which looks up into its master's face. The lower portion (10 inches long) of the sword and the hinder part of the hound are broken off and lost. In size and design this figure is an almost exact duplicate of that to John Maltoun, Esquire (1447), at Little Waltham. The only difference lies in the addition



THOMAS TORRELL, ESQUIRE, 1442 (ABOUT),  
AT WILLINGALE DOE.

of spurs, the lack of one row of taces (nine instead of ten), and in the attitude of the hound. There can be little or no doubt both were engraved by the same hand.

The inscription ( $5\frac{1}{2}$  by  $18\frac{1}{2}$  inches) has been long lost.

Of the four shields, only that in the lower sinister corner remains. This bears Beauchamp.<sup>1</sup> Another shield remained, however, about the beginning of the eighteenth century, when one or other of the antiquaries who have made additions to Holman's Manuscripts entered a note therein stating that the effigy must represent a member of the Torrell family, as appears [he says] "by those "Escutcheons which remain, viz., on the Dexter Corner, at the top "of the Stone, Torrell,<sup>2</sup> impaling a Fess charged with a mullet "between 6 martlets [for Beauchamp], and this impayement is "alone in an Escutcheon at the Sinister corner below."

The appearance of the arms of Torrell and Beauchamp on the brass serve to identify the effigy as that of Thomas Torrell, Esquire (one of the Torrells of Torrell's Hall), who married Katherine, daughter of Sir Roger Beauchamp, of Bedfordshire. She died on the 6th November 1436, according to the following inscription, which remained in the church when Weever wrote in 1631:<sup>3</sup>—*Hic jacet Domina Catherina, filia Domini Rogeri Beauchamp, militis, de Com. Bedford, nuper vxor Thome Torell, Armig., que obiit vi die Nouemb. Ann. Dom. 1436, et Ann. Regni R. Hen. vi post conquest.*

Thomas Torrell was sheriff of Essex and Herts in 1428. He died, probably, in or shortly before 1442, for his will was proved in that year.<sup>4</sup> In it he directed that he should be buried "juxta hostitium cancelli" in the church of Willingale Doe. Later on occurs the following passage:—

Itm: Volo q' executores mei ordinēt & p'videant tres lapides marmoreas ad jacend' sup' illa tria loca ubi corp'a p'ris mei, Kat'ina nup' vx'is mei, & corpus meū in dca eccl'ia jacent humat'.<sup>5</sup>

Of the three marble slabs—of course, with brasses affixed—here mentioned, there can be no doubt that that under discussion forms one, while that described by Weever (as mentioned above) forms another. The third (that to the father of Thomas Torrell) has, however, entirely disappeared, we believe.

<sup>1</sup> [Gules], on a fess between six martlets [or], a mullet pierced [sable].

<sup>2</sup> [Gules], a fess between three bulls' heads couped [or].

<sup>3</sup> *Ancient Funerall Monuments*, p. 658.

<sup>4</sup> P.C.C., Rous 15 (Will) and 16 (Testament); another Grant in 1443. For these references we are indebted to Mr. J. C. Challenor Smith (see *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, n.s., vii., p. 361).

<sup>5</sup> I will that my executors shall ordain and provide three marble stones to be laid upon those three places where the bodies of my father and my late wife Katherine and my own body shall lie buried in the said church.



## LAWFORD CHURCH.

BY THE REV. E. K. GREEN, M.A.

The ancient Parish Church of St. Mary, Lawford, is situated on a wooded eminence, near the Rectory and Hall, about a quarter of a mile away from the Harwich and Colchester Road, where it passes through the picturesque village called Wignall Street.

At the churchyard gate is an old house built by a Mr. Pecksale for the use of the Sexton for the time being, formerly called the Town House, there being a room in it which is used for vestry meetings. In the churchyard there are a few fine trees. From the further end of it, a good view may be obtained on a clear day, when the tide is up, of the course of the river Stour, until it flows into the sea at Harwich.

As he enters the church through the ancient timber porch and stone doorway, the first thing which will probably strike the spectator, is the contrast between the almost unadorned simplicity of the nave, and the elaborate splendour of the chancel. The nave, however, notwithstanding many alterations, bears evident marks of its antiquity. It consisted originally of a single aisle on each side. In 1826 the north wall was broken away and another aisle added, and in 1841 a gallery was erected over it to afford more accommodation for the parishioners. The nave thus enlarged will seat about 225 persons. The south wall, which is no doubt the original wall of the church, is built slightly out of the perpendicular, and slanting outwards. In 1864, as we are informed by a tablet placed upon this wall, the nave was restored, principally by the munificent donation of T. W. Nunn, Esq., of Great Bromley Lodge, and Lawford House, in memory of his uncle Carrington Nunn, Esq., of Little Bromley. It was then that the fine old arch of so called Roman brick was disclosed at the lower end of the nave, hidden behind an organ gallery. A small coloured memorial glass window was placed at the west end of the church in the old tower, which, composed of stone and brick, appears to have been rebuilt in the seventeenth century. The tower contains three bells, of which the oldest bears the inscription:—

**Miles Graye made me 1667.**

The other two—

**John Thornton made me 1714 Simon Archer & W.**

From the west end of the church we proceed up the nave to the chancel. The chancel has been described by Mr. Nichols of

Lawford Hall, in his book *The Hall of Lawford Hall*, (pp. 66-68) as the "most exquisite monument of Gothic Art existing in this part of England, being a singularly ornate example of a small chancel of the Decorated style." There are no records to tell us when or by whom it was built. From the broken figures of two cocks, sculptured on one of the ornamental buttresses on the north wall outside the chancel, Mr. Nichols concludes that the church was built by Sir Benet de Cokefeld, who purchased the Manor of Lawford Hall in 1294, and died in 1341, having held it nearly half a century. The family originally sprang from Cockfield in Suffolk, and the cock appears in the family arms. Hence it seems likely that the church, or at all events the chancel, was built by Sir Benet de Cokefeld in the early part of the fourteenth century.

One of the chief beauties of the chancel consists in the sculpture round the arches of the windows, in which some few pieces of old stained glass may still be found. There are eight ancient windows, four on each side of the chancel, and in each of them the tracery is of a different design, and of the most varied description, representative perhaps of the works of the great Creator of all things. We will endeavour to describe them, although they should be seen and examined minutely, to be properly appreciated.

Starting from the east, the first window on the north side contains figures of men and women pushing each other up the wall by the legs; others sitting across one another's shoulders; in one case a woman stooping down, and a man standing with one foot on her back, and the other on her head. The next window represents a number of owls, perched amongst roses and leaves. The next, foliage and roses; and the window nearest to the nave, foliage only. On the south side, again commencing from the east, the first window contains twenty-two figures of birds perched on twigs. The next, a number of squirrels, in different attitudes, running or climbing up the arch. The next, grapes and leaves; and the last window, the same. The stone mouldings in the upper parts of the windows below the framework of the arches, consist of geometrical figures, circles, and curved lines variously combined, the design being different in each window. The tracery and mouldings of all the windows are for the most part in a good state of preservation, as are also the two lofty and elaborately carved niches, evidently meant for statues, which adorn the middle of the walls on either side of the chancel.

But there is another interesting specimen of ancient stone-carving in this church, which has suffered much more seriously at the hands of the despoilers than the windows.

The Sedilia, three in number, adjoining the ancient Piscina now used as Credence Table, are stone seats, let into the south wall of the Sanctuary, under sharp-pointed arches, which are decorated with a profusion of flowers and leaves. Above the arches, and under the cornice, are eight minstrels, one on each side of each arch, playing on stringed instruments. Above them, on the cornice, are numerous fiendish, hungry-looking animals, some of them crouching down as though ready to spring, with large fierce faces, and ugly misshapen feet and claws. The heads are missing from all the minstrels, and only three of the beasts remain intact. Adjoining the Sedilia is the low chancel doorway, over which—evidently a continuation of the same work—are two large human heads, one apparently a crowned King, and the other perhaps a mitred Bishop, but so mutilated that it makes it difficult to say; and two full-length figures of smaller size, probably attendants, standing one on each side of, and facing each of the heads. On the cornice above, which is in line with the cornice of the Sedilia, is a large dragon, and a mutilated figure of a scorpion placed directly over the crowned heads. What is the design of the whole work, must be a matter of conjecture. Perhaps it may be intended to represent the musicians of the Sanctuary holding in check by their strains the evil spirits, which, in the form of monstrous beasts, are prowling about overhead, seeking whom they may devour.

We now proceed to examine the monuments, monumental tablets, and memorial inscriptions.

On the north wall of the chancel is the stone monument of Edward Waldegrave, Esq. (the builder of the old part of Lawford Hall), and Joan his wife, kneeling opposite one another in prayer. The inscription is as follows:—

**The end of the just is peate.**

Here resteth the bodies of Edward Waldegrave Esquier the yongest sonne of George Waldegrave of Smalbridge Esquier. He deceased the 13 of August A° 1584 Having had one sonne and foure daughters A° Ætatis suæ 70.

Also of Johan his wife who deceased... This Johan was the daughter of George Ackworth of Luton in the Countie of Bedford Esquire and of M<sup>r</sup>gret his wife which M<sup>r</sup>gret was the daughter and heire of Wilborefoss Esquier of the Bisshoprick of Duresme of which M<sup>r</sup>gret this Joan was heire.

The Wilborefoss (Wilberforce) of the Bishopric or County of Duresme (Durham) here spoken of was probably an ancestor of the

famous Dr. Samuel Wilberforce, Bishop of Oxford, and afterwards of Winchester. On the same side of the chancel is a memorial tablet to the Dent family, erected by Thomas Dent, D.D., Prebendary of Westminster, and owner of the Manor of Lawford Hall, and by Alice his wife, in memory of two sons and four daughters, all of whom died young. Catherine Dent, the granddaughter of Dr. Dent, married Edward Green, Esq., of the county of Stafford, by which marriage the estate of Lawford Hall came to the Green family. On the same wall there is a monument to Edward Green, Esq., son of the above, and a monumental tablet to the Rev. Edward Henry Green, Rector of Little Birch, and son of the latter, whose widow Mary Green died, as we are informed by the tablet, in 1865, in the 97th year of her age.

Beneath the chancel floor is the family vault of the Waldegraves, or Wallgraves, marked by the inscriptions on the stones. Edward Waldegrave, Esq., the second, married "Dame Sarah Bingham, by whom he had Jemimah, who was married to John Lord Crewe, Baron of Steane." He died about the 68th year of his age, in the year 1621. His widow, Lady Sarah Bingham, died in the 70th year of her age in 1634.

Beneath the chancel floor also lies the Rev. Thomas Harris, Rector of Lawford. The inscription is as follows:—

*Arms.*

Sub hoc marmore  
 Relliquiæ Reverendi viri  
 Thomæ Harris  
 Hujusce Ecclesiæ nuper  
 Rectoris Placide in  
 Christo requiescunt  
 Obijt 28 die mensis martij  
 Anno } Domini 1699  
 { Ætatis Suae 65

Ὁῆ περ φύλλων γενεή, τοῖη δὲ καὶ ἀνδρῶν

The last is a well-known line from Homer (Iliad vi. 146) which may be translated—"As is the race of leaves, so that of man."

It may be interesting to observe that one of the silver patens still in use in the celebration of the Holy Communion in Lawford Church bears the inscription:—

"Easter Day 1696, given by the Lady Whaley, wife of Mr. Harris, Rector of Lawford, for the use of this church."

On the south side of the chancel is a mural monument of the Nunn family, of Lawford House. There are also memorial stones or

tablets of several of the more recent Rectors of Lawford, all Fellows of St. John's College, Cambridge, to which College Dr. Dent sold the advowson of the living, formerly appendant to the Manor of Lawford Hall, in the early part of the eighteenth century; of George Loggon, B.D. who died 1779 aged 42; of George Whitmore, D.D., who was 17 years tutor of St. John's College, and five years Rector of Lawford, who died 1805 aged 54; of William Wood, B.D., Rector for 16 years, who died in 1822 aged 75. The series is completed by the memorial tablet recently erected to Dr. Merivale, the late Rector, which has the following inscription:—

“In memory of  
The very Rev. Charles Merivale, D.D., D.C.L., LL.D.,  
Historian of Rome,  
Scholar and Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge,  
Rector of this Parish from 1848 to 1870  
and afterwards  
Dean of the Cathedral Church of Ely.  
Born 8 March 1808, Died 27 Dec. 1893.  
During his incumbency this Church was restored  
and the first Parochial School was built.”

Just outside the chancel door are the tombs, inclosed within the same iron rails, of John Edes, who was Rector for 43 years, during the stormy period of the Great Rebellion, and Commonwealth (from 1615 to 1658); and of the Rev. William Brett Whitfeld, B.D., buried near him by his own request, Rector for 25 years, who died in 1847 aged 78.

Dr. Merivale restored the chancel in 1853. A new chancel arch was formed, replacing the old wooden beam which stretched across the entrance of the chancel from wall to wall. Uniform oak sittings, with carved poppy-heads, took the place of the old high-backed deal pews. An East window of stained glass was put in by Thomas Nunn, Esq., of Lawford House, grandfather of the late T. W. Nunn, Esq., at whose expense the nave was afterwards restored, as mentioned above; the few indications of the tracery of the original east window being carefully preserved. The chancel thus restored will seat about 40 persons.

In 1884, during the incumbency of the present Rector, a costly Reredos of carved alabaster, with two full sized figures of the Virgin Mary and St. John, in ornamental niches, one on each side of the cross, above the Communion Table, designed by Mr. C. F. Hayward, and sculptured by Mr. Earp, was presented to the church by the family of the late Mr. Robertson, who was

buried in the churchyard. The gift included two marble steps, ornamental tiling, and altar rails. On the lower of the steps is the inscription:—

“In memory of the Hon<sup>able</sup> John Robertson, of St. John, New Brunswick, Canada, who died at Lawford Place, August 3rd, 1876.”

This reredos, taking the place of a plain carpet-hanging, now forms, together with the stained glass window, one of the most conspicuous features of the east end of the church.

Whilst this work was in progress, it was found that the walls of the chancel, which are of stone and flint-rubble, were in an insecure condition, and that the inner timbers of the roof were much decayed. A great deal of time and labour was spent in strengthening the foundations, and the buttresses were in great part rebuilt. A mutilated stone figure, draped and sitting, probably the Virgin Mary, was discovered in the carved niche of a buttress which is at the south east corner of the chancel. A new timber roof was formed, with two strong tie-beams of oak to keep the walls in position, and the church after being closed for a while, was reopened for service on August 7th, 1887.

The oldest of the Lawford Parish Registers dates back to the year 1558, and in it is preserved a list of all the Rectors from the year 1334 to the present time.

---

## THE CHURCHES OF GREAT AND LITTLE BROMLEY.

BY THE REV. H. H. MINCHIN, M.A.

### GREAT BROMLEY CHURCH.

THE nave of this church has a very fine specimen of Perpendicular work in the hammer beam roof and clerestory, which are similar in design to those in the St. Mary (Key) Church at Ipswich, which was rebuilt in the fifteenth century. The church is dedicated to St. George. In the spandrils above the south doorway he and the dragon are represented, and above, in the tympanum of an earlier doorway, there is a representation of Adam and Eve. The south porch and the clerestory are good specimens of flint work. At the east end of the south aisle is a fine brass of William Byschopton, Priest, in eucharistic vestments, beneath a handsome single-arched canopy. Date 1432.

The inscription below the figure runs:—

*Quisquis eris qui transieris sta perlege plora sum quod eris  
Es testis xpe quod non jacet hic lapis iste corpus ut ornetur*

The remainder of the lines, which has been cut off, may be completed from the inscription on the tomb of Sir Giles Danberry in South Petherton Church Somerset, A.D. 1415.

*fueramque quod es pro me precor ora  
sed spiritus ut memoretur*

This Latin rhyme was in frequent use about this date.

The south and west doors are good specimens of Perpendicular and the north of Decorated work.

In the Churchwardens' Account Book under the head of 1638 there is this notice:—

		£	s.	d.
Oct. 4	pd at ye Court for our absolution being excommunicate		5	4
Oct. 31	pd Gaude for making of the rayle att the Communion Table	3	10	
Nov. 22	for stefyinge (certifying) into the Cort for getting up the rayle for bringing the rayle from Colchester		1	4 1

Evidently the churchwardens had neglected Archbishop Laud's injunction in 1633 about setting up the rails at the Communion Table and he had excommunicated them until they obeyed it. The rails have, unfortunately, disappeared.

There is a good peal of six bells in the tower dated 1717, 1726, 1743, 1806, 1860, 1879, by Thos. Gardiner of Sudbury, John Thornton of Sudbury, Thomas Mears & Son, G. Mears, and Mears and Stainbank.

#### LITTLE BROMLEY CHURCH.

THIS church is a good specimen of the simplest form of twelfth century work. The walls of the nave remain as they were originally built except for the addition of a late Perpendicular three-light window on the south side and a modern imitation of it on the north.

Two of the original Norman windows remain and there are traces of two others. The chancel was probably at first apsidal and was altered to its present rectangular shape in the fourteenth century, when the present plain three-light early Decorated window was inserted in the east wall. In the fifteenth century, when the tower was built, the west wall was pulled down and the large nave arch erected. In the original west wall there would have been the Norman doorway with two or more Norman windows, as may be still seen in the west walls of the churches at Blackmore and Margaretting, where the towers were built outside the west wall which was left intact.

The north and south doorways belong to the thirteenth century.

The south door is the original one, but it has been cut in two as may be seen from the hinges, which were cut in two and the extra halves lengthened to make new hinges. The boards of the door were not planed and the marks of the saw may still be seen on it as well as various names cut in the middle of the seventeenth century.

The font is a good specimen of Perpendicular work. It is octagon in shape having on the panels rough representations of the symbols of the Evangelists, alternating with roses, one of which is a Tudor and another a natural rose with leaves. There is a similar font, but without the carved panels, in Tolleshunt D'Arcy Church.

On the outside of the north wall of the nave may be seen some patches of the original Norman plaster, to be recognised by the sea shells in the sand of which the plaster was made.



There are some remains of the rood loft: the staircase leading to it was found in the north wall when repairs were undertaken in 1885.

The altar rails are the original Laudian ones.

There are four bells; two of them, according to Mr. Stahlschmidt, the work of Robt. Burford of London, 1392 to 1418. The legends on these are:—

*Sancta Katerina ora pro nobis.*

*Nomen Domini benedictum.*

Two new bells were cast in 1898 by Bowell & Son of Ipswich, to commemorate the sixtieth year of Queen Victoria's reign, bearing the legends:—

*Sit semper nomen Domini Jesu benedictum*

*Omnibus in terris per quas Victoria regnat.*

The Registers of the Parish go back to 1539; from that date to 1579 they were copied out by Ralph Kinge, Rector and Notary public from 1579 to 1611.

---

## ESSEX FIELD-NAMES.

COLLECTED AND ARRANGED BY

WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

---

### *Part VII.*—THE HUNDREDS OF UTTLESFORD AND CLAVERING.

---

THE Hundreds of Uttlesford and Clavering, which furnish a seventh instalment of our Essex field-names, occupy compactly the north-eastern corner of the county, and cover an area of over sixty-eight thousand acres. Uttlesford is very much the larger of the two, and comprises twenty-six parishes, whereas Clavering contains but six. From the aggregate of thirty-two must be deducted eleven parishes which, for one reason or another, yield no field-names.<sup>1</sup> Those which occur in the remaining twenty-one are, for the most part, similar to those previously met with, but the obsolete word 'herne' occurs with some frequency in this part, and, so far as my memory serves, for the first time. Bacon's Herne, Brown's Hern, Drunkard's Hearne, Hearne Croft, and Hern 6-acres, are instances. Hern, like halke and hale, signifies a nook or corner, a recess or hiding-place. The Middle-English form is *hürne*, and the Old English, *hyme*. A capital instance of its use is quoted by Dr. Murray: "In haulks and herne, God wot, and in exile." 'Coneygarth' and 'coneygre' are also novelties. The former suggests the occurrence of the north-country word 'garth' in a southern county; but the true explanation is, that the word is a corruption of the Middle-English *Conyng-erthe*, *conig-erthe*, 'coney-earth,' in which the final *g* has been transferred to the second

---

<sup>1</sup> For Arkesden, Great and Little Chesterford, Great and Little Chishall, Chrishall, Elmdon, Littlebury, Thunderley, Wendens Ambo and Lofts, no awards exist, the tithe having been commuted early in the nineteenth century by allotments of land, except in the cases of Elmdon and Wenden Lofts, where corn-rents were fixed. These allotments probably took place on the enclosure of the open fields and the consolidation of the scattered holdings, which certain indications lead one to believe were continued down to a much later date in Saffron Walden, Newport, Langley, Streethall, and Ugley. In Wicken Bonhunt a fresh award is said to have been made after the enclosure was effected.

element of the compound. Coneygre, which also indicates a rabbit-warren, is also a corruption. The Middle-English form is *conynger*; Old French, *connièvre*, and Italian *conigliera*, which carries us back to the Latin *cunicularia*. Here, too, the *g* has been attracted to the second element, and, with obvious striving after a meaning, has been transformed by popular etymology into *-gree*, *-grey*, and even *-greave*, *-grave*, *-green*.<sup>1</sup> 'Halke' and 'hern' have met with a like fate. In Chingford is a wood now known as Hawk Wood: in old documents it is known as Chingford Halke; and in Theydon Bois is a hill called Piercing Hill, which in all probability began life as Piers Herne.<sup>2</sup>

'Lane Field Croft Mead' affords a striking instance of agglutinative nomenclature, and 'Burntwoman's Close' suggests a tragedy, as also does 'Witch Field,' which recalls how Mr. Arthur Morrison, in the dedication to his *Cunning Murrell*, has reminded us that, ten years after the period of his tale, a man was swum for a witch in Essex, and died of it. In 'Goosen Field' we have an emergence of the old plural form which the School-Boards will soon render extinct as the dodo. Some oddities, as usual, occur in the list, and among them may be cited Crab-tree Razors, Crying Leys, Great Discern, Dollars Eden, Elysian Garden, Hanover, Horn-book Piece, Kitch Amey, Plush Breeches, and Wedlock Field.

Struck by the occurrence of the name 'Dane Pit' in Belchamp St. Paul (*ante* p. 90), Mr. I. C. Gould has very kindly made enquiry with regard to it. From communications received by him, both from the Rev. E. N. and Mr. W. H. Dalton, it appears that the 'pit' is an open horse-shoe-shaped marl-pit, hollowed out in the brow of a field which slopes somewhat rapidly towards the river Stour. Mr. W. H. Dalton expresses a doubt whether a Denehole could be made in that particular site, "as the chalk would be waterlogged almost to its surface, if not quite so." The position is roughly indicated as being about six hundred yards N.N.W. from Shearing Hall, and rather more from the river. About three-quarters of a mile to the S.W. of Dane Pit a 'Dane Field' is shown on the old Ordnance Survey, but not on the new one; and some ten miles to the north-west, there is, Mr. Dalton tells us, at Kedington, which is just over the county border, a 'Dane Common.' These names indicate, he suggests, "attacks by Danes, or any Teutonic marauders supposed to be such."

<sup>1</sup> Its survival as a local field-name is noticed by Dr. Murray.

<sup>2</sup> 'Petrus-in-Thelan,' figures as a tenant on an early Court Roll of the manor of Gregories in Theydon; 'Peryshern' and 'Perse heryn' are found on the P.R.O. Forest Rolls, *temp.* Hen. VII.; while Chapman and André, and the O. S. map of 1805, name the place 'Priors Horne Corner.'

The preambles to the Essex Awards furnish no details as to local customs such as those recorded in the case of some other counties, and I am once more indebted to Mr. J. D. Thurley, the keeper of the Records at the Board of Agriculture, for indicating to me the following interesting instances of 'customs' which were commuted.

*Aston: Derby.*—To Vicar at Easter: *1d.* for every milk cow in lieu of tithes of her milk. If an occupier have less than five calves fall between Easter and Easter, he pays *1s. 2d.* for every such calf; five calves and no more so fallen, *1s. 8d.*; more than five and not more than ten, *3s. 4d.*; and after the same custom for any number of tens—in lieu of tithes of calves. *4d.* is payable for each foal; *2d.* for every swarm of bees, in lieu of tithe of honey and swarms. *1d.*, called a Henpenny, instead of tithes of hens and chickens. Total rent charge, *51l.*

*Pleasley: Derby.*—For every calf, *3d.* in lieu of the tithes of calves, and for every swarm of bees, *1d.* in lieu of tithes of honey and bees-wax. The value of half a pig is payable by every farmer who has a litter of as many as five pigs; a whole pig is payable when there are six. By prescription whenever the number of lambs on any farm is less than five, no tithe is payable in respect thereof; and the like prescription holds with respect to pigs.

The undermentioned fees and offerings are payable to the Rector:—Burial fees, *1s.*; churching fees, *6d.*; wedding fees *1s.*, if by licence *5s.*

*4d.* is payable at Easter in every year, by way of Easter offerings, for all persons resident on each farm; and *2d.* for all persons resident in each cottage: all other persons above sixteen years of age pay *2d.* each as Easter offerings.

*Ripley: Derby.*—*1½d.* for every new-calved cow, in lieu of tithes of milk and calf. *1d.* for every barren cow, in lieu of tithe of her milk. *4d.* for every foal. *2d.* for a swarm of bees. *2d.* for every garden in lieu of tithe of produce thereof. Total, *150l.*

*Willaston (Wybunbury): Chester.*—To Vicar: For every cow and calf under seven, *1½d.*; at seven and under ten, *2s.*, and rateably according to the same proportion above ten. For every farrow cow, *1d.* Every lamb, pig, and goose under seven, *½d.* "For seven each in one year, a lamb, a pig, and a goose, the third part each, the owner being allowed *1½d.* each at seven; *1d.* ea. at eight; and *½d.* ea. at nine; and at ten, a lamb, a pig, and a goose, each in kind, without any allowance; and at seventeen, one half-penny each in lieu." For every load of faggots or rammelkids, *2d.*; at seven, one whole load, the owner being allowed *6d.*; and other elaborate

provisions up to seventeen, when a double tithe less 6*d.* was payable. A foal, 4*d.* Herbage, 1*s.* in the 1*l.* in lieu of agistment. Total, 49*l.* 1*s.* 6*d.*

*Willaston (Neston): Chester.*—A milk cow, 1½*d.* A barren cow, 1*d.* Every cock and hen, 1*d.* Hive of bees, 1*d.* Total, 252*l.*

*Warrington: Lancaster.*—Heath meadowing pays 12*d.* per acre, Lancs. measure (12 yds. to perch). 15*s.* per acre (L. meas.) for potatoes. Easter offerings: 4*d.* for man and wife; 1*d.* ea. for children and servants of age to communicate; 1*d.* for a cow; ½*d.* for calf, and for five calves at a house, 10 groats. 4*d.* a colt. 1*d.* a hive of bees. Nothing for aftermath and agistment. Total, 452*l.*

---

## PARISHES.

(Continued from Vol. VIII., p. 78.)

(*Uttlesford Hundred.*)

292	Arkesden <sup>1</sup>
293	Birchanger
294	Chesterford, Great and Little <sup>1</sup>
295	Chishall, Great and Little <sup>1</sup>
295 <i>a</i>	Chrishall <sup>1</sup>
296	Debden
297	Elmdon <sup>1</sup>
298	Elsenham
299	Henham
300	(See 313—Heydon)
301	Littlebury <sup>1</sup>
302	Newport
303	Quendon
304	Rickling
205	Saffron Walden
306	Stansted Mountfitchet

307	Streethall
308	Takeley
308 <i>a</i>	Thunderley <sup>2</sup> (See Wim- bish)
309	Wendens Ambo and Wenden Lofts <sup>1</sup>
310	Wicken Bonhunt
311	Widdington
312	Wimbish - cum - Thun- derley
313	Heydon

(*Clavering Hundred.*)

314	Berden
315	Clavering
316	Farnham
317	Langley
318	Manuden
319	Ugley

<sup>1</sup> No Awards—see introductory note.

<sup>2</sup> No field-names are given in this award.

## LIST OF FIELD-NAMES OCCURRING IN THE FOREGOING PARISHES.

NOTE:—In the following lists the numerals put after each name indicate the parishes (see above) in which the name occurs. Where the same name is found twice or oftener *in the same parish*, one numeral serves for all instances.

Abbotts, 318; — Ley, 305	Arbers, Great and Little, 315
Abrahams Croft, 318; — Orchard, 298	Arbour Field .. .. . 305
Acre Mead, 310; — Piece, 299	Arbury Field .. .. . 305
Adcocks * .. .. . 312	Arch Valley Allotment . 305
Adcroft Common, 319; — Moor, 319	Archers Mead .. .. . 302
Affney Common .. .. . 315	Arnolds, 305; —, Great and Little, 308, 314
Albury, 20-acre-, .. .. . 318	Ash Common, 299; — Field, 296, 312; — Ground, 296, 312; — Grove, 296; — Pasture, 299
Alders .. .. . 298	Ashwell Common, 311; — Wood, 305
Aldicks .. .. . 315	Ashwells .. .. . 305
Aldwick, 314, 316; — Mead, 314, 316	Ass Closes .. .. . 304
Algers .. .. . 299	Assen Hill Bottom .. 319
Allens Croft .. .. . 318	Austin (Haustin) Field, Great, 306; — Hill, Great, 306
Almonds .. .. . 305	Avacers .. .. . 316
Almshouse Close .. .. . 302	Avenue Spring .. .. . 303
Alsey Wood .. .. . 306	Ayletts .. .. . 296, 319
Amberden Wood .. .. . 296	
Amble Croft .. .. . 314	Backside Field .. .. . 312
Andrews, Upper and Lower, 296; — Close, 305; — Hoppet, 298; — Mead, 296	Back Slade, Little .. .. . 315
Angle Hole .. .. . 312	Bacons Field, 319; — Herne, 306, 319
Angles, 316; — Croft, 311	Bagsoldwick Common .. 311
Ankers Croft .. .. . 305	Bailey Hills .. .. . 316
Ann Field .. .. . 305	Baileys, Great and Little, 305
Ansons Garden .. .. . 318	Bakers 305, 315; — Croft, 305, 311; — Field, 298; — Mead, 318
Anteers Croft .. .. . 305	
Apple Tree Mead .. .. . 306	
Aprons (or Halfpence) .. 293	
Arberry Field .. .. . 305	

- Bakehouse Shot . . . . . 302  
 Balk Field, 298; — Town Field,  
 299; — in Great Moor  
 Common, 315  
 Balks Hill, 305; — Plantation,  
 High, 305  
 Ballards . . . . . 312  
 Balleys . . . . . 316  
 Balls Croft, 315, 317; — Field,  
 305, 306; — Folly, 302  
 Banes Mead . . . . . 311  
 Banhams . . . . . 318  
 Bankes Hoppet, 308; — Pasture,  
 308  
 Bankside Field . . . . . 319  
 Bannington Mead . . . . . 316  
 Basons Field . . . . . 305  
 Bar Field . . . . . 306, 312  
 Bargate Mead . . . . . 306  
 Barhams . . . . . 318  
 Barker Field . . . . . 306  
 Barkers, Great, 298; — Field,  
 298, 308  
 Barley Close, 299; — Croft,  
 304; — Barn Close, 305; —  
 Common Mead, 298; —  
 Common Field, 298; —  
 Garden, 304; — Hills, 315;  
 — Hook Meadow, 312  
 Barn Hills . . . . . 303  
 Barnards . . . . . 296  
 Barns Slough Field . . . . . 312  
 Barrance . . . . . 304  
 Bars Croft . . . . . 311  
 Bartropes . . . . . 308  
 Barwicks . . . . . 306, 319  
 Basans Hills . . . . . 308  
 Bates Field . . . . . 298  
 Battles Garden, 318; — Wood,  
 318  
 Batts, Great . . . . . 307  
 Bayards, Great . . . . . 317  
 Bayleys Field . . . . . 304  
 Beadle Common, 298; — Field,  
 311; — Field Common,  
 311; — Mead, 298  
 Bean Acre, 314; — Field, 293,  
 305, 312  
 Bear Croft, 305; — Field, 306;  
 — Ley, 305  
 Bearges, Great and Little, 305  
 Bears Pightle . . . . . 305  
 Beazley, Great . . . . . 312  
 Becketts Croft . . . . . 311  
 Bedwell Common . . . . . 319  
 Bee Croft . . . . . 317  
 Beech, The, . . . . . 308  
 Beggars Oak Mead, 299; —  
 Oak Town Field, 299  
 Belchams . . . . . 304  
 Bell Close, 317; — Mead, 305 317  
 Bellmans . . . . . 306  
 Belshams Garden . . . . . 312  
 Ben Eaves . . . . . 296  
 Bennetts Field . . . . . 306  
 Berners Garden . . . . . 319  
 Besle Ditches . . . . . 305  
 Bettys Pasture . . . . . 293  
 Bexley Common . . . . . 311  
 Bicketts Pasture . . . . . 299  
 Bigdens, 305; — Grove, 305  
 Bigney . . . . . 308  
 Bingham, Long . . . . . 298  
 Binks Pasture . . . . . 315  
 Birch, Upper and Lower, 312;  
 — Field, 299, 315; — Wood,  
 299; — Pond Field, 306  
 Birds Field . . . . . 306  
 Black Acre, 319; — Bush Wood,  
 305; — Croft, 296, 299, 316;  
 — Croft Wood, 318; —  
 Field, 308, 314; — Ground,  
 312; — Lands, 293; —  
 Mead, 306; — Moor, 306;  
 — Shot, 299; — Slade Com-  
 mon, 315; — Slough, 299

- Blackland, 305; — Shot, 305  
 Blackmore Field .. 306, 312  
 Blakings .. .. . 318  
 Blockley Common.. .. 299  
 Blowses .. .. . 298  
 Blue Field, 296; — Gates, 306  
 Blunts .. .. . 308  
 Boasters .. .. . 310  
 Bobs Field .. .. . 312  
 Bocking, 312; — Common, 315  
 Boldings .. .. . 308  
 Boles Meadow .. .. 296  
 Bolster Common .. .. 315  
 Bolsters .. .. . 302  
 Bond Field .. .. . 296  
 Bone Lands, 296; — Shot, 316  
 Bones, First, &c., 293; —, Great  
 and Little, 305; — Mead, 293  
 Bonitains .. .. . 315  
 Boobles Pasture .. .. 296  
 Boons Field .. .. . 312  
 Borough Garden (ar. 2a.) 305  
 Bottom Leys, 314; — Place, 314  
 Botts Mead .. .. . 312  
 Bourn, Great .. .. . 318  
 Bower, The, 310; — Great, 310  
 Bowers, 308; — Croft, 303  
 Bowles .. .. . 296  
 Bowley Mead .. .. . 316  
 Bowshers 3 acres .. .. 302  
 Boytons Acre .. .. . 305  
 Boywells .. .. . 314  
 Bradberrys .. .. . 306  
 Bradley, 319; —, Little & Great,  
 310; — Common, 293; —  
 Mead, 305; — Shot, 311  
 Brake Field .. .. . 299  
 Brakes, 308; — Ley, 293; —  
 Ley Spring, 293  
 Brambles, Hither, &c. .. 296  
 Brambley .. .. . 296  
 Branches Field .. .. 296  
 Brand Ditch Field .. .. 313  
 Brands Ley, 302; — Mead, 298  
 Branters Field .. .. . 308  
 Brattens Field .. .. . 308  
 Bray Shot .. .. . 299  
 Braziers .. .. . 315  
 Breach, 308; —, The, 313, 319  
 Breads, The, 305; —, Little, 305  
 Brent Pelham Close.. .. 315  
 Brewers, 293; — (or Street)  
 Mead, 306  
 Brick Clamp, 296; — Clamp  
 Meadow, 312; — Clamps,  
 316; — Croft, 315, 316,  
 318; — Field, 299, 305, 312;  
 — Grove, 296; — Ground  
 Spring, 306  
 Brick-Kiln Close, 304; — Croft,  
 302; — Field, 298, 305,  
 308; — Lawn, 317; —  
 Mead, 304, 315  
 Brickables .. .. . 305  
 Brickson .. .. . 319  
 Brickwells .. .. . 305  
 Bridge Field, 298, 305; —  
 Mead, 299  
 Broadway, Great .. .. 317  
 Brockings Field.. .. . 315  
 Brockley Common, 299; —  
 Mead, 308  
 Brockleys .. .. . 312  
 Bromley Hill, 311; — Hill 11-  
 acres, 302  
 Brook, The, 315; — Field, 293;  
 — Hold Valley, 305; —  
 Mead, 308, 311, 318  
 Brooks Field, 296; — Moat, 314  
 Broom, Great, 299; — Croft,  
 319; — Field, 298, 319; —  
 Field Common, 311; — Hill,  
 298, 299; — Hills, 303, 304,  
 310, 316; — Ley, 311, 318;  
 — Mead, 304, 319; — Sands,  
 318; — Wood, 311



- Brooms, 293, 306, 316, 318; —,  
Great and Little, 314, 318;  
—, Long, 293
- Broomy Field . . . . . 303
- Browns, 304; — Croft, 316; —  
Field, 298; — Hern Allot-  
ment, 318; — Lawn, 305;  
— Orchard, 298; — Plan-  
tation, 305
- Broxted Spring . . . . . 296
- Brunsell, Upper and Lower, 316
- Bucks Field, 318; — Mead, 311
- Budds Mead . . . . . 317
- Bull Mead . . . . . 296
- Bullens Grove Ley . . . . . 314
- Bulleys . . . . . 299
- Bullocks Croft . . . . . 318
- Bulls, Little, 308; — Croft,  
318; — Mead, 315
- Bully Croft . . . . . 312
- Bulse Common . . . . . 302
- Bunters . . . . . 312
- Burden Field . . . . . 311
- Burgate Common . . . . . 311
- Burgess Croft . . . . . 312
- Burners Field Grove . . . . . 319
- Burnt Field, 305, 311, 312, 315;  
— Garden, 302; — Ground,  
296, 299, 306, 315, 317; —  
Grove, 307; — House  
Field, 298, 308; — House  
Mead, 305; — House Yard,  
315; — Mead, 315; —  
Orchard, 318
- Burntwood End Field, 305; —  
End 13-acres, 305
- Burntwomans Close . . . . . 305
- Burrs Field . . . . . 306
- Burton End Mead . . . . . 306
- Bury Field, 302; — Hills, 305;  
— Grove, 302; — Mead,  
302, 313; — Pasture, 316;  
— Water Field, 302
- Bush Crofts Wood, 312; —  
Field, 312, 318; — Ley,  
306; — Mead, 316; —  
Pasture, 319
- Bushes, Great and Little . . . . . 296
- Bushy Lewins, 306; — Leaves,  
318; — Ley, 306
- Bustards, 315; — Mead, 315
- Butchers, 299; — Ley, 312; —  
Mead, 311
- Butlers, 308; — Flaggy, Great  
and Little, 305; — Wood,  
305
- Butt Field, 302; — Mead, 302
- Butts, 308; —, Ploughed, 308;  
— Hill Common, 311; —  
Hills, 311
- Byatts . . . . . 296
- Byes Field . . . . . 318
- Byhams Mead . . . . . 293
- Bytons Field . . . . . 308
- Cagbridge Field . . . . . 319
- Cages Mead . . . . . 296
- Callender Field . . . . . 306
- Callenders . . . . . 314, 318
- Calverts Croft . . . . . 314
- Calves Ley, 296; — Pasture,  
299, 308; — Pightle,  
296, 312, 316; — Stock,  
298
- Calving Orchard . . . . . 319
- Cambridge Grove, 311; —  
Field, 311
- Camels Mead . . . . . 302
- Camps, Upper and Lower, 308;  
— Yard, 317
- Candle Croft . . . . . 316
- Cangle . . . . . 317
- Cangles, Long . . . . . 299
- Cangley . . . . . 308
- Canmores, Great . . . . . 299
- Cannings Pasture . . . . . 304

- Cannons Mead, 306; — Pasture, 318  
 Captains .. .. . 316  
 Cards Mead .. .. . 308  
 Carraways .. .. . 312  
 Carters, 314; — Field, 308; — Meadow, 312; — Pasture, 296, 318  
 Casey Common, Allotment in, 304; — Croft, 304  
 Caseley Spring .. .. . 318  
 Cassey Common .. .. . 310  
 Casseys .. .. . 306  
 Cast Field .. .. . 316  
 Castle Cross Shot, 305; — Hills, 306; — Lawn, 299; — Orchard, 315; Pavey, By, 305  
 Cassey Pightle .. .. . 296  
 Catley, 305; —, Upper, 308; — Mead, 296  
 Catleys, 296; — Close, 313  
 Catmore, Further, Middle, and Hither, 299  
 Caters Croft .. .. . 298  
 Cates Croft .. .. . 302  
 Cats Lane Field, 299; — Tail Mead, 296  
 Cattern Grove .. .. . 319  
 Catteys Field .. .. . 296  
 Causeway Ley .. .. . 312  
 Cellar Field .. .. . 308  
 Chalk Ley, 305; — Mead, 299  
 Chalk-Pit, 293, 316; — Common, 318; — Field, 305, 306  
 Chalks Croft .. .. . 305  
 Challis, Great and Little, 312; — Grove, 312  
 Chamberlains .. .. . 315  
 Chancel Croft .. .. . 308  
 Chapel Close, 310; — Croft, 312, 318; — Field, 305, 306  
 Chapmans, 308; — Croft, 314  
 Charles's, 296; — Field, 296  
 Chase, 298; — Croft, 311  
 Chaseway, 296, 298, 299, 302, 305, 308, 314, 315, 318; —, The, 312; — Mead, 312  
 Checker Croft .. .. . 296  
 Cherry Ground .. .. . 302, 318  
 Cheshams .. .. . 304  
 Chest Croft, 312; — Mead, 319  
 Chickney Field .. .. . 299  
 Chimney Field .. .. . 315  
 Chippersfield Pasture .. .. . 293  
 Chitlins .. .. . 308  
 Choaks Meadow .. .. . 308  
 Chrishall Ley .. .. . 313  
 Christmas Croft .. .. . 316  
 Church Common, 319; — Croft, 302, 310; — Field, 296, 299; — Field Common, 311; — Green, 303; — Mead, 308; — Shot, 317  
 Cinquefoil, 312; — Field, 305  
 Clapgate Field, 305, 306, 312; — Mead, 314  
 Clarks, 296, 305; — Closes, 305; — Field, 298, 315, 319; — Great Field, 312; — Mead, 296, 305, 316  
 Clavering Park .. .. . 317  
 Claypit, Hither & Further, 299; — Close, 305; — Field, 299; — Shot, 307, 318  
 Clay Pits .. .. . 311, 316  
 Clears, Great and Little 298  
 Cleaver Piece, The .. .. . 305  
 Cloptons Field .. .. . 305  
 Closehead Field .. .. . 306  
 Clothes Hoppett .. .. . 308  
 Clover Field .. .. . 314  
 Coal Ground .. .. . 314  
 Coals Ley, Little and Great, 296  
 Cobbs, Little, .. .. . 308

- Cobham Shot . . . . . 311  
 Coblers Croft, 318; — Mead, 317  
 Cock Andrews, 317; — Bush,  
     Upper and Lower, 305; —  
     Croft, 306; — Orchard, 318;  
     — Slade Piece, 305  
 Cocketts Croft . . . . . 302  
 Cockin Down, Little, . . . 316  
 Cockins . . . . . 316  
 Cockland Field . . . . . 308  
 Cocks, 305; —, The, 305; —  
     Bill, 306; — Croft, 298,  
     302, 312, 314, 315  
 Codham Park Plantation . . . 304  
 Coldhams Croft . . . . . 304  
 Cold Hill, 315; — Hill Field,  
     315; — Ley, 296  
 Cole Croft, 312; — End 7-acres,  
     312  
 Coles Field, 314; — Mead, 315  
 Colemans Ley . . . . . 296  
 Collarhoms . . . . . 308  
 Collicks, 296; — Pasture, 296  
 Collins Field . . . . . 293, 316  
 Collyers . . . . . 308  
 Colt Pens . . . . . 302  
 Colts Field . . . . . 306  
 Comings (or The Common) 312  
 Common, The, 308; — (or  
     Comings), 312; —, Upper  
     and Lower, 303; — Down,  
     318; — Fen, The, 299; —  
     Field, 296; — Mead, 306; —  
     Meadow, 310; — Piece, 316  
 Conduit Field, 299; — Hill, 305  
 Coney Close, 305; — Field, 312;  
     — Park, 311; — Yard, 310  
 Coneygarth Hill . . . . . 298  
 Coneyget, Little, and Grass, 299  
 Coneygre Pightle, 304; — Wood,  
     304  
 Conquests Orchard . . . . . 313  
 Constables . . . . . 312  
 Cooks Aldick, In, 317; — Aldick  
     Mead, 317; — Croft, 308, 317  
 Coopers, 306, 312; — Upper,  
     296; — Lower, 312; —  
     Croft, 315  
 Coplar Bank Shot, 307; — Hill,  
     307; — Hill Shot, 307; —  
     Pen, 307  
 Copses . . . . . 312  
 Copt Hall Close, 305; — Hall  
     Field, 305  
 Copy Field, 299, 308; — Croft  
     Wood, 305; — Grove, 305  
 Cornells Pasture . . . . . 312  
 Corner Mead, 316; — Piece, 306  
 Cottey . . . . . 296  
 Couches . . . . . 312  
 Coulters Field . . . . . 312  
 Court Field . . . . . 312  
 Cowells, 299; — Close, 305  
 Cow Gate Field, 312; — Leys,  
     305, 306, 319; — Great and  
     Little, 293; — Long, 318;  
     — Round, 306; — Shadow,  
     305; — Shadows, 296  
 Cowslip Meadow . . . . . 296  
 Coys Mead . . . . . 299, 305  
 Coystons Pasture . . . . . 308  
 Crab Pasture Grove . . . . . 305  
 Crab-Tree Croft, 310, 318; —  
     Field, 296, 305, 306; —  
     Grond, 318; — Mead,  
     296; — Razors, 305  
 Crabs Castle, 305; — Croft, 312  
 Crack Free Field . . . . . 312  
 Crackney . . . . . 316  
 Cracks Ley . . . . . 299  
 Cragmans Pasture . . . . . 318  
 Crangless . . . . . 296  
 Cranham, 17-acre-, 315; —  
     Pasture, 314  
 Cranhams, 17-acre- . . . . . 314  
 Cranmore . . . . . 299

- Creins Meadow . . . . 302  
 Cresswell Field, 311; — Mead,  
 311  
 Croft, 296; —, The, 315; —  
 Lands, 308  
 Cross Croft, 314; — Field, 296;  
 — Gardens, 314; — Green  
 Field, 312; — Path Field,  
 318; — Road Pasture, 293;  
 — Wood Field, 305  
 Crouch Hill Wood, 318; —  
 Meadow, 293  
 Crow Valley, 305; — Valley  
 Field, 305  
 Crowns, Great . . . . 319  
 Crying Leys . . . . 312  
 Cumber Hills . . . . 314  
 Cunnigarth—*see* Coney, 298  
 Curles Green Yard . . . 315  
 Curtis Field . . . . 293  
 Cuss Croft . . . . 305  
 Cussells, Upper . . . . 318  
 Cuthumstead Croft . . . 318  
 Cutlers Mead. . . . 318  
 Cuts Croft, Great . . . 305
- Daffey Field . . . . 298, 299  
 Daines Mead . . . . 305  
 Dam Shot . . . . 315  
 Dan Croft . . . . 304  
 Dancers Close . . . . 313  
 Danceys Grove . . . . 315  
 Dane Field, 316; — Meadow,  
 316  
 Daniels, 306; — Field, 316  
 Darker Field . . . . 316  
 Darmans . . . . 305  
 Darnell, First . . . . 315  
 Darnolds, —; — Mead, 317  
 Dassels, Great . . . . 312  
 Daunces Mead . . . . 305  
 Dawley, 314; — Field, 314;  
 — Pasture, 314
- Deal Croft, Upper and Lower,  
 318; — Tree Piece, 305  
 Dean Field, 318; — Grove,  
 311; — Mead, 311; —  
 Ley, 311  
 Deans Wood . . . . 311  
 Debden Ley . . . . 312  
 Deeds Field . . . . 315  
 Deer Croft, 304; — Park, 305;  
 Park, The, 303; — Slade,  
 Upper, 319  
 Delhouse . . . . 315  
 Dell Field, 304; — Hole, 313;  
 — Hole Field, 293, 306;  
 — Hole Mead, 318  
 Dennis, 308, 315; — Home  
 Field, 308; — Ley, 298  
 Denwages . . . . 316  
 Dettreadens . . . . 306  
 Dewleys . . . . 315  
 Dial Pasture . . . . 293  
 Dickmores . . . . 296  
 Dicks Field . . . . 308  
 Dickstables. . . . 305  
 Digby Field, 293; — Wood,  
 293  
 Digbys . . . . 296, 306  
 Dirty Croft . . . . 315  
 Discern, Great and Little 318  
 Dobsons . . . . 293, 306  
 Doddenhill Close . . . 305  
 Dodmore . . . . 310  
 Dodmoor Common . . . 310  
 Dodnoe Field . . . . 299  
 Dog Kennel Field. . . . 293  
 Dogdale, Great . . . . 319  
 Dogden Pasture . . . . 318  
 Dole Field, 296, 308, 312; —  
 Pen, 313  
 Dollars Edens . . . . 319  
 Dool Field . . . . 312  
 Dooley Cousins . . . . 308  
 Dormead . . . . 312

- Dovehouse Close, 296, 302, 305,  
 310, 311, 314, 315, 316; —  
 Croft, 319; — Field, 293,  
 298, 303, 306, 307, 308, 312,  
 318; — Ley, 296; —  
 Pightle, 305  
 Dowell Field . . . . . 296  
 Down, 298; —, The, 298; —,  
 Great, 306; —, Long, 316;  
 — Lower, Hither, *etc.*, 296;  
 — Field, 299, 311; — Croft  
 Orchard, 318  
 Downs, The, 305, 315; —, Upper  
 and Lower, 317; —, Great  
 and Little, 308  
 Drays, Upper and Lower, 305  
 Dredge Croft, 304; — Croft  
 Spring, 304  
 Drivers Mead . . . . . 302  
 Druce . . . . . 315  
 Drunkards Hearne . . . . . 311  
 Drylands . . . . . 312  
 Dry Leys . . . . . 305  
 Duck Acre . . . . . 319  
 Duckets Field . . . . . 296  
 Ducks . . . . . 305  
 Dudds Wood . . . . . 299  
 Dukes Buttery . . . . . 305  
 Dunge Pasture . . . . . 296  
 Dunstable . . . . . 305  
 Dunstalls, 296; — Great and  
 Little, 305  
 Durces . . . . . 315  
 Durrells Wood . . . . . 298  
 Dutton Hill . . . . . 312  
  
 Eades . . . . . 305  
 East Common, 299; — Field,  
 298, 310  
 Eazing Wells . . . . . 314  
 Edmunds . . . . . 314  
 Elder Shot . . . . . 318  
 Ell (L) Meadow . . . . . 299  
  
 Ellis Field, 312; — Ley, 312  
 Elm Meadow, 312; — Walk,  
 296; — Tree Piece, 302  
 Elmdon Pasture . . . . . 308  
 Elsenham Mead . . . . . 298  
 Elysian Garden . . . . . 305  
 Emms Grove . . . . . 305  
 Engine Field . . . . . 302, 311  
 Englands . . . . . 306  
 Enhams . . . . . 319  
 Entry Meadow . . . . . 315  
 Ethers Wood . . . . . 314  
 Everetts Field . . . . . 293  
 Ewer Ley . . . . . 293  
  
 Fair Field, 302; — Ley, 312  
 Fairy Croft . . . . . 305  
 Fallow, Great and Little, 316  
 Families . . . . . 305  
 Fanns . . . . . 298  
 Farmedine, In, 305; — Mill  
 Field, 305  
 Farnham Lawn . . . . . 316  
 Fellows Field . . . . . 298  
 Fence Field . . . . . 298  
 Fewells Field . . . . . 308  
 Fiddling Close . . . . . 315  
 Filbury Grove Field . . . . . 317  
 Fish Field . . . . . 318  
 Fishmere Mead . . . . . 305  
 Five Corners . . . . . 308  
 Flack Croft . . . . . 312  
 Flacks Field, 296, 305, 308; —  
 Orchard, 298  
 Flasters Close . . . . . 317  
 Flat Fields . . . . . 305, 312  
 Flatnell Burgate Common 311  
 Fleares, Upper, . . . . . 311  
 Flearses (Hearses) Pasture 311  
 Flitters Garden . . . . . 310  
 Fold, The, . . . . . 296  
 Footpath Field, 296, 319; —  
 Pasture, 298

- Fore Field, 296, 298, 305, 308,  
312; — Lawn, 317; —  
Meadow, 296
- Forebury, 308; — and Ordells,  
293
- Forks Field, 314; — Pightle,  
314
- Forster Hills . . . . . 306
- Forsters Field . . . . . 312
- Fosters . . . . . 304
- Four Ton Field, 312; — —  
Grove, 312
- Fowlslow Field . . . . . 305
- Fox Back, 296; — Hole Pen,  
307
- Foxborors . . . . . 305
- Foxhills . . . . . 315
- Foxes Croft . . . . . 302
- Frambury, Great and Little, 302
- Franklins . . . . . 296
- Freebarns Wood . . . . . 305
- Freehold, The, . . . . . 312
- Freemans, 315; — Croft, 311
- Frenchmans Hole . . . . . 302
- Frenches, Great, . . . . . 296
- Fretters Field . . . . . 306
- Friday Mead . . . . . 302
- Fridays . . . . . 317
- Frogs Croft, 312; — Mead, 305
- Frosts . . . . . 318
- Fulbourne Shot . . . . . 307
- Full Brook Mead . . . . . 315
- Fullers . . . . . 305
- Fulkes . . . . . 308
- Fulvan Mead . . . . . 305
- Fulwell Common . . . . . 310
- Fulwells . . . . . 303
- Furlong Mead . . . . . 317
- Furzes, The . . . . . 305
- Gage Wood, 306; — Wood,  
East, 306; — Woods Pas-  
ture, 306
- Gains, Small, 296, 298, 306,  
312, 316; —, Great and  
Little Small, 293, 312; —,  
Great Small, 299; — Wood,  
Small, 298
- Gaol House, The . . . . . 302
- Galley Field, Great and Little,  
308; — Field, Further and  
Nearer, 298; — Hill, 311.  
*See also* Gallows
- Gallows Croft, 303; — Field,  
315; — Ground, 315; —  
Hill Close, 305; — Hill  
Field, 302. *See also* Galley
- Gardeners Ground . . . . . 316
- Gates, Upper, 312; — Grove, 312
- Gawls . . . . . 319
- Gay Croft . . . . . 299
- Gearsleys . . . . . 304
- Gelding Field . . . . . 315
- George Field . . . . . 308
- Georges Beazley, 312; — Close,  
317; — Meadow, 311
- German Skilletts . . . . . 305
- Germany Field . . . . . 305
- Gibbons Field . . . . . 316
- Gibbs Field, 296; — Wood, 316
- Gilberts . . . . . 296
- Gilders . . . . . 308
- Giles Croft, 315; — Orchard, 315
- Gilhunts . . . . . 298
- Gilsons Field . . . . . 306
- Gingers . . . . . 316
- Ginnett Lands, 318; — Land  
Pasture Allotment, 318
- Ginns Common . . . . . 299
- Giors (Givis) Croft . . . . . 316
- Gipsy Mead . . . . . 296
- Glascocks Mead . . . . . 296
- Glebe Acre, 312; — Common,  
312
- Glovers Mare . . . . . 302
- Goblets Mead . . . . . 318

- Godfreys Croft .. .. 298  
 Gods Croft Allotment .. 318  
 Golden Common .. .. 293  
 Goldings Orchard .. .. 306  
 Golds Dell Croft .. .. 306  
 Golstones .. .. . 305  
 Gommage, Great, 308; — Field, 308  
 Goose Croft .. .. . 314  
 Goosen Field, Little.. .. 298  
 Gore, Upper and Lower, 312; — Field, Upper and Lower, 308. *See also* Gower.  
 Gores .. .. . 306, 314  
 Gosling Moor, 319; — Shot, 311  
 Gout Field .. .. . 316  
 Gower Field, Upper and Lower, 308. *See also* Gore.  
 Graces, 305; — Field, 305  
 Graft Croft .. .. . 318  
 Grange Field, 308; — Pasture, 308; — Pightle, 308  
 Grants Croft .. .. . 304  
 Graittes Common .. .. 315  
 Gratmore Field .. .. . 315  
 Grattis Mead .. .. . 315  
 Grave Field .. .. . 312  
 Gravel Field, 312; — Pit, 306; — Pit Field, 293, 302, 305, 306, 318; — Shot, 299; — Shot Mead, 299  
 Graves Pasture .. .. . 296  
 Grays Croft .. .. . 318  
 Green Moor Common, 315; — Street Croft, 298  
 Greens Croft, 315; — Field, 293, 306, 316; — Pasture, 318  
 Greenstead .. .. . 318  
 Greenway Shot .. .. . 305  
 Griggs Field .. .. . 308  
 Grimsditch Wood .. .. 305  
 Groundset Common .. .. 304  
 Grove, 302, 305, 310; —, The, 299, 304, 319; —, Great and Little, 308; — Croft, 319; — Field, 312; — Shot, 306  
 Groves, 306; — Croft, 315  
 Grumble Ley .. .. . 318  
 Guilders .. .. . 305  
 Guivers .. .. . 305  
 Gulston Hills .. .. . 318  
 Gun Shot .. .. . 308  
 Gunters Croft.. .. . 305  
 Gurons, Little, 293; — Field, 293  
 Guyvers Orchard .. .. 319  
 Gypson Hedge Shot .. 307  
 Hack Bush Field .. .. 299  
 Hadstock Ley .. .. . 305  
 Hagbush .. .. . 299  
 Haggans Piece .. .. . 308  
 Hagger Mill Field .. .. 313  
 Haggars, 298; — Hoppet, 298  
 Haggases, Little .. .. 316  
 Hailes, 299; — Close, 317  
 Half Mile Field.. .. . 308  
 Halfpence .. .. . 293  
 Hall Croft, 318; — Field, 304, 312; — Close Grove, —; — Thousands (12.3.2), 293  
 Halstead Spring Field .. 319  
 Ham Field .. .. . 312  
 Hamnel .. .. . 311  
 Hams Ley .. .. . 316  
 Hanchetts Croft .. .. 314  
 Hand Post Field .. .. 314  
 Hanging Grove, 296; — Grove Pasture, 311; — Hills, 302; — Hills Plantation, 304  
 Hanover, Little.. .. . 299  
 Hare Park, 305; — Pasture, 314  
 Harp, The, 312, 314, 318; —, Little, 305

- Harriers Close .. .. 319  
 Harrisons Grove .. .. 312  
 Harrys Field, Upper and Lower,  
 305  
 Harsey Croft and Mead .. 299  
 Hart Bean, 305; — Field, 296,  
 312; — Piece, 307  
 Harts Croft .. .. 302  
 Hassobury Wood .. .. 318  
 Hatch, The, 312; — Field, 296;  
 —, Further and Hither,  
 316  
 Hatches, Upper and Lower, 318  
 Hatchmans, Great and Little,  
 296  
 Hausten Hills, Great .. 318  
 Hawbush Field .. .. 312  
 Hawk Field, Great & Little, 296  
 Hawkes Ley .. .. 319  
 Hawkins .. .. 305, 314  
 Hay Mead, 303; — Gate Ley,  
 296  
 Haydens Angel Close, 317; —  
 Pasture, 296  
 Hazel End Field .. .. 316  
 Hazlemoor Common .. 319  
 Headland in 13-acres, 307; —  
 Piece, 311  
 Hearn's Croft .. .. 312  
 Hearses, Lower .. .. 311  
 Heath Allotment, The .. 318  
 Hedge Lanes, Great and Little,  
 306; — Shot, Long, 305  
 Hempstalls .. .. 317  
 Hempstead, 316; — Hane, 315  
 Hemstells .. .. 293  
 Henham Field .. .. 299  
 Henhams .. .. 306  
 Herberts Common .. .. 305  
 Herds Croft .. .. 298  
 Hern 6-acres .. .. 305  
 Herring Ley .. .. 293  
 Hertfordshire .. .. 315  
 Hexdens .. .. 315  
 Hicks .. .. 305  
 Hickstones .. .. 319  
 Hide, Little, 299; — Middle,  
 315; — Common, 299  
 Highams Grove .. .. 312  
 Highway Field .. .. 298, 319  
 Hill Croft, 293, 304; — Field,  
 310; — Gap Field, 313  
 Hills Croft, 314; — Barn Pas-  
 ture, 298  
 Hind Grove .. .. 312  
 Hitch, The Great, 302; —,  
 Little, 302  
 Hitchman .. .. 315  
 Hither Field .. .. 296  
 Hoakes .. .. 315  
 Hobbs, 305, 312; — Meadow,  
 305; — Pasture, 312  
 Hobletts Field .. .. 305  
 Hock Meadow .. .. 305  
 Hockley Field, 305, 308; —  
 Hole, 302; — Ley, 302  
 Hodsons Close .. .. 305  
 Hog Field, 296; — Trotts Field,  
 319; — Yard, 305; — Yard  
 Piece, 310  
 Hoggetts .. .. 316  
 Hogs Croft .. .. 298, 305  
 Hogsden .. .. 319  
 Holdings .. .. 305  
 Hole Close .. .. 313  
 Hollands Brooms .. .. 293  
 Holmer Cross Field .. .. 305  
 Holmes .. .. 310  
 Holty, Great and Little .. 306  
 Homestall, 296 — *see also* Hem-  
 stalls  
 Honey Lane Field .. .. 293  
 Honysuckle Field .. .. 306  
 Honham Mead .. .. 296  
 Hook, The, 298; — Croft, 311;  
 — Field, 306, 311, 312, 318



- Hop Garden (Wood), 299, 305 ;  
 — Garden Hill, 299 ; —  
 Ground (grass, 2*a.*), 296 ;  
 298, 299, 302, 304, 305, 306,  
 308, 310, 312, 315, 316, 317,  
 319 ; — Ground Mead, 306,  
 314 ; — Ground Meadow,  
 308 ; — Spring, 296
- Hoppet, 293, 296, 299, 306, 308,  
 311, 314, 318, 319 ; —  
 The, 312
- Horde Pastures . . . . . 319
- Horn Book Pieces (ar. 7*a.*) 305
- Horne Field, Great . . . . . 312
- Horney Book 9-acres . . . . . 305
- Horse Croft, 305 ; — Pasture,  
 296, 299, 306 ; — Pightle, 305
- Horseleys . . . . . 308, 310, 312
- Horstlers . . . . . 302
- Hoskins Field . . . . . 302
- Hospital Field, 302 ; — Croft,  
 311, 319
- How Bush, Further, 296 ; —  
 Common, 296, 299 ; — Croft,  
 299 ; — Field, 296, 308,  
 312, 318 ; — Ley, 308 ; —  
 Wood, 296
- Howbolets . . . . . 319
- Howell Croft, 304 ; — Hole  
 Croft, 304
- Howells . . . . . 305
- Howlett Mead, 311 ; — End  
 Meadow, 312
- Hoxley . . . . . 308
- Hubbards Hills . . . . . 316
- Hudds Hills . . . . . 316
- Huggins Croft . . . . . 304
- Hundred Acres (o.1.22.) 312 ;  
 (o.1.1.) 312 ; (1.2.25.) 312 ;  
 (1.3.1.) 312 ; (o.1.8.) 317 ;  
 — —, The, (o.1.38.) 319 ;  
 — —, Little, (o.2.22.) 306,  
 (o.2.10.) 312
- Hungerdown, 296, 299, 308, 311,  
 312, 315
- Hungry Field, 305 ; — Downs,  
 306
- Hunts, 314 ; — Wood, 314
- Hurbers Field . . . . . 306
- Hurley Mead . . . . . 299
- Hust Field . . . . . 308
- Hutch . . . . . 306
- Hyams, Upper and Lower, 312
- Hyde, Further . . . . . 315
- Hysterdale . . . . . 305
- Impage . . . . . 298
- Impey Moore . . . . . 312
- Impish Mead . . . . . 316
- Imphy . . . . . —
- Ireland Field . . . . . 296
- Iron Pear Tree Piece . . . . . 305
- Irons Ley . . . . . 306
- Isabells . . . . . 318
- Isaacs Field . . . . . 319
- Islands . . . . . 306
- Ives Field, 318 ; — Lands, 304
- Jagdale Piece . . . . . 311
- Jaggers Grove . . . . . 302
- Janes Mead . . . . . 305
- Jenkins, 299 ; — Green Grove,  
 305
- Jenkinhooks . . . . . 312
- Jennings, 305 ; — Field, 305
- Jennys Garden . . . . . 305
- Jeromes Castle, By, . . . . . 305
- Jersey, New, . . . . . 319
- Jobber Croft . . . . . 315
- Jobbers Croft . . . . . 304
- Jock Common, 311 ; — Common  
 Cobham Shot, 311
- Joes Pightle . . . . . 296
- John Field . . . . . 306
- Johns Acre . . . . . 305
- Johnsons Croft, 304 ; — Grove, 312

- Joiners, Upper and Lower, 296  
 Jonathans Mead . . . . . 296  
 Joseph Smiths Field . . . . . 296  
 Judd Field . . . . . 308  
 Judds Common, 293; — Field,  
 308; — Wood, 298  
 Junes Mead . . . . . 315  
  
 Kettle Field . . . . . 296  
 Kibberdies . . . . . 305  
 Kibberdy Wood . . . . . 305  
 Kids Field . . . . . 305  
 Kelham Close . . . . . —  
 Killey, 314; — Corner Common,  
 314  
 Kiln House Field . . . . . 308  
 Kinghams . . . . . 306  
 Kings Croft, 314; — Field, 296,  
 299, 310, 312; — Mead,  
 298; — Orchard, 296  
 Kitch Amey . . . . . 302  
 Kitchen Croft, (1a., 2a.) 311,  
 (30a.) 318; — Field, (5a.)  
 296, (24a.) 296, (grass, 8a.)  
 303, (15a., 8a.) 305, (4a.)  
 306, (6a.) 308, (13a.) 308,  
 (13a.) 308, (12a., 7a.) 308,  
 (5a.) 308; — Pasture,  
 (grass, 82a.) 296; — Ley,  
 (2a.) 308, (6a.) 314; —  
 Pasture, (7a.) 319  
 Kittle Mead . . . . . 296  
 Kitts Amy, 302; — Grove, 312  
 Knights Field, 308; — Ley,  
 315; — Mead, 293; —  
 Pasture, 308  
  
 Laceys Field . . . . . 296  
 Lacy Field . . . . . 316  
 Ladens, Lower, . . . . . 308  
 Ladle, Great and Little, 299  
 Lady Grove, 317; — Mead, 306,  
 315; — Well Garden, 296  
  
 Lamb Croft, 318; — Pits, 310, 315  
 Lamberts, 299, 305; — Ley,  
 314; — Mead, 314, 318  
 Lancher Hills . . . . . 296  
 Lane Field Croft Mead 304  
 Lanemoor . . . . . 296  
 Lang Mead Field . . . . . 313  
 Langhams . . . . . 302  
 Langleys . . . . . 318  
 Lantern Field . . . . . 312  
 Larkins 15-acres . . . . . 305  
 Lasting Field . . . . . 296  
 Lastons Park . . . . . 306  
 Latcher Pasture . . . . . 302  
 Latchmoores . . . . . 306  
 Lauges Meadow . . . . . 316  
 Lawn, The, 298, 299, 305, 311,  
 314, 315, 318; — Mead,  
 319; — Bush Mead, 319  
 Laws Close, 305; — Pasture, 315  
 Lawsells Garden . . . . . 305  
 Laybridge . . . . . 299  
 Lease, Long . . . . . 298  
 Leffles 4-acres, 296; — Garden  
 (ar. 4a.) 296; — Ley, 296  
 Leggits . . . . . 296  
 Leggates . . . . . 298  
 Leggets, Wood near . . . . . 296  
 Lemon Dale . . . . . 303  
 Lemons Close, 315; — Ley, 315  
 Leonards . . . . . 305  
 Level Ditch Common . . . . . 314  
 Leveretts Mead . . . . . 305  
 Lavery Wood Field . . . . . 316  
 Lewins, Long . . . . . 306  
 Lewitts . . . . . 315  
 Ley, The, 296, 298, 305, 318;  
 —, Great, 305, 306; —,  
 Little, 304; —, Old, 296,  
 303, 312; —, Upper, 299,  
 313; — Bridge, 310; —  
 Common, 302, 315; —  
 Hooks, 298

- Leybridge .. .. . 299  
 Leylands, Great and Little, 311;  
 — Spring, 311  
 Leys, The, 298; —, Great, 304,  
 314; —, New, 306; —  
 Common Allotment, 314  
 Lilla, The, 293; — Slipe, 293  
 Lilley, Common, 317; —, Com-  
 mon, Great and Little, 317  
 Limekiln Close, 305, 311; —  
 Field, 293, 296  
 Lincolns Ley Common .. 319  
 Linsdells Field .. .. 308  
 Linsells .. .. . 298  
 Linsey Bank .. .. . 306  
 Lints Bottom .. .. . 315  
 Lions, 312; — Croft, 314  
 Littley, 305; — Dells, 314; —  
 Field, 296; — Manor, 305;  
 — Mead, 314; — Pightle,  
 296; — Wood, 296  
 Littletons .. .. . 318  
 Loates Pasture .. .. . 306  
 Lobby, Great and Little, 296  
 Lobsters Pound .. .. . 312  
 Lockitt Hill .. .. . —  
 Lofts Dean.. .. . 311  
 London Jock, 311; — Field,  
 310; — Ley, 310  
 Longbridge.. .. . 315  
 Longfield Common .. 298  
 Longlands .. .. . 317  
 Longleys.. .. . 306  
 Lonaper, Part of, .. .. 296  
 Lonoper, Part of, .. .. 311  
 Loompits .. .. . 305  
 Lords Mead, 315; — Moor, 319;  
 — Pasture, 305  
 Louisa's Field, 308; — Pasture,  
 308  
 Lounges Mead .. .. . 316  
 Lovetts, 318; — Field Common,  
 318  
 Low Field, 317, 318; — Field  
 Common, 304; — Mead, 317  
 Lucern Field, 314, 316; — Piece,  
 312  
 Lucksend Catley .. .. 308  
 Lucy Croft.. .. . 293  
 Lye, The.. .. . 298  
 Lyes .. .. . 296  
 Lyons Mead .. .. . 304  
 Madhill .. .. . 305  
 Madge Hobbs Ley, 305; —  
 Wood, 305  
 Maid Eve .. .. . 298  
 Mailer Hall (11a.) .. .. 318  
 Makeleys.. .. . 305  
 Malt Hoppet .. .. . 319  
 Mamma Pasture .. .. . 296  
 Man Croft .. .. . 314  
 Managerie (Wood, 7a.) 296  
 Manhall Mead .. .. . 305  
 Mannings .. .. . 305  
 Manor Field .. .. . 316  
 Manuden Common Meadow,  
 318; — Shot, 306  
 Mans Ley, Great .. .. 306  
 Maple Close, —; — Reedings,  
 298  
 Mar (or Mow) Mead.. .. 312  
 March Field, 311; — Hills, 318  
 Margarets Field.. .. . 316  
 Markings Croft .. .. 298  
 Marlows Orchard .. .. 318  
 Marshalls Field .. .. 308  
 Martins, 312; — Croft, 293;  
 — Field, 293  
 Martlow Field Grove .. 319  
 Mary Croft .. .. . 306  
 Marys Croft .. .. . 296  
 Mash Pasture.. .. . 318  
 Mashes Field .. .. . 312  
 Masons, 314; — Croft, 304  
 Matthews, Great, .. .. 296

- Matting Field, 305; — Field Wood, 305
- Mawn, 293; — Common, 293
- Maylen. . . . . 305
- Maypole Close, 305; — Meadow, 312
- Mead Field Pasture, 310; — Plant, 298; — Shot, 306
- Meads Ley . . . . . 306
- Meesden Lammas . . . . 317
- Meggs, 315; — Ley, 298
- Mennels Mead . . . . . 306
- Mennets Mead . . . . . 306
- Merry Weathers . . . . . 315
- Midderner Common, 311; — Pightle, 311
- Mile Bush Shot, 307; — End Croft, 302
- Milestone 6-acres . . . . 312
- Milford, Long, . . . . . 310
- Mill Croft, 298; — Field, 293, 296, 298, 299, 303, 305, 306, 308, 311, 312, 313, 314, 316, 318; — End Croft, 302; — Field Common, 315, 316; — Field Croft, 314; — Hill, 318, 319; — Meadow, 296; — Pasture, 296; — Shot, 311; — Wood, 298
- Millers Croft, 303; — Mead, 293
- Million Ley (2.2.8.) . . . 298
- Mills Croft . . . . . 304
- Miltons Field. . . . . 316
- Minnums . . . . . 306
- Mitchells, 312; — Ley, 304
- Moat, Old, 315; — Field, 296, 308, 312; — Hoppett, 308; — Meadow, 312; — Piece, 311, 312
- Mobbs Garden . . . . . 303
- Mole Field, Upper and Lower, 305; — Hill Croft, 312; — Ley, 305; — Pond Wood, 305
- Moles Meadow, 312; — Pasture, 296
- Money Field, 308; — Field Mead, 312
- Monk Sampsons . . . . . 311
- Monks, Hither and Further, 305; — Close, 315; — Hill, 305; — Mead, 298, 306, 315, 318; — Shot, 298; — Wood, 305
- Moon Croft. . . . . 311
- Moor, Great and Little, 298; — Common, 315; — Croft, 311; — Field, 298, 306, 316; — Grove, 312; — Field Hoppet, 298
- Moors, 306; — The, 296, 299, 312, 315; — Croft, 311
- Moral Field, Great and Little, 296
- Morgans Wood . . . . . 305
- Morels Park . . . . . 306
- Morils Field . . . . . 305
- Morlands. . . . . 318
- Morris's Field, 304; — Harp, 305
- Mosey Croft . . . . . 308
- Moss Croft, 305; — Green, 318
- Motts Mead, 298; — Pightle, 305
- Moul Field . . . . . 305
- Mouls Field . . . . . 305
- Mounlings . . . . . —
- Mow (or Mar) Mead . . . 312
- Mowing Ground . . . . . 312
- Much Field, Upper and Lower, 298; — Field, 318; — Hales Field, 305; — Hales Wood, 305
- Mud Field . . . . . 308
- Mullingers . . . . . 314
- Mumfords Field. . . . . 306
- Mynotts Piece . . . . . 305

- Nailings, Little . . . . 314  
 Nan Hikes . . . . . 316  
 Nash Acre . . . . . 293  
 Nashs Field . . . . . 293  
 Neds Croft . . . . . 318  
 Nell, The, 308; — Mead, 308  
 Nether Field, 293, 306; —  
 Ground, 313; — Hill, 306  
 New Croft . . . . . 299  
 Newgate Field . . . . . 316  
 Newland, 296; — Common, 319  
 Newlands, 308; —, Great and  
 Little, 308; — Field, 299;  
 — Mead, 311; — Wood,  
 312  
 Newmans Field, 316; — Pightle,  
 306  
 Newport Ley, Great, 315; —  
 Mead, 311; — Pond Mead,  
 302  
 Nicholas's Croft . . . . 304  
 Nichols Field . . . . 293, 306  
 Nidgells . . . . . 305  
 Nightingales . . . . . 305  
 Noak Field, 314; — Ley, 314  
 Noakes, 305; — Grove, 305  
 Nopnall Common . . . . 314  
 Nopsey Wood . . . . . 312  
 North Croft, 303, 304, 319; —  
 Field, 299, 317, 318; —  
 Field Common, 306  
 Northey Common, 319; —  
 Wood, 319  
 Northwards, Great & Little, 308  
 Notts Acre . . . . . 305  
 Nun Valleys . . . . . 305  
 Nutstead, Great and Little, 314  
 Oak Field, 296, 304, 305, 312; —  
 Ley, Broad, 312; — Mead,  
 Great, 298, 306; — Pasture,  
 307, 319; — Shot, 308; —  
 Wood, 311  
 Oars Mead . . . . . 308  
 Oat Field . . . . . 312  
 Oddcocks . . . . . 311  
 Odden Shot, 311; — Shot,  
 Great, 311  
 Okey Pasture . . . . . 296  
 Olberry Wood . . . . . 315  
 Old Brick Ground Spring, 306;  
 — Womans Mead, 298  
 Oldick Field . . . . . 318  
 Olive Field and Grove . . . 312  
 Olivers Land . . . . . 298  
 One Ash Field . . . . . 308  
 Oozees Wood, 318; — Shot, 318  
 Orchard Close, 311; — Field, 310  
 Ordells . . . . . 293  
 Orgey Mead . . . . . 317  
 Osland Piece . . . . . 305  
 Oslands Piece . . . . . 305  
 Osmonds Croft Common 304  
 Out Common, Great, 315; —  
 Field, 298; — Field Com-  
 mon, 299  
 Outside Shot . . . . . 307  
 Outward . . . . . 303  
 Overlands, Upper & Lower, 298  
 Overledges . . . . . 305  
 Overwart . . . . . 312  
 Ox Croft, 302; — Grove, 319  
 Oxberry Mead . . . . . 315  
 Oxleys, Further 296, 303, 315, 316  
 Ozier Ground, 298, 299, 305, 311,  
 318; — Mead, 318  
 Oziers . . . . . 306  
 Paddocks Hill . . . . . 296  
 Pages Croft, 311; — Garden,  
 305; — Meadow, 311  
 Paines Croft . . . . . 319  
 Painters Mead, Little, . . . 305  
 Pale Ground . . . . . 314  
 Palmers Common . . . . . 296  
 Pan Bottom, 312; — Field, 312

- Pansdale Wood .. .. 303  
 Park, The, 316; —, Long, 315;  
 —, Upper and Lower, 305,  
 312; — Common, 293; —  
 Croft, 319; — Field, 306;  
 — Hill, 299; — Hoppet,  
 306; — Ley, 308; — Mead,  
 296; — Meadow, Great  
 and Little, 311  
 Parkers Croft, 298, 304, 318;  
 — Orchard, 304, 316; —,  
 Ploughed, 314  
 Parkley .. .. 308  
 Parsonage Croft, 318; — Field,  
 306, 308  
 Parsons Field .. .. 312  
 Patmore Bottom .. .. 316  
 Pattens Mead .. .. —  
 Pawnser .. .. 319  
 Paynes Field .. .. 299  
 Pea Croft, Great and Little, 299  
 Peacocks .. .. 308  
 Peartree Field .. 296, 306  
 Pease Reading, 317; — Land,  
 306  
 Peasland Shot, 305; — Field, 317  
 Peaslands .. .. 319  
 Peck Mill .. .. 305  
 Pelham Croft .. .. 314, 315  
 Pelhams, 15-acre .. .. 314  
 Pen, The, 314; —, Long, 307  
 Pens, The .. .. 313  
 Penfold Common .. .. 315  
 Penny Croft, 308; — Shot  
 Spring, 308  
 Pepper Stock .. .. 305  
 Perryns, 305; — Ley, 304  
 Perry Croft, 299; — Field, 293,  
 299, 306, 312, 316.  
 Perrys, 305, 311; — Croft, 319;  
 — Mead, 299  
 Pest Croft, 299; — House, 305;  
 — House Close, 305
- Pester Bridge Field .. .. 293  
 Peters Mead .. .. 298  
 Petland Pasture .. .. 305  
 Pettits Field, 306, 312; — Park,  
 305  
 Petty Croft, 296, 318; — Field, 293  
 Peverells, 296; — Ley, 305;  
 — Wood, 296  
 Phillips Close, 317; — Croft,  
 311; — Field, 312  
 Pickeridge Spring .. .. 298  
 Pickmans .. .. 318  
 Pies Ley .. .. 302  
 Pig Field .. .. 306  
 Pigs Parlour, Little .. .. 303  
 Pigeon Wood Field .. 298  
 Piggots, Grass, 313; —,  
 Ploughed, 313  
 Pigots .. .. 315  
 Pightle, 296, 299, 305, 306, 308,  
 310, 311, 313, 314, 315, 316,  
 318; —, The, 312; —,  
 Great, 312  
 Pigrams .. .. 319  
 Pill Croft .. .. 313  
 Pimpole Wood .. .. 319  
 Pines Hill Field .. .. 293  
 Pinkney Meadow Grove 312  
 Pipers Pasture .. .. 308  
 Pit, The .. .. 303  
 Pitch Groves .. .. 315  
 Pittle Grove .. .. 312  
 Pitty Field .. .. 293  
 Plane Croft .. .. 318  
 Splash, The .. .. 318  
 Platts, 306, 308; — Croft, 299;  
 — Common, 299; —,  
 Ploughed, 298  
 Players Down Field .. .. 299  
 Ploughed Bushes .. .. 312  
 Plucks, 317; — Field, 302  
 Plum Tree Field, 306, 319; —  
 Trees, 312

- Plumbs Orchard . . . . 306  
 Plush Breeches (ar. 10a.) 305  
 Podland Yard . . . . 296  
 Pollards, 306; — Pightle, —  
 Pollys Pasture . . . . 318  
 Pomfretts . . . . 307  
 Ponds Croft . . . . 315  
 Pool Field, 308; — Mead, 308  
 Poor Croft, Long, 318; — Ley,  
 296; — Mead, 293; —  
 Allen Common, 314, 318  
 Popes Field, 315; — Piece, 305  
 Poplar, Ploughed, 315; — Field,  
 296, 312  
 Poplers Ley . . . . 306  
 Porters Little Field . . 298  
 Portlands . . . . 318  
 Pot Leys, 305; — Moor Field,  
 319  
 Potash Close, 307; — Mead, 314  
 Potatoe Croft, 302; — Ground,  
 315  
 Potlids, Upper and Lower, 305  
 Potmoor Shot . . . . 319  
 Potts Field . . . . 296  
 Pounce Crouch Field, 305; —  
 Wood, 305  
 Pounces, 312; — Garden, 315  
 Pound Croft, 304; — Wood, 303  
 Powland, Upper . . . . 296  
 Preekes . . . . 304  
 Prentice Croft, 318; — Mead,  
 305  
 Price Field, Great & Little, 306  
 Priest Croft . . . . 305  
 Prince Field Spring . . 293  
 Priory Mead, 308; — Wood,  
 306, 314  
 Pryors, 304; — Closes, —; —  
 Field, 293, 298, 308; —  
 Garden, 318; — Shot, 318;  
 — Wood, 311  
 Pudding Mead . . . . 308  
 Purchase Field . . . . 304  
 Purden Field . . . . 311  
 Purley, 7-acre . . . . 308  
 Puttocks Field . . . . 305, 311  
 Quarter Mile Field . . 306  
 Quendon Mead . . . . 311  
 Quicks Field, Great & Little, 315  
 Quilters Meadow . . . . 308  
 Radens, Upper and Lower, 316  
 Rages . . . . 306  
 Ragged Fallow, 299; — Folly, 319  
 Railey Field . . . . 305  
 Railings Mead . . . . 317  
 Rainbow, 296; — Farthings,  
 306; — Field, 293, 296, 299,  
 306, 308, 312; — Shot, 312  
 Rainers Pightle . . . . 311  
 Ram Pasture . . . . 305  
 Rands Field . . . . 314  
 Ravens Acre . . . . 293, 306  
 Rawthey, 316; —, Lower, 316  
 Ray Field . . . . 299  
 Rayland, Great . . . . 318  
 Raylands . . . . 315  
 Rayment Field . . . . 312  
 Reach Field . . . . 305  
 Ready Mead . . . . 302, 311  
 Red Acre, 305; — Field, 314;  
 — Land, 317; — Lands,  
 306; — Land Slip, 304  
 Redgwells Mead . . . . 312  
 Redgate Mead . . . . 305  
 Redhead . . . . 314  
 Reedens—*see* Reedings  
 Reeding Common, . . . . 315  
 Reedings, 306, 314, 315, 318; —,  
 Great, 299, 305, 312; —,  
 Upper and Lower, 293, 305;  
 —, Corn, 314; — Grove,  
 299, 305; — Ley, 299; —  
 Meadow, 312

- Reedons . . . . . 316  
 Reeds Close, 310; — Field, 304;  
     — Orchard, 316  
 Regell, Great and Little, 308  
 Revel, Upper and Lower, 306  
 Revels . . . . . 306  
 Reynolds Field, 310; — Garden,  
     311  
 Richards Pasture . . . . . 296  
 Richmonds Long Field . . . . . 296  
 Riddings—*see* Reedings  
 Ridgewell . . . . . 296  
 Right Down Field . . . . . 306  
 Right-hand Moors, and Left-  
     hand, 293  
 Ringers Pasture . . . . . 311  
 Ringles . . . . . 316  
 Ripple . . . . . 318  
 Ripshons . . . . . 318  
 Roast Field Grove, 317; —  
     Mead, 317  
 Roberts Hill . . . . . 316  
 Robins Acre, 305, 312; — Grove,  
     305, 306; — Hill, 306  
 Rochens . . . . . 312  
 Rofey, 298; — Little, 298  
 Rogers Field . . . . . 298  
 Rogues Hill, 317; — Pasture, 317  
 Rolfway Wood . . . . . 317  
 Rolling Pit Mead . . . . . 315  
 Rolls . . . . . 299  
 Rood Meadow, Lower, . . . . . 312  
 Rook Field, 293; — Field Spring,  
     293; — Meadow, 305  
 Rooks Nest, Great & Little, 306  
 Rookards . . . . . 312  
 Rookell, 314; — Spring, 314  
 Root Field . . . . . 293  
 Ropers . . . . . 317  
 Ropey Common . . . . . 298  
 Rose Croft, 306; — Mead, 314;  
     — Oakmans, 302  
 Roses, Great and Little, . . . . . 296  
 Ross Lane Acre . . . . . 305  
 Roughway Common . . . . . 298  
 Round Cowleys, 306; — Field,  
     307; — Grove, 312; —  
     Mead, 293, 296, 306, 319;  
     — Meadow, 296, 305; —  
     Moor, 319; — Orchard,  
     315; — Park, 299; —  
     Plantation, 298; — Spring,  
     296; — Wood, 308; —  
     Horse Croft, 305; — Poor  
     Croft, 318; — 6-acres,  
     305  
 Roundabouts . . . . . 305  
 Rounds . . . . . 315  
 Row Tree Field . . . . . 315  
 Row of Trees, The (*ar. 7a.*) 312  
 Rowley Common Field and  
     Mead, 298; — Hill, 305  
 Rown Down . . . . . 316  
 Rowney Close, 312; — Field,  
     296; — Pightle, 312; —  
     Wood, 296  
 Royston Croft . . . . . 302  
 Rucketts . . . . . 312  
 Rue Field . . . . . 306  
 Ruggers, Upper and Lower, 299  
 Rumbells . . . . . 308, 312  
 Rumbolds, 318; — Ley, 306  
 Rumburg Mead . . . . . 317  
 Runnums . . . . . 308  
 Rush Croft, 312; — Field, 306;  
     — Ley, 296; — Mead, 305,  
     306, 315, 317; — Meadow,  
     299; — Plat, 314; —  
     Plats, 302, 318  
 Rushy Moors . . . . . 308  
 Russells Pasture . . . . . 318  
 Rye Croft, 298, 306, 316; —  
     Field, 306, 310; — Grass,  
     293, 296; — Grass Field,  
     296, 308; — Thousands  
     (8.3.20), 293



- Sadlers Mead . . . . . 305  
 Saffron Garden, 308, 318; —  
     Ground, 296, 299, 304; —  
     Ground Common, 315; —  
     Ground Field, 298  
 Sailey . . . . . 317  
 Sainfoin, 296, 302; — Field,  
     310; — Ground, 316; —  
     Mead, 305  
 St. Johns, 306; — Grove, 312;  
     — Hold, 305  
 Salins Down . . . . . 316  
 Sallow Field . . . . . 298  
 Salmons Close, 317; — Croft, 315  
 Sampsons, 299; —, Great and  
     Little, 296  
 Sams Mead . . . . . 306  
 Sand Croft Spring . . . . . 314  
 Sandal Common, 299; — Mea-  
     dow, 299  
 Sandles, Upper and Lower, 306  
 Sanders Field . . . . . 308  
 Sandpit Field, 299; — Shot, 311  
 Sandpits, Great, . . . . . 315  
 Sands Allotment, Great, (43*a*)  
     318  
 Sandy Croft, 312; — Field, 293  
 Sanneks, part of Madge Hobbs,  
     305  
 Sapses Field . . . . . 296  
 Savage . . . . . 293  
 Savills Croft, 318; — Field, 306  
 Sawpit Field . . . . . 296  
 Sayges . . . . . 317  
 Sayfield, Upper and Lower, 298  
 Scabbards, 312; —, Upper, 312;  
     — Wood, 312  
 Scalbourns or Scalmins . . . . . 306  
 Scanes . . . . . 315  
 Scarletts . . . . . 315  
 Schoolings . . . . . 312  
 Scooty Croft . . . . . 304  
 Scouty Croft . . . . . 296  
 Scotch Patch . . . . . 312  
 Scotts, 315; — Mead, 315  
 Scraggs Croft . . . . . 315  
 Scutcheons, Great & Little, 305  
 Searles Piece . . . . . 313  
 Sears Hill Pasture . . . . . 318  
 Seed Cop Hill . . . . . 305  
 Serjeants Croft, 298; — Ley,  
     296  
 Severals, 305, 316; —, The, 310;  
     —, Great and Little, 315;  
     —, Broad Field, 304; —,  
     Slamstead, 314  
 Several South Field . . . . . 318  
 Sewells . . . . . 298  
 Sewers End . . . . . 305  
 Sews Pasture, Old, . . . . . 316  
 Sextons Croft . . . . . 318  
 Shake Mead . . . . . 315  
 Shanks Mead . . . . . 306  
 Sharp Hills . . . . . 306  
 Sharps Croft, 311; — Leys, 311  
 Shaw Field . . . . . 316  
 Shear Croft, Great, 312; — Croft  
     Grove, 312  
 Sheds Lane 4-acres, 305; —  
     Ley, 308; — Pightle, 305  
 Sheeners Pasture . . . . . 312  
 Sheer Hill Field . . . . . 305  
 Sheep Cote, 305, 315; — Cote  
     Field, 299, 308; — Pightle,  
     305; — Croft, 312, 314; —  
     Pen, 302, 312; — Wash,  
     296  
 Shell Field . . . . . 308  
 Shelly Croft . . . . . 298  
 Shepherds Croft . . . . . 299  
 Shetly, 312; — Pasture, 312  
 Shifting Shots . . . . . 316  
 Shipmans . . . . . 305  
 Shipton Bridge Field . . . . . 311  
 Shire Hill Lane . . . . . 305  
 Shoe Pasture . . . . . 308

- Short Acre, 302; — Croft, 298,  
314
- Shortland Field, 312; — Mead,  
318
- Shortlands .. .. . 305, 315
- Shot, The, 318; —, Great Back,  
302; —, Short, 315; —,  
7-acre, 317; —, 13-acre,  
307
- Shots, Long .. .. . 296
- Shoulder of Mutton Field 298, 318
- Shower Shot .. .. . 296
- Shrumps .. .. . 316
- Sibleys .. .. . 314, 318
- Side Hill, 307; — Hill Field,  
306, 316
- Siggers .. .. . 308
- Simkins .. .. . 305
- Simsale .. .. . 315
- Sir Williams Plantation .. 305
- Skains, 315; — Croft, 315
- Skangles Mead .. .. . 315
- Skeets Croft .. .. . 308
- Skinnners, 296; — Field, 296
- Skipps .. .. . 317
- Skuts Grove .. .. . 311
- Slade Piece, 305; — Mead, 299
- Slamsted Common .. .. . 314
- Slate Mead .. .. . 318
- Slaughters Hain, 315; — Huim,  
315
- Sledge Mead .. .. . 299
- Slipe, 296, 305, 306, 307, 315,  
316, 317; —, The, 293, 296,  
299, 302, 305, 312, 315;  
— Field, 308; — Wood,  
308
- Sloe Field, 308; — Mead, 298
- Slough Croft, 311; — Field,  
296, 315
- Slow (or Stow), The .. . 312
- Slugs Corner, 303; — Field and  
Ley, 319; — Grove, 303;  
— Spring Wood, 303
- Smallerdine, 305; — Plantation,  
305
- Smayley Wood .. .. . 317
- Smayleys Mead .. .. . 317
- Smithers .. .. . 296, 305
- Smith Field Grove, Lower, 312
- Smiths Croft, 299; — Field,  
296; — Mead, 196
- Smock Field .. .. . 312
- Snails Mead .. .. . 305
- Snouts .. .. . 296
- Snow Croft .. .. . 296
- Soapers .. .. . 305
- Sour Close, 307; — Land  
Meadow, 311; — Leys,  
296, 312, 318; — Park,  
305
- South Field 306, 314, 318, 319
- Southards .. .. . 312
- Southern Common, 314; — Hill  
Common, 319
- Sow Field, 311; — Mead, —
- Square Mead, 298; — Meadow,  
312
- Spades Croft .. .. . 318
- Sparch Croft .. .. . 316
- Sparks, Middle .. .. . 306
- Sparrows End Meadow<sup>1</sup> 302
- Spars Close .. .. . 315
- Spear Croft .. .. . 316
- Spinney, 296, 315; — Mead,  
296
- Spittlemore, 302; — Common,  
302
- Sprats Croft .. .. . 296
- Spring, The .. .. . 203

<sup>1</sup> This name occurs in an early undated charter in a Cartulary of Tiltey Abbey, preserved at Easton Lodge.

- Springfield .. .. 308, 311  
 Spring Wood, .. .. 305  
 Springwell Field, 305; —  
 Pasture, 311; — Piece,  
 311  
 Sprusens Field .. .. 299  
 Sprusing Shot .. .. 311  
 Spurgate Brooms .. .. 293  
 Spurley .. .. 299  
 Staines Pates, .. .. 299  
 Stanbrook .. .. 296  
 Standings Common .. 302  
 Stangates .. .. 303  
 Stanleys Field .. .. 305  
 Stansted Mead .. .. 293  
 Staple Hills, Upper and Lower,  
 311  
 Starrs Close .. .. 313  
 Star Croft .. .. 317  
 Stars Field .. .. 296  
 Starling Green, 8-acre, .. 315  
 Steers .. .. 308  
 Stephens Brook .. .. 315  
 Stiles Mead .. .. 308  
 Stitch Field .. .. 299  
 Stockbridges .. .. 306  
 Stocking, 296; —, Great, 314;  
 — Croft, 318, 319; — Field,  
 305; — Wood, 312; —  
 Grove, 305  
 Stockings, 312, 316; —, Great  
 and Little, 305, 314, 315;  
 —, Common, 314; — Bor-  
 ders, 306; — Round Wood,  
 306  
 Stocks Field .. .. 308  
 Stockwell .. .. 311  
 Stokes Field .. .. 308  
 Stone Croft, 311, 317; — Field,  
 318; — Field Common,  
 293  
 Stonebridge Field .. .. 305  
 Stonelands .. .. 312  
 Stony Close, 319; — Field, 298,  
 315; — Field Common,  
 306; — Lands, 312; —  
 Lands, Great and Little,  
 296; — Shot, 308  
 Stow (or Slow), The, .. 312  
 Strawgate Ley .. .. 312  
 Street Field, 306; — Field  
 Common, 315; — Mead,  
 306  
 Streethall Mead, .. .. 305  
 Strickups .. .. 308  
 Stubbings, 315; — Close, 317  
 Stump Meadow, 314; — Stittles,  
 306  
 Suddens Common .. .. 302  
 Suits .. .. 305  
 Sumpters .. .. 315  
 Suning Meads, Upper and  
 Lower, 312  
 Surrup Pasture .. .. 312  
 Sutley .. .. —  
 Swains Croft .. .. 298  
 Swallow Grove, 305; —, Upper  
 and Lower, 305; — Bottom,  
 307  
 Swan Close, .. .. 313  
 Swans Nest .. .. 305  
 Sweeps .. .. 298  
 Sweet Ley, 315; — Leys Field,  
 305  
 Sweetens Field .. .. 308  
 Swingstead .. .. 314  
 Sycamore Field .. .. 299  
 Take Root Field .. .. 304  
 Tans Field .. .. 293  
 Tare Close, 315; — Croft, 298,  
 306, 311, 314, 316; — Pen,  
 307; — Pen Shot, 307; —  
 Shot, 318  
 Tarney Hooks .. .. 310  
 Taylors Croft, 312; — Field, 312

- Thakes Field .. .. . 306  
 Thaxted Field .. .. . 296  
 Thicket Pits .. .. . 312  
 Thimbrells, Great & Little, 296  
 Thistle Croft, 318; — Field,  
 305, 311  
 Thistly Brooms, 293; — Field,  
 296, 304, 306, 312  
 Three-corner Field, 296, 305,  
 308, 312; — Pasture,  
 306  
 Three Corners, 296, 302, 306,  
 311, 312  
 Three-cornered Mead 293, 306  
 Three Croft, Great and Little,  
 299; — Meads, 299; —  
 Rood Field, 302  
 Thrift, The, 308; — Croft, 316;  
 —, Little, 308, 316  
 Thrifts, Upper .. .. . 312  
 Thrimball Meadow .. 296  
 Thurgoods Orchard .. .. 316  
 Thorley Dale .. .. . 316  
 Thorn Croft .. .. . 305, 318  
 Thorns Field .. .. . 319  
 Thousands, Little (5.1.23) 293  
 Thremley, 316; — Corner, 316  
 Tilbury .. .. . 308  
 Tile Kiln Ley .. .. . 319  
 Tinkers Close .. .. . 313  
 Tiptofts Garden .. .. . 312  
 Tobacco Shot, Great and Little,  
 310  
 Tom Baynes Pasture, 312; —  
 Kings Field, 299  
 Top Field .. .. . 314  
 Tot Grove Wood .. .. . 293  
 Tottle Field .. .. . 293  
 Tower Croft .. .. . 316  
 Towers Want .. .. . 299  
 Town Close, 317; — Croft, 315;  
 — Field, 318  
 Towns End Field .. .. . 305  
 Toysters .. .. . 312  
 Trammels .. .. . 304  
 Traps Ley .. .. . 296  
 Tree Pasture .. .. . 314  
 Trenches.. .. . 311  
 Trifts .. .. . 312  
 Triggs Field, 316; — Barn  
 Pightle, 314  
 Trimley, 315; — Mead, 315  
 Trinity Mead.. .. . 305  
 Trinkles Mead .. .. . 317  
 Trotts, 318, 319; — Close, 311;  
 — Field, 306  
 Trumpets Field .. .. . 298  
 Tummage .. .. . 306  
 Tunnels .. .. . 308  
 Turners, 314; — Close, 315;  
 — Field, 299; — Ley, 312;  
 — Pasture, 299; — Spring,  
 306  
 Turngoods .. .. . 312  
 Turnhills.. .. . 308  
 Turning Field, Little .. 312  
 Turnip Ground .. .. . 314  
 Turtles, Upper and Lower 305  
 Tylers, 319; — Shot, 318  
 Ugley Hole Field, 299; —  
 Holes, 299  
 Ungers .. .. . 306  
 Valley, The, 313; — Mead,  
 302, 311  
 Veyseys Field .. .. . 311  
 Vicarage Mead .. .. . 308  
 Vineyard .. .. . 308  
 Vineyards (ar. ga.) .. 305  
 Wades, 317; — Garden, 305;  
 — Mead, 319; — Mead,  
 West, 318  
 Wakelands .. .. . 306  
 Walden Ley .. .. . 312

- Walnut-tree Orchard, 318; —  
Pasture, 293, 304; — Piece,  
312; — Pightle, 304
- Wan Wrights . . . . 296
- Wansbury . . . . 318
- Wards Croft, 305; — Field,  
319
- Warleys, Great and Little, 312
- Warner Stocks . . . . 298
- Warners Field . . . . 305
- Warren, The, 313, 316; —,  
Ploughed, 296; — Field,  
308; — Shot, 318
- Warwicks Field . . . . 293
- Warwick Ley . . . . 316
- Wash Mead . . . . 303
- Wasptails . . . . 308
- Watch Croft . . . . 312
- Water Meadow, 305; — Ships,  
296; — Lane Field, 302
- Watsons Close, 305; — Croft,  
318; — Pasture, 296
- Waxed Common, 314; — Mead,  
314
- Wayletts Croft . . . . 315
- Wedlock Field . . . . 315
- Weedy Field . . . . 306
- Well Field, 306, 312, 315; —  
Field Bottom, 319; —  
Green Piece, 305; — Mead,  
312
- Wenden Ley . . . . 296
- West Croft, Great, 313; —  
Field, 308, 319; — Mead,  
310
- Westley, Great and Little, 304;  
— Field, 315; — Wood,  
305
- Whale Field, 296; — Meadow,  
296
- Wheat Croft Allotment, Great,  
318; — Field, 296; — Barn  
Close, 305
- Wheedons Field . . . . 315
- Wheelers Acre, 293; — Croft, 316
- Whelpstones . . . . 302
- Whitebreads, Upper and Lower,  
305
- White Croft, 308; — Lands,  
305; — Leys, 318; — Post,  
305; — Shot, 308; — Ash  
Mead, 306; — Ditch Field,<sup>1</sup>  
302; — Gate Field, 306; —  
Hill Wood, 305; — Street  
Field, 305; — Street Shot,  
305
- Whites, 316; — Brooms, 293;  
— Pasture, 306
- Whittle . . . . 296
- Whole Furrow Field . . 302
- Wickensale Common . . 315
- Widgeons . . . . 308
- Widows Field . . . . 298
- Wild Grove . . . . 318
- Wilderness Field, 306; — Wood,  
296, 306
- Wilkinsons . . . . 312
- Will Field, 316; — Reads Field,  
304
- Willmans Field . . . . 299
- Willow Croft . . . . 302
- Wills Close, 296; — Meadow,  
296
- Willshotts . . . . 296
- Willows Close . . . . 319
- Wimbish Bakers . . . . 312
- Winding Field, 306; — Jack  
Danceys, 315
- Windmill Field, 308; — Hill  
Close, 305

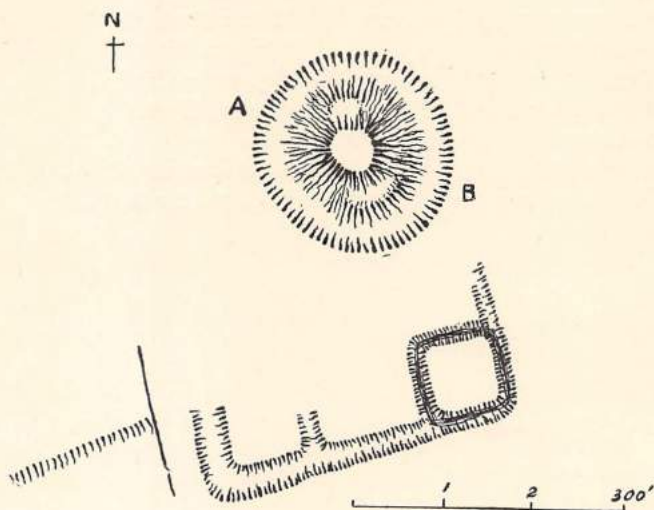
<sup>1</sup> 'Whithdyck' occurs in an Extent of Newport manor made in A.D. 1299, and included in the Cartulary of Tiltey already cited.

Windmore Croft .. .. 302	Woolerton Hill .. .. 317
Wingsby, Great and Little, 314	Wooley Ley .. .. 304
Winters Croft .. .. 318	Woolmans Ley, 306; - Spring, 306
Wisterley Grove .. .. —	Woolmas Ley .. .. 293
Witch Croft, 299, 315; — Croft, Lower and Little, 306; — Mead, 318	Wools Croft .. . 296
Wood Bridges, Great, 298; — Croft, 318; — Field, 296, 306, 310, 315; — Ley, 315; — Reedings, 298	Workhouse Field, 296, 298, 312
Woodleys .. .. 296, 305, 315	Wren Park, 310, 315; — Park Shot, 311
Woodlocks Wood .. .. 305	Wrens Park .. .. 296, 305
Woods Grove .. .. 306	Wrights Field .. .. 305
Woodstock Field .. 315, 318	Wycombe Croft.. .. 316
Wool Mead Grove .. 305	Wymar Croft.. .. 302
	Yew Tree Field.. .. 296
	Youngest Spates .. .. 299

---

# GREAT EASTON MOUNT.

BY I. CHALKLEY GOULD.



*Great Easton Essex*

A line drawn from A to B shows the moat of about eight feet depth from natural level, the mound of about 20 feet altitude above the bottom of the moat, then the moat again. The truncated top of the mound is 26 feet across but as it was probably higher originally, the diameter was then less. The moat has been rendered less in depth by centuries of gardening, &c., it was formerly, no doubt, supplied with water. There are breaks in the circle of the mound as shown on plan, that on the north caused by the abortive attempt at discoveries, on the south by what was probably the entrance to the fort from a drawbridge approached by way of an outer court.

DOMESDAY references to the Eastons are scanty and no mention of the mound is to be traced in that great survey.

Salmon in his *History of Essex* (1740) states that Great and Little Easton were one parish in Saxon times though in different manors, and that the distinction of this parish as *Easton ad Montem* "is come up since the conquest." On page 202 he says that the distinctive appellation is derived from the hill on which the church stands.

Morant (*Essex*, Vol. 2, p. 433) suggests the alternative derivation of the Norman place-name *Ad Montem* from this artificial hill or mound.

Other Essex historians have copied these authorities (as usual) but Wright in his history makes further confusion through ignorance of the locality, by erroneously stating that the church itself stands on a small mount similar to this.

It appears hardly to be likely that the specific appellation—*Ad Montem*—was derived from a natural hill as suggested by Salmon, and if we accept the alternative—that the name is due to this artificial mound—we have evidence of the high antiquity of the latter.<sup>1</sup>

Manorial history, so far as I know, fails to throw any light on the story of the mound. For what purpose it was thrown up must remain a mystery, at all events until further examination can be made with the aid of pick and shovel.

Some 30 or 40 years ago excavations were made but (though some have said relics were found which came into possession of the late Lord Maynard) I am informed that nothing whatever was discovered. In fact the explorers did more harm than good for they made a cave on the side, into which the top of the mound tumbled, forming the circular depression which is visible on the summit.

The Rev. H. B. Capel, Rector of Great Easton, informs me that in the near neighbourhood a ring, decided by the British Museum authorities to be of Saxon origin, was some years ago unearthed by a plough.

Some would doubtless assign the mound to pre-Roman days, but it may well have been a lonely, little, fortified place in a clearing of the great woodlands in Saxon times, or it may represent the defensive work of the Norman to whom this land was granted by William the Conqueror; a view which is strengthened if we can regard the scanty traces of outer work on the south as being part and parcel of the whole.

Although cultivation has destroyed much of the outer work, there is still a dry moat with a sunken entrance-way approaching towards the north as shown in the annexed plan, the moat joins the ditch of a little square enclosure, from the north-east corner of which a fosse seems to have extended towards the moat surrounding the mound.

---

<sup>1</sup> Compare Bures in Essex, called Mount Bures to distinguish it from the adjoining parish of Bures, in Suffolk; the prefix "Mount" being due to the artificial mound there.



In a field westward of that in which the dry moat remains, there is a long steep bank which may represent further earthworks on this elevated site. Some old, destroyed hedgerow may possibly account for that extension to the west, but the depth of the slope and the moat-like appearance near the abrupt south-west angle suggest a defensive origin for the work.

From this south-west angle the bank is carried north, near the village its fosse is occupied by a foot-path running to the street. It would be interesting to trace this outer bank further, for it seems not unlikely that its sweep included church, hall and hamlet, in early days. Were speculation on scanty grounds admissible one would be tempted to see in these rectangular lines of work, enclosing so large an area, the handiwork of Roman constructors but no relics have been found to support such a theory.

---

It seems worth while to note that 200 yards to the east of the works we have been considering there are remnants of an old moated settlement. Though in the main similar to many Essex "moats," the works include not only the island (whereon at one time the old rectory stood, with its drawbridge of which the piers remain) but an extension to the south and west forming a larger protected area. The north end of this area is furnished with a great dam which seems to have held up a body of water for a fish pond or for some unknown purpose.

---

## STUKELEY'S "TEMPLE" AT NAVESTOCK.

BY I. CHALKLEY GOULD.

EARLY in the eighteenth century Dr. Stukeley, the celebrated antiquary, discovered somewhere on Navestock Common an earthwork which he decided was an "Alate Temple of the Druids."<sup>1</sup>

We smile when we note how Stukeley saw Druidical remains here and there, stone circles where no one can detect a circle and serpentine ways where we see only a post or two, but all honour to the old antiquary—we forgive his fancies when we remember that he was the first to direct attention to and publish illustrations of the earthworks of England, such as those he included in his *Itinerarium Curiosum*.

Extracts from Stukeley's diary, published in the *Essex Naturalist*, vol. viii., pp. 221, 222, show that he was at his Alate Temple at least four times (from 1725 to 1761).

The entry of Aug. 5th, 1761, says "Tis much overgrown with fern, and but lately, so that 'tis difficult fully to discern it. They have dug gravel there lately."

Fortunately Stukeley not only specifically described the position of the earthwork, but also made a sketch of its form, and we may recognize, in the main, the lines of a mound-and-court fort such as we have some splendid examples of in Essex, though here the mound, by Stukeley's time, had lost some of its altitude or he could not have found it "difficult fully to discern."

The late Rev. S. Coode Hore and Professor Meldola determined to discover the site of Stukeley's Alate Temple and after a prolonged search they arrived at the conclusion that this excavation is part of the work. Hence the visit of the Essex Field Club in 1894 and ours to-day.<sup>2</sup>

Professor Meldola, F.R.S., is now President of the Essex Field Club, and I hoped he would be with us but he is unable to come and writes to me:—

"Dr. Stukeley's theories about 'alate temples' were in my belief fanciful, but his facts are generally accurate. If he has ever described an ancient earthwork in any district you may feel confident that he saw something of the nature of an

<sup>1</sup> Though now enclosed and cultivated this was open common-land till its enclosure Act of 1768.

<sup>2</sup> Read at a meeting of this Society held on the 5th October, 1901.

earthwork there. He has left a very specific description of the ancient remains on 'Navestock Common' with sketches. From his description, combined with a study of maps and records and a very prolonged series of rambles over the district, the late Rev. Coode Hore and I were enabled to re-discover the site . . . . The Common itself has been enclosed and cultivated and the remains of a fosse by the present road-side are all that we have left to indicate the former existence of the remains . . . .

The situation corresponds in every particular with that described by Stukeley. The windmill to which he refers is (or was) in existence and serves as an excellent point of orientation. Also the boundary of the hundred corresponds with his description of the position. The mound or elevated part of the earthwork must have been in the middle of the present field or thereabouts . . . .

The "alate" form given by Stukeley in his sketches is probably exaggerated in order to fit in with his prevailing notion, but I have seen several earthworks on the coast of France between Boulogne and Cape Gris-nez which are *approximately* of the form described."

This solitary remnant of artificial work fails to convey any definite impression, but there is nothing incompatible with the idea that it may be part of the work to which Stukeley referred.

---

## ARCHÆOLOGICAL NOTES.

**A Charter of Alice of Essex.**—In a paper of mine entitled ‘Who was Alice of Essex?’ I showed that this great lady was a sister of Aubrey de Vere and wife, firstly, of Robert of Essex, the lord of Rayleigh, and secondly, of Roger Fitz Richard, founder of the house of Clavering.<sup>1</sup> I have now found a charter of hers, hitherto, it seems, unknown, in the great cartulary of the Order of the Hospital, which I have spoken of as “quite a treasure-house of Essex genealogy and topography.”<sup>2</sup>

In this charter she grants “to God and St. Mary and St. John the Baptist and the blessed poor of the holy Hospital of Jerusalem” certain land in her manor of Ugley. The Latin text is as follows:—

Ego Adeliz de Essex concessi Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Johanni Baptiste et beatis pauperibus sancti Hospitalis Jerusalem quandam terram in manerio meo de Vggeleia que vocatur Stanheye scilicet meum sartum quantum habui in illa die ibi quum Turgis amisit castellum de Walendena ad meam mensem pro salute anime mee pro anima Domini mei Roberti de Essex et pro anima patris (sic<sup>3</sup>) de Ver et fratris mei Roberti de Ver et pro salute omnium amicorum meorum tam vivorum quam defunctorum quatenus participes nos faciat Deus bonorum . . . in sancta domo hospitalis Jerusalem

Testibus: Matre mea domina Aliz de Ver; Albino Sacerdote; Alexandro filio Gaufridi; Reginaldo filio Petri.<sup>4</sup>

It will be observed that the first witness is her mother, “the lady Aliz de Ver,” whose own charter to Earls Colne Priory has her daughter “Alice of Essex” among the witnesses,<sup>5</sup> together with “Albinus (*i.e.* Aubin) the chaplain,” who witnesses the charter printed above as “Albinus the priest.” It will further be observed that Alice of Essex refers to her husband (*domini*) Robert of Essex in accordance with the pedigree established in my previous paper.

The land granted was called ‘Stanheye,’ and was a forest clearing (*sartum*). I have explained in my *Geoffrey de Mandeville* (p. 376) that the date at which such a clearing had been in existence was carefully specified as of importance. In this case the clearing is defined as being of the extent which she held “on that day when Turgis lost the castle of (Saffron) Walden.” This, at first sight, mysterious phrase refers to a stirring event in the local history. When Geoffrey

<sup>1</sup> *Transactions*, N.S., Vol. III., p. 243-251.

<sup>2</sup> p. 183 above.

<sup>3</sup> The words “mei Alberici” seem to have been omitted by the cartulary scribe.

Cott. MS., Nero. E. VI., fo. 341d.

<sup>5</sup> N.S., Vol. III., p. 251.

de Mandeville was forced, by the threat of being sent to the gallows to surrender to Stephen his castle of 'Waledene,' the king entrusted its charge, with that of the surrounding district, to Turgis d' Avranches,<sup>1</sup> an officer whom he trusted and had raised from the ranks. The upstart's head was soon turned, and he "inhibited" the king from paying his "wonted visits" to the castle. But, one day, as he went forth to hunt, the king followed by a strong troop had the good fortune to come upon him, with his hounds in full cry and his horn sounding. Stephen's men dashed after him, seized him, and placed him in fetters. The usual threat of the gallows produced its usual effect, and Turgis, to save his life, surrendered Walden castle.<sup>2</sup> Such was the great local event of the year 1145 for Ugley and all around.

The charter of Alice is further of interest for the light it throws on the descent of Ugley Hall. Belonging, at the time of Domesday, to the fief of Aubrey de Vere, it was clearly given to Alice as a marriage portion by her father, and inherited from her by her descendants, the house of Clavering, who held it, however, of De Vere, earl of Oxford.

J. H. ROUND.

**Tregoz of Tolleshunt Tregoz.**—In the course of my researches, for the 'Victoria History,' into the early descent of Essex manors, I have found only too often how very unsatisfactory is that which is found in Morant's history. But the instance I shall give below will throw a startling light on the positive assertions he sometimes made even when he had at his disposal as good materials as we have.

Of the manors entered in Domesday Book as held by Ranulf Peverel three were held of him by an under-tenant known to us only as "Humfrey." These were Blunts Hall and Tolleshunt (Darcy) in Essex, and Billingford in the heart of Norfolk, good substantial estates all of them. These manors descended together, being held of "the Honour of Peverel of London" as six knight's fees. I have shown in my "Geoffrey de Mandeville" (p. 142) that these, in 1141, were held by William de Tregoz, doubtless the William who, in 1130, was 'farming' the 'Honour of Peverel.' On the Pipe Roll of 1173 Billingford is mentioned as belonging to Geoffrey de Tregoz, and on that of 1175 the sheriff of Essex accounts for the issues of "the land of Geoffrey de Tregoz," who seems to have been then dead some four years.<sup>3</sup> The 'Rotulus de Dominabus' of 1185 tells us that his widow Amabilia, daughter of Robert de Gresley was then living, and that his son William, then 17 or 18 years old, had

<sup>1</sup> *Geoffrey de Mandeville*, p. 207.

<sup>2</sup> *Gesta Stephani*, (Rolls Series), p. 112.

<sup>3</sup> On the Pipe Roll of 1171 (p. 124) the sheriff accounts for the issues of "the land of Geoffrey de Tregoz," naming 'Belingeford,' 'Tolleshunt,' and 'Lega' (compare, for this last, the fine relating to 'Legh' in 12 Hen. III., No. 181).

married a daughter of Robert de Lucy to whom he was in ward. Billingford, although not named, was valued at £15 a year, and the local jury named in their return a son Simon (p. 30). In Essex the juries returned William as the only son, and as having four sisters. Tolleshunt they valued at £12, and 'Dunteshale' at £12..17..0 higher than the sum Geoffrey's widow was paying to the Crown for it (p. 4). Dugdale, who mixed in inextricable confusion this Essex family of Tregoz with the Tregozes of Herefordshire and of Wilts, jumped at the conclusion that 'Dunteshale' was 'Dunstaple.'<sup>1</sup> As a matter of fact it was Blunts Hall ('Blunteshale') in Witham.

Under John (1212) William de Tregoz heads the tenants of the 'Honour of Peverel of London' with his six knight's fees,<sup>2</sup> and under Henry III. Geoffrey de Tregoz is entered as holding these six fees "in Billingford in Norfolcia et Bluntesham in Essex,"<sup>3</sup> thus omitting Tolleshunt Tregoz (now Tolleshunt Darcy). And now begins a comedy of errors. The other portion of Blunts Hall—that which belonged to the Honour of Boulogne—being entered in the Red Book as 'Blonteshale,'<sup>4</sup> the official editor identifies both this and 'Bluntesham' as 'Blossom's Farm' (p. 1113), although his readers are assured that "the place-names in this Index have in fact been subjected in turn to a three-fold scrutiny" by him (p. cclxxix)! What has happened is this: Morant in the Index to his second volume, duly entered 'Blunts-hall' as on p. 108, but, by an unaccountable slip, he had also an entry "Bluntessale or Blockshams, 185, 189." On the second of these two pages we read, under Wivenhoe, "Blockshams, or Blossoms farm, formerly a wood, 33 acres, belongs to Charles Gray, Esq." There is not there a word about this small holding having ever been known as "Bluntessale"; and the two names are too different to be even suggestive of identity. So far from applying his "three-fold scrutiny" the editor of the 'Red Book' cannot as a fact, have applied any scrutiny at all; had he done so, he would have seen that his identification was impossible and would have found that Blunts Hall was a large and well known estate, the subject of two entries in Domesday and bearing a name which is still preserved in the residence of the member for the Maldon Division.

Returning now to Morant's history, we find him making the definite statement that Blunts Hall "took its name from ancient owners of it, the Blunts or Blunds, descended from Robert Blundus of Suffolk at the time of the Conquest," and yet he quotes on the same page the

<sup>1</sup> *Baronage*, I., 615.

<sup>2</sup> *Red Book of the Exchequer*, p. 591.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 740. This explains the appearance of his grant of land in Billingford in an Essex fine of 1228 (No. 159).

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 579.

Domesday entries in which its name is already found as "Blundeshala." Again, further, he asserts that "soon after" Domesday the whole of it "became united in the Blund family" (who have nothing to do with it in Domesday), and passed with Rohesia, one of their co-heirs, to Robert de Valoynes her son (II. 108). He knew that this Robert also had Tolleshunt Darcy, but, under that parish (I. 395) he insists (citing the Inq. p. m. of 10 Edw. I.) that Robert held "Blunteshalle in Witham by inheritance from Roese, his mother, daughter and co-heir of William le Blund." The Inquisition on Robert contains nothing of the kind; and indeed Morant himself had cited in the preceding paragraph record evidence that "Tolleshunt and Blunteshalle" had been held together previously, as two knight's fees by Tregoz (from whom they descended together to Valognes).

In short, the Suffolk family of Blund had never anything to do with Blunts Hall in Witham. Yet so determined was Morant to connect them, although he could not produce a scrap of evidence for the fact, that he omitted, under Blunts Hall, any mention of Tregoz. The real descent of its two portions is fortunately quite clear; the larger one, that of Ranulf Peverel, was held with Tolleshunt by the family of Tregoz of "the Honour of Peverel"; and the other, that of Eustace of Boulogne, was in the King's hands, as 'Blunteshale,' in 1171,<sup>1</sup> and was afterwards held of "the Honour of Boulogne," by a branch of the family of Merk or Mark. When we find our sober county historian romancing in this way on Blunts Hall, we may fairly say that his statements require to be received with more caution than anyone had reason to suppose.

J. H. R.

**Wethersfield, Pleshey and 'Plesingho.'**—Of the great royal manor of Wethersfield the early descent, after Domesday, has hitherto remained obscure. Morant could only say that "Henry de Cornhill an opulent citizen of London . . . was possessed of this estate; Joane, his daughter and heir, brought it in marriage, about the year 1195, to Hugh de Nevill." A charter in which I found Warine Fitz Gerold, a well-known King's chamberlain under John, alluding to his "curia de Werfeld" aroused my suspicions, and these were confirmed by the fact that in the *Red Book of the Exchequer* (p. 498) he is found holding "Werrefeld" in 1212 "de honore Curcy." The evidence is clinched by a charter of his "de Terra in Wethersfeld" in 1211.<sup>2</sup> It is clear, therefore, that the Nevills, at that time, were not in possession of the manor.

<sup>1</sup> Pipe Roll, 17 Hen. II., p. 134.

<sup>2</sup> Harl. MS., 3739, fo. 149 (No. 37).

The true origin of their title must be sought in the *Rotulus de Dominabus* (Ed. Grimaldi) of 1185. We there read that:—

“William son of William de Curci is in the King's ward, and, through him, in the ward of Henry le Poher, and is 20 years old. *Werefeld*, his land, is worth 20 pounds a year; and the said Robert has now had the wardship for 15 years (p. 39).”

This carries back the ownership of the estate to William de Curci, who died in or about 1170, leaving this infant son. Now William's daughter Alice, who became the heir of these Curcis, married, as her first husband, Henry de Cornhill, and, as her second Warine Fitz Gerold,<sup>1</sup> and thus brought them in turn the manor of Wethersfield with the rest of her inheritance. Eventually it passed to the Nevills as the heirs of Joan, her daughter by her first husband.

Turning to Pleshey, we find Morant writing that:—

“it has been pretended that the name of this place is not in Domesday Book: and that it is included under the adjoining parish of High Estre: but we meet in that record with *Plesinchou*, which we cannot so well fix to any place as to this.”

In a paper read before the Society in 1894 I contended that this was an error, and that the name of Pleshy is French and first appears in the twelfth century as ‘Plassiz,’ ‘Plaissez,’ or ‘Pleisciz,’ (i.e., *Plessis*).<sup>2</sup> The publication of our county fines, has since then, strengthened my case by showing that the two names were well recognised as distinct. Thus in 10 Ric. I. (1199) we have a fine between William de ‘Plesingho’ and Simon de ‘Plesingho’ concerning lands and messuages in ‘Plesingho,’ in which Lucy de ‘Plesingho’ and Gilbert de ‘Plesingho’ are mentioned (p. 16).<sup>3</sup> A few years later, in 5 John (1203-4) we have three fines for lands in Mashbury and Chignal, to which Gilbert de ‘Plesseto’ (or ‘Pleisseto’), who clearly took his name from Pleshey, is a party (p. 31). Again we have a fine for no less than 2½ hides of land in ‘Plesingho’ in 10 John (p. 44), while Pleshey in turn reappears in two fines of 2 Henry III. (1217-8) concerning lands in Little Waltham, to which Alfred son of Osbert de ‘Plesset[o]’ is a party (p. 49).<sup>4</sup> We meet with it again the same year in a suit concerning the moiety of the manor (“*medietatem manerii de Plesseto*”).<sup>5</sup> Yet the ‘*Plesinchou*’ which was held in Domesday by the Count of Boulogne, duly reappears as ‘*Pleissingho*’ in the survey of the Honour of Boulogne under John, when it was held by Nicholas de Anesti,<sup>6</sup> and also occurs as ‘*Plesingho*’ in a charter at the British Museum assigned to the reign of Henry III.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See my *Geoffrey de Mandeville*, p. 310.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. V. (N.S.), p. 84.

<sup>3</sup> A Eustace ‘de Plesinghou’ is named on the Pipe Roll of 1168 (p. 44).

<sup>4</sup> He is also clearly the ‘*Alured de Pleisciz*’ who occurs in a fine relating to Waltham ten years later (12 Hen. III., No. 239).

<sup>5</sup> *Bracton's Note Book*, (Ed. Maitland), II., 7.

<sup>6</sup> *Testa de Nevill*, p. 275.

<sup>7</sup> Harl. Cart., 45 D. 7.



Further light has now been thrown on the question of Pleshey and 'Plesingho' by the publication of the feudal returns for Essex.<sup>1</sup> That for the Hundred of Dunmow in 1303 shows us the earl of Hereford holding Pleshey and High Easter ("Plasseyton et Altam Estre"), while, in the midst of the Willingales, we find Emma de Arderne holding half a fee "in Plesinghoo."<sup>2</sup> Lastly, in 1305 we discover Hugh de Vere and Denise (de Montchensy) his wife paying relief for 3 fees in Ansty, Hormead, and Braughing (all in Herts), 3 other fees (also in Herts), and the third of a fee "in Plesinghorn (*rectius* Plesinghou)."<sup>3</sup> The possession of the whole of the fees can be traced back to the family of Anstey of Anstey (Herts), who held them of the Honour of Boulogne, and whose heiress had brought them in marriage to the house of Montchensy. Here we have the clue we need. For, in his account of Willingale-Spain, Morant mentions that Stephen le Scroop held therein at his death, in 1405, a tenement "called Pelhams, of the castle of Ansty"<sup>4</sup>; and that this same tenement was held by Thomas Scroop at his death in 1475 "of Cecily Duchess of York," who was then, by gift of Edward IV., I find, in possession of the Anstey fees. As "forty acres of land in Willynghall called Pelhames tenement," it was similarly held of Cecily Duchess of York by his son Thomas, Lord Scrope of Masham at his death in 1493.<sup>5</sup>

Here then at length, we are able to localise that 'Plesingho,' the identity of which had baffled me for years, although I was firmly convinced that it was not identical with Pleshey. That the Domesday name has long vanished is no more remarkable than that 'Sciddinghou' should now be absorbed in Mistley. It may possibly be thought that this identification was hardly worth the trouble it has cost. But the study of our place-names is beginning to be placed on a proper scientific basis; and in this case I was forced to defend my view, for the British Museum and the Public Record Office have recently once more treated the name of 'Plesingho' as identical with Pleshey.<sup>6</sup> This I have now finally proved to be a demonstrable error.

J. H. R.

**Tiptree Priory and the Coronation.**—The tenure of the manor of Liston by the service of making the king's wafers at the Coronation is well known, but the connection of the priory of Tiptree with the same function appears to have escaped notice hitherto. On the Patent Roll of 13 Richard II. a short entry occurs to the following effect:—Thomas, prior of Tippetrete in the county

<sup>1</sup> *Feudal Aids*, Vol. II. (Public Record Office).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 152, 153.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 439.

<sup>4</sup> (Ed. 1768, II., 480). Anstey castle was one of the moated mounds and was of course the *caput* of the Anstey holding.

<sup>5</sup> *Calendar of Inquisitions: Henry VII.*, Vol. I., p. 396.

<sup>6</sup> *Index to the charters and rolls in the British Museum* (1900) p. 591; *Feudal Aids* (1900), II., 595.

of Essex, complains that he has been expelled from the priory by John de Boys, patron of the priory, and the king grants him protection for two years "out of reverence for God and the Church and because the same prior holds of us by the service of carrying on the day of our Coronation the irons in which our wafers will be made and of assaying them before us, as we have understood." The date is 2nd September, 1389.

The insertion of the provisional clause *ut accepimus* may indicate that the service was not fully established, but its mention in an official document is presumption of its existence. I have not found the service mentioned anywhere else, nor do I see any connection between the manor of Liston and the priory or the manor of Tolleshunt Tregoz (now Tolleshunt Darcy), the lords of which were patrons of the priory.

R. F.

**South Weald.**—In the *Transactions* of our Society, Vol. V., N.S. p. 249, is printed a charter which I discovered bound up in a book in the Bodleian Library. This purported to be a grant by Henry, Rector of the church of Weald (Walda) to his lords, the Abbot and Convent of Waltham, of licence to erect a chapel within the bounds of their court at Weald and to hold services when they chose, saving in all things the indemnity of the mother-church. To this may now be added a subsequent licence of similar nature granted by another rector, named Ralph. He granted to H. [Henry] the Abbot, and the Convent, permission to erect a chantry in the chapel already erected in their court at Weald. This licence is contained in the Waltham Abbey Register known as MS. Harl. 4809, where also are a few others relating to land in South Weald. In my note of five years ago I suggested *A.D.* 1255 as a possible date for the charter; but the licence which followed it, though it bears no date, must itself, if Newcourt be right, have been prior to that year, as Abbot Henry was in power not later than *A.D.* 1245. The name of the Rector of Weald in 1221 was, according to Newcourt, Richard, and he it was who made a grant of the chapel in Brentwood, but to the Abbot and Convent of St. Osyth.

W. C. W.

**Woodham Ferrers and Archbishop Sandys** (*Trans.* Vol. vii., 408).—Through the kindness of the Rev. C. H. Plumpton I recently had an opportunity of examining the Register Book of his parish, which dates from 1558. In that year John Sandes, gentleman, was buried on February 21st. In the following year (1559) Mistress Ann Sandes, widow, was, on August 14th, married

to Laurence Manley, gentleman. In 1590, Edwyn Sandes, son of Mr. Samuel Sandes, was baptised on March 28th. On September 27th, 1606, Annis Sandes, daughter of Thomas Sandes, esquire, was buried. Cicely, widow of the late Archbishop of York, was buried on February 7th, 1610. And on June 28th, in some year prior to 1628, Marrye Sandes, daughter of Sir Edwin Sandes, was baptised on February 6th.

These few entries alone commemorate the connexion of the Sandys family with Woodham Ferrers; and the name 'Wilford' does not occur in the Registers, at any rate down to 1640.

W. C. W.

---

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, THURSDAY, 23rd MAY, 1901.

---

DEDHAM, LAWFORD, AND GREAT AND LITTLE BROMLEY.

---

Assembling at Colchester Station, members of the Society and their friends, numbering over sixty, proceeded to Dedham Church. Here Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., who acted as guide during the day, after expressing the regret which was generally felt that Mr. F. Chancellor, through illness, was unable to be present, gave a short description of the building, which he considered was erected during the reign of Henry VII. The tower is a fine specimen of flint work and the font at one time was very handsome but it suffered at the hands of the spoiler, probably Dowsing, who did much destructive work in these parts.

The Bay Factory, a short distance from the church, was next visited under the direction of Mr. Laver, who gave an interesting account of the bay trade at Dedham and in the neighbourhood.

At Lawford the Rector, the Rev. E. K. Green, unfortunately arrived too late to give the visitors a description of the church, but he has since kindly contributed some notes on Lawford Church which are printed on pages 286-291.

The Rev. H. H. Minchin, the Rector, received the party at Little Bromley church and read a short paper: this and a description of Great Bromley Church, which was afterwards visited, appear on pages 292-4.

A general meeting was held, in the open air, at Great Bromley and the following were elected members of the Society:—

BROOKS, C. N. Mistle.  
HEWITT, WM., Lower Park, Dedham.

ON THE NOMINATION OF—  
The President.  
Mr. J. D. Tremlett.

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, TUESDAY, JULY 30th, 1901.

---

DUNMOW, GREAT EASTON, TILTY, BROXTED AND CHICKNEY.

---

Dunmow Church, which is of the Perpendicular period, was first visited and carefully described by Mr. F. Chancellor. At Great Easton, after an inspection of the church, the visitors were led to the moated mound close by, and here Mr. I. C. Gould, who is well known as a leading authority on earthworks, read the paper which appears on pages 324-6. The churches of Tilty, Broxted, Chickney, and Little Easton were subsequently visited and described by the incumbents. The Society is indebted to the Rev. F. W. Galpin for arrangements in connection with this excursion and for the remarks which he made on Tilty Abbey. It is hoped that some account of Tilty Abbey and its history will shortly be contributed to the *Transactions* by Mr. Galpin.

Arriving at Dunmow, Mr. W. Hasler hospitably entertained the company to tea, and afterwards a meeting was held under the presidency of Mr. Laver, F.S.A., and the following were unanimously elected members of the Society:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF—

CLOUT, RICHARD, Brome House, West Malling, Kent.	Mr. I. C. Gould.
WORREN, HASTINGS, Priory Lodge, Little Dunmow.	Rev. W. H. Beckett.
THRING, Rev. J. C., The Park, Dunmow.	} Mr. William Hasler.
HASLER, ROBERT, Little Dunmow.	

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, SATURDAY, 5th OCTOBER, 1901.

---

BRENTWOOD, NAVESTOCK, AND SOUTH WEALD.

---

At Brentwood, Colonel Frank Landon conducted the party to the remains of the Chapel, of which the only portion left is the tower. Here, he read the following description of the building as it appeared when our late Hon. Sec., Mr. H. W. King, visited it on the 31st August, 1852.<sup>1</sup>

### BRENTWOOD CHAPEL.

(*St. Thomas of Canterbury.*)

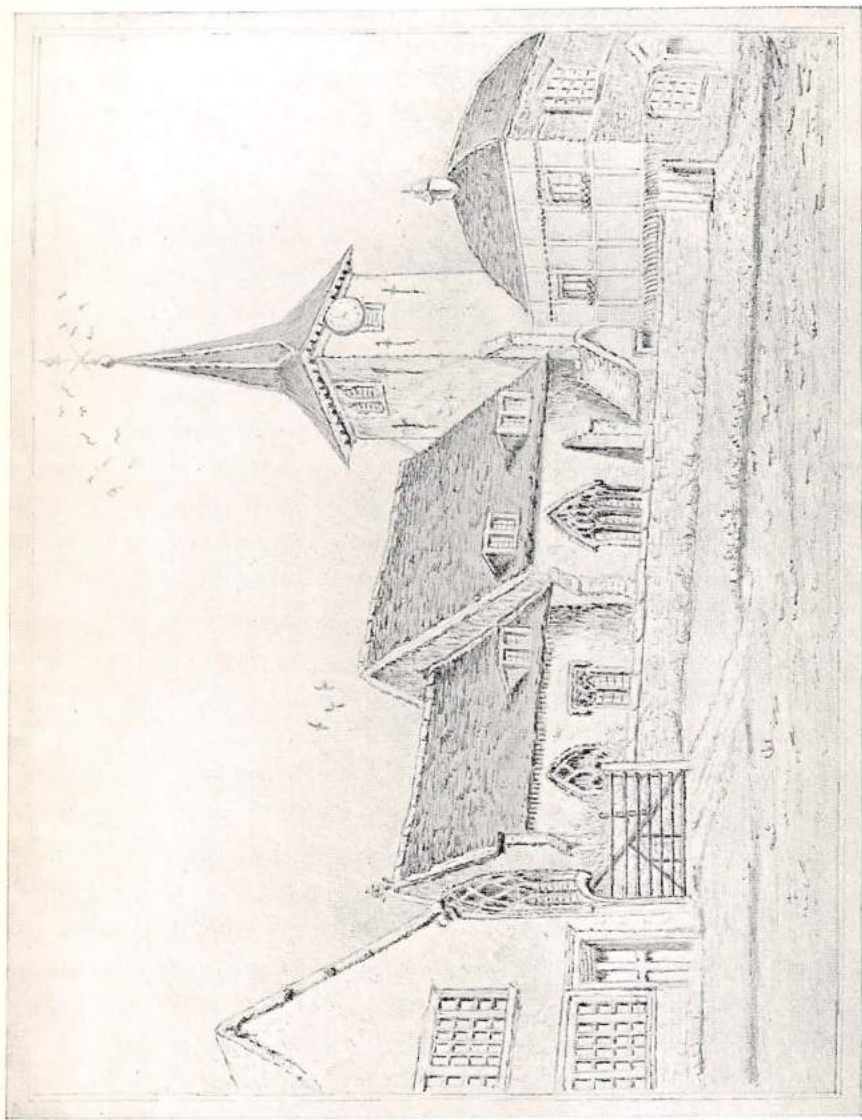
“Although Brentwood is an ancient town it is only a hamlet and chapelry of South Weald. It lies upon the great high road from London to Colchester and is distant about 17 miles from the Metropolis. The parish church of South Weald, as was usual, was built in very remote times near the hall of the chief manor, but a town soon sprang up, as at Witham and Billericay, in a more convenient location upon the great high road [two] miles distant from the church, while South Weald itself remained a scarcely noticeable village. Anciently, the Assizes were frequently held at Brentwood, and not long since the remains of the town hall and prison, now the Crown Inn, were pulled down. It is said, in a footnote in Muilman’s *Hist. Essex*, Vol. V., p. 8, that “This Inn<sup>2</sup> is very ancient. Mr. Simond’s, in his collections, saith he was informed from the master, who had writings in his custody to shew it, that it had been an Inn for 300 years, with this sign; that a family named Salmon held it 200 years; that there had been 89 owners, amongst whom were an Earl of Oxford and an Earl of Sussex.” Another very ancient house I observed, near the chapel, which had been recently much altered and renovated.

“Of the foundation of the chapel, Morant (Vol. I., p. 123) and Dr. Newcourt in his *Repert. Londin.* give a particular account. According to these it was founded in or about the year 1221 at the

---

<sup>1</sup> Colonel Landon has kindly borne the cost of the block illustrating the chapel. Ed.

<sup>2</sup> It would seem that the Inn referred to is the White Hart and not the Crown, see Mr. Miller Christy’s *Trade Signs of Essex*, p. 52. Ed.



CHAPEL OF ST. THOMAS-THE-MARTYR (à BECKET), BRENTWOOD, 1834.

request of David, abbot of St. Osyth, for the convenience of their tenants at Cost Hall, with the consent of the bishop of London, of Richard, parson of Weld, and of the abbot and convent of Waltham. The abbot and convent<sup>1</sup> were to build it in their own fee; to dedicate it in honour of St. Thomas the Martyr, and to maintain a proper priest to officiate daily in it, if they thought proper. The chaplain was to be presented by the convent of St. Osyth, and before his admission to swear that he would not knowingly injure the mother church, nor receive any of the parishioners to the divine offices, communions, confessions or purifications on Sundays or holidays except with the parson's express leave, except on the day of St. Thomas's Passion or Translation and the time of the fair, if there should be any appointed. Nor should there be any baptism or burial of the dead. If any profit should arise from the parishioners, the chaplain was immediately to give it to the parson of South Weald, and not receive anything to his prejudice privately or openly. And if there should be any fair, the parson of the mother church or a priest deputed by him may, if he please, officiate the whole time of the fair and on the feasts of St. Thomas and receive all the offerings to his own use. The chaplain at such times was to serve the mother church, but on no other occasions to be compelled to do so. The offerings made by strangers and passengers at other times of the year to be entirely for the maintenance of the chaplain who was to pay yearly two pounds of wax to the parson. The chaplain might, however, receive any gifts for the building, repair, or ornaments of the chapel, employing them strictly to that use. If he invaded the privileges of the mother church, and the convent did not upon the complaint of the parson suspend or correct him within [twenty] days, the parson should have liberty to deprive him without asking the convent's leave, saving the bishop all his right. The perquisites of this chaplain arose from travellers upon the road and such as came out of devotion to St. Thomas; whence a gate upon the way from Ongar to this parish retains the name of Pilgrims Hatch. Opposite to it, was another hatch or forest gate which is called to this day Hou-Hatch (Morant Vol. II., p. 124). In this chapel was a chantry, founded for the Soul of Isabel, Countess of Bedford. In 1388 license was granted to Edmund, Duke of York, Sir Robert de Plessington, and John Parker to give a messuage and 220 acres of land to a certain chaplain of the chantry at the Altar of St. Mary in the chapel of Brentwood to be founded by said Duke, Sir Robert, and John. A chaplain was instituted and admitted 3rd May, 1393, on the presentation of Edmund, Duke of York and others. After this, according to the

<sup>1</sup> See *ante* p. 335. Ed.

London Registry, the rectors of Shenfield and Ging-Rafe presented (Morant, *Ibid*). We have thus a very precise and authentic account of the foundation of this chapel and its chantries. In Wright's *History of Essex*, it is said that within the chapel there is a rude image of the tutelar saint carved in wood. If such an image exist, I failed to observe it, and I doubt not only the fact of its existence when that work was written or even in modern times: but that prior to the Reformation there was an image of the popular English Saint here, which rendered the chapel a famous resort of pilgrims and consequently a source of considerable revenue, need not be questioned.

"The chapel stands upon the south side of the street, and consists of a chancel, a nave with tower built within the walls at the north west corner, and a north porch. The style of its architecture accords with that of the time of Edward the first and the original plan of the structure remains complete and unaltered, although some insertions and repairs were effected during the Perpendicular period, in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. The walls are built of rubble and faced with pebbles interspersed with blocks of stone and occasionally a layer of tiles.

"Recently, owing to a large increase of population, an ugly brick chapel has been erected, and this ancient edifice converted into a parochial school, a use which, in my opinion, is but a modified species of desecration.

#### *The Chancel*

is somewhat spacious in proportion to the size of the nave, but considerably narrower, measuring 27 feet in length by 17 feet 6 inches in width. It is lighted by an east and four side windows. Two upon the north and one upon the south are Perpendicular insertions in the original Edwardian openings, each consisting of two lights with super-mullions, all trefoil-cusped and uniform in design. The westernmost window upon the north side is square-headed and of loftier proportions than the rest. It consists of two ogee lights with quatre-foil tracery in the spandrels and is of the date of the fifteenth century. The east wall of the chancel was either rebuilt or cased with red brick in the early part of the sixteenth century, ornamented externally with black bricks disposed in a lozenge or reticulated pattern. At this time, a noble east window, of unusually large proportions and built of the same material, was inserted. It comprises four lights with intersecting mullions in the head finely moulded. It has a moulded brick transom of the same section as the mullions. Both arch and label retain the ancient thirteenth century form, and the jambs are elaborately moulded.



“The roof is ceiled in waggon-headed form, but the finely moulded and overhanging wall-plates remain. There is a double *Piscina* in the south wall with plain circular basins; the arches are pointed but their mouldings are utterly defaced.

“The arch opening from the nave is of remarkably fine proportions somewhat less than half the width of the nave; it has two reveals with chamfered edges; the under soffit is a continuation of the jambs.

#### *The Nave*

has two triple-light windows of the fifteenth century, one on the north and the other on the south; their heads are filled with mullioned tracery. In the south wall is a good Perpendicular *Piscina* with cinquefoil head and scalloped basin. Here, no doubt, was the altar belonging to the chantry founded in this chapel for the soul of Isabel, Countess of Bedford, already mentioned.

“Three ancient principals of the roof remain with moulded tie-beams, kingposts, and braces. The roof is concealed by a plaster ceiling. The tie-beam next the chancel was renewed *temp.* James I. It is chamfered and stopped and has carved upon it, in ornamental letters, I. S. 1619. Upon one of the kingposts is an iron bracket, probably intended to support a banner.

“There is a west gallery of Jacobean design, probably erected about the time when the beam is dated, which in modern times has been returned along the north and south walls as far as the chancel arch. The front of the western portion is composed of three arches with pilasters, highly enriched with ornament and carved balusters. The principal entrance to this chapel was on the north from the street. The doorway is pointed with deeply undercut mouldings. The south doorway opens into the vicarage garden; the mouldings are rounded, over it is a label. There was a third entrance at the west end, built of soft and decaying stone, repaired with brick in the sixteenth century and subsequently blocked, but the ancient oak door remains on its original hinges. Over this doorway is a thirteenth century window also barbarously blocked and, to compensate the light, two dormers, have been inserted in the roof.

#### *The Tower*

is an exceedingly interesting and unusual example of constructing, being built, as already mentioned, at the north-west corner within the nave, the two internal walls being carried upon very elegant arches. The angle of the pier supporting them is relieved by a lofty octagonal column with base and capital now greatly mutilated. The newel staircase, extremely narrow, is carried up in the wall thickness as high as the first floor which is lighted by a small single-light window

in the west wall. Thence, the ascent to the belfry is by a ladder. This story has two double-light windows of the Perpendicular period, one on the east and west sides, and on the north and south single-light openings, each square-headed and cusped.

“Here were formerly two *Bells* cast in 1764 which a few years since were removed into the new church. The top of the tower is finished with an overhanging moulded cornice of modern date. From the top rises a spire of pretty good proportions, probably erected during the last century and sheathed with copper. It is furnished with a ball and staff with the cardinal points and an arrow vane.

*The Porch,*

on the north side, is of timber and does not possess a remnant of antiquity.

“There is no *Font* remaining.

*Monumental Inscriptions,*

“As this chapel did not possess the rights of sepulture prior to the Reformation, there were probably no monuments before that period. Muilman asserts that there were none in his time nor does Dr. Salmon mention any. There is, however, a small brass, now removed into the new church, in memory of John Parker who died in 1673, which these historians had overlooked. Whether any inscribed slabs remain I cannot tell as the pavement is now entirely covered with a wooden flooring.”

Mr. King gives a coloured drawing of a hatchment which was on the south wall, and he extracts from Salmon particulars of the arms in the chapel windows.

The chapel appears to have been pulled down about 1869 (see some further account of it by Mr. A. H. Brown, Vol. V. of the *Transactions*, p. 98).

Under the guidance of Colonel Landon the ancient hostelries of Brentwood were visited and at one of them—the White Hart—lunch was served. For an account of this ancient Inn, see Mr. Miller Christy's *Trade Signs of Essex*, p. 52.

During the afternoon, under the direction of Mr. I. C. Gould, the supposed site of Stukeley's “Alate Temple of the Druids,” (*ante* p. 327,) and an earthwork in South Weald Park were inspected, and it was intended to view another earthwork in Fortification Wood, Navestock, but owing to the atmospheric conditions of the day, this part of the programme was not carried out.

Mr. Gould has since reported that this earthwork contains a defended enclosure, nearly rectangular, and of about four acres in

extent. He considers that it is possibly the work referred to in a thirteenth century record as the 'Defence of Nastok.'

Mr. Gould had prepared a plan and some notes but referred those interested in the matter to the *Essex Naturalist* (Vol. viii., pp. 217-222) which contains a paper upon this earthwork.

At the camp in South Weald Mr. Gould read the following short paper:—

"The fragments we see here show that this ancient stronghold occupied an elevated though not a naturally strong position.

"It is difficult to trace the lines of the work, for excepting the bank and piece of the fosse within the confines of the park, all have been mutilated or destroyed, but it is possible to ascertain with some certainty where the rampart and fosse were carried further eastward.

"Outside the park-fence is a road which has necessarily destroyed all traces, but crossing the hedge on the east we find that part of the bank of the field follows the line of the old defence, this and other indications show that originally there was a defended enclosure of about seven acres.

"Its form suggests very late Celtic or possibly Roman work but its dilapidated condition renders it impossible to speak definitely as to its age.

"It is worth while to devote a few moments to a suggestion made by Salmon in his *History of Essex* (1740) though we may not agree therewith. He suggests that from the well-known causeway at Higham in Kent, the Romans crossed the Thames to where East Tilbury now is, perhaps having a fort on the high hilly ground at West Tilbury (where there is a scrap of rectangular work on the hill-top), that the Romans had a road thence by Horndon on the Hill (? East Horndon) to Burgstead or Billericay where they had the protection of a work known as Blunts Walls. From that point Salmon suggests that the road came by this camp of South Weald passing hence to Ongar and the Stane Street.

"A study of the road maps does not corroborate the old historian's itinerary which I give for what it is worth, though regretting that we cannot prove this earthwork to have been a link in the chain of forts by which imperial Rome held the land of Britain."

At Navestock Church, in the unavoidable absence of the Rector, the Rev. W. Claxton, the Hon. Sec. read some extracts from a paper by Mr. F. Chancellor published in the *Essex Review* in 1895.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Essex Review*, Vol. iv., 215.

The Rector most generously sent to the Hon. Sec. a number of reprints of Mr. Chancellor's paper for distribution among the members attending the excursion. This considerate action on his part was much appreciated.

At South Weald Church, the Vicar, the Rev. Canon Fraser, welcomed the Society and gave some account of the building and in particular referred to the valuable brasses which had been removed at the time of a 'restoration' but had since been re-acquired by him and restored to the church. The brasses, which are described, *ante* p. 268 *et seq.*, were conveniently displayed for examination and were descanted upon by Mr. Miller Christy. The church itself was so much restored, prior to the incumbency of the present vicar, that there is little or nothing left of interest to the archæologist.

At the end of the day's proceedings Canon Fraser most hospitably entertained the party to tea.

The following new members were elected:—

	ON THE NOMINATION OF—
CLARKE, W. R., Debden Hall, Loughton.	Mr. W. C. Waller.
CROSSMAN, DOUGLAS, Dudbrook, Navestock.	
CHESTON, HORACE, F.R.I.B.A., The Grange, Hutton, Brentwood.	} Col. F. Landon.
KENNEDY, W., Hillesdon, Brentwood.	
COVERDALE, F. J., Brentwood.	
FRANCIS, E., Rayleigh.	Mr. S. S. Baker.

---

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
Brass of Elizabeth Golding, 1591, Belchamp St. Paul ...	252
Brass of William Golding and Wife, 1595, Belchamp St. Paul	254
Brass of an Inscription to John Parker, 1673, Brentwood ...	256
Brass of a Lady, about 1520, Dengie ... ..	257
Matrix of Cross Flory, with Bannerets, about 1420, Fyfield ...	257
Brass of Two Wives, of — Paycock, 1490, Great Coggeshall...	259
Brass of Civilian and Wife, about 1520, Great Coggeshall ...	259
Brass of John and Joan Paycock, 1533, Great Coggeshall ...	261
Brass of Thomas Paycocke, 1580, Great Coggeshall ... ..	262
Brass of an Inscription to George Laurance, 1594, Great Coggeshall ... ..	263
Brass of Thomas Heron, 1517, Little Ilford ... ..	264
Matrix of John Fenne, 1486, Maldon ... ..	265
Brass of Three Civilians, about 1450, 1480 and 1606, Romford	268
Brass of Civilian and Wives, about 1450, South Weald ...	271
Brass of Sons and Daughters, about 1500, South Weald ...	272
Brass of a Salmon, 1504, South Weald ... ..	273
Brass of Five Daughters, about 1510, South Weald ... ..	274
Brass of Sir Anthony Browne and Wife, 1567, South Weald	275
Brass of an Inscription to Arthur Crafford, 1606, South Weald	277
Brass of an Inscription to Elizabeth Wyngfeild, 1616, South Weald ... ..	278
Brass of an Inscription to Sir Anthony Browne, 1623, South Weald ... ..	279
Brass of an Inscription to John Saunders, Gentleman, 1633, South Weald ... ..	280
Brass of Robert Picakis and Allen Talbott, 1634, South Weald	280
Matrix of Cross, about 1310, Tolleshunt D'arcy ... ..	281
Matrix of Marjorie de Gildesburgh (?) about 1380, Wennington	282
Brass of a Civilian, about 1445, Widdington ... ..	283
Brass of Thomas Torrell, Esq., about 1442, Willingale Doe ...	284
Great Easton Mount ... ..	324
Chapel of St. Thomas-the-Martyr (à Becket), Brentwood, 1834	338

# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

## MUSEUM, COLCHESTER CASTLE.

### OFFICERS AND COUNCIL FOR 1901.

#### President.

GEORGE ALAN LOWNDES, Esq., M.A.

#### Vice-Presidents.

The Right Hon. LORD EUSTACE CECIL.  
The Right Rev. The LORD BISHOP OF ST. ALBANS, D.D.  
The Right Hon. LORD BRAYBROOKE, M.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD RAYLEIGH, M.A., F.R.S.  
The Right Hon. LORD ROOKWOOD, M.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD HAWKESBURY, F.S.A.  
The Right Hon. LORD CLAUD HAMILTON.  
The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF COLCHESTER, D.D.

The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF BARKING, D.D., F.S.A.  
Sir M. E. GRANT-DUFF, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S.  
Sir H. SEYMOUR KING, K.C.I.E., M.P.  
JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.  
Colonel A. R. M. LOCKWOOD, M.P.  
Major F. C. RASCH, M.P.  
GEORGE COURTAULD, Esq.

#### Council.

The PRESIDENT (*ex-officio*).  
G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Major-General B. R. BRANFILL.  
FREDERIC CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.  
MILLER CHRISTY, Esq., F.L.S.  
The Rev. A. F. CURTIS, M.A.  
The Rev. H. L. ELLIOT, M.A.  
E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.  
The Rev. F. W. GALPIN, M.A., F.L.S.  
A. R. GODDARD, Esq., B.A.  
I. C. GOULD, Esq.

The Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.  
HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.  
WILLIAM MACANDREW, Esq.  
FRANCIS M. NICHOLS, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Rev. CANON NORMAN, M.A.  
The Rev. L. N. PRANCE, M.A., F.S.A.  
G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.  
DOUGLASS ROUND, Esq., M.A.  
J. HORACE ROUND, Esq., M.A.  
C. F. D. SPERLING, Esq., M.A.  
W. C. WALLER, Esq., M.A., F.S.A.

#### Treasurer.

JAMES ROUND, Esq., M.A., M.P.

#### Honorary Secretary.

G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Lawn, Coggeshall.

#### Collector.

Mrs. PARISH,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Honorary Curator.

HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Sub-Curator.

Mr. A. B. BAMFORD,  
The Museum, Colchester.

#### Local Secretaries.

Braintree—Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.  
Brentwood—Col. F. LONDON.  
Billericay—Major-Genl. B. R. BRANFILL.  
Bishops Stortford—G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Chelmsford—F. CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.

Coggeshall—G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
Colchester—H. LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.  
Loughton—I. C. GOULD, Esq.  
Maldon—E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.

*Free to Members; Price to Non-Members, 5/-.*

# TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

## Essex Archæological Society.

---

---

VOL. VIII., PART IV.

NEW SERIES.

---

---



COLCHESTER :

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY AT THE MUSEUM IN THE CASTLE.

1902.

CONTENTS OF PART IV., VOL. VIII.

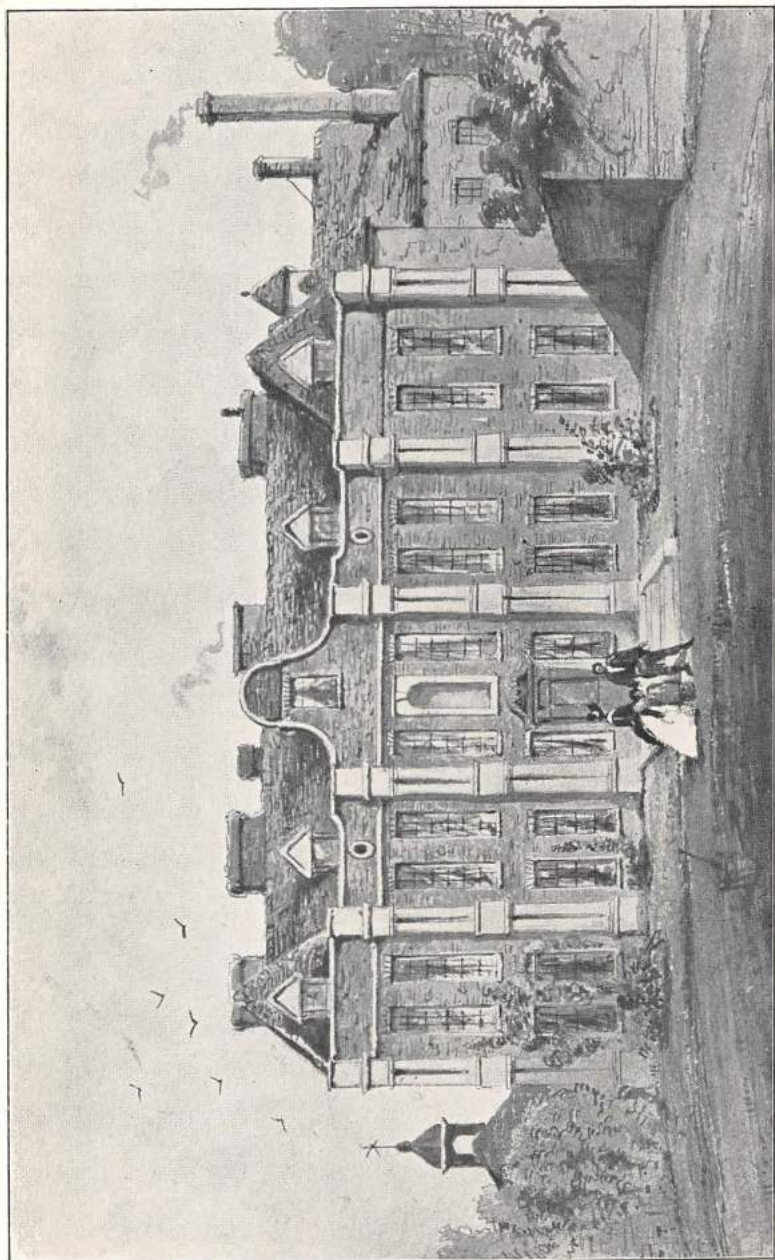
	PAGE
I. <i>An Extinct Essex Family: Wroth of Loughton Hall.</i> II. By WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. ...	345
II. <i>Records of Tiltey Abbey: An Account of some preserved at Easton Lodge.</i> I. By WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A. ... ..	353
III. <i>Some Essex Brasses Recently Refixed.</i> By MILLER CHRISTY and W. W. PORTEOUS ... ..	363
I. <i>Oliver's Thicks Rampart: An Earthwork near Colchester.</i> By HENRY LAVER, F.S.A., F.L.S. ... ..	369
<i>Archæological Notes</i> ... ..	373
<i>General Meeting at Colchester, Thursday, 17th April, 1902</i> ...	380
<i>Quarterly Meeting and Excursion, Saturday, 31st May, 1902</i> ...	382
<i>Report for 1901</i> ... ..	384
<i>Donations to the Society</i> ... ..	387
<i>Balance Sheet</i> ... ..	389

---

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
Loughton Hall (plate presented by Mr. W. C. Waller) ...	345
Oliver's Thicks Rampart (block presented by Mr. H. Laver)	369





LOUGHTON HALL.

DESTROYED BY FIRE DECEMBER II, 1836.

*From a Water-colour Drawing, in the possession of Miss I. K. Maitland.*

## AN EXTINCT COUNTY FAMILY: WROTH OF LOUGHTON HALL.

### II.

BY WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

**John Wroth I.**  
1577—1642.

Of the uncle who, on the death of James Wroth, succeeded to such of the family-estates as had not been alienated, either temporarily as dower or permanently by way of satisfying Sir Robert's creditors, we know but little.<sup>1</sup> John Wroth I., was, as 'John, son of Robert Wroth, esq.', baptized at Enfield on June 11th, 1577, and consequently, at the time of his nephew's death, about thirty-eight years old.<sup>2</sup> According to the *Visitation of Essex* he was a captain, and married Maud, daughter of Richard Llewellyn, widow of Captain Gregory Lennard, brother to Henry, Lord Dacre.<sup>3</sup> As not infrequently happens, the Visitation, dated 1612, includes an event which must have occurred some years afterwards, inasmuch as Gregory Lennard did not die until Feb. 18th, 1618.<sup>4</sup> His marriage not improbably took place in 1614, when a fine, to which Lady Hawkins and Sampson Lennard were parties, was levied.<sup>5</sup> Dame Margaret Hawkins, widow of the famous Admiral, was Maud Lennard's aunt, and lived at Chigwell, being the tenant there of Luxborough and ninety-four acres of land.<sup>6</sup> To this circumstance is probably due the entry in the Chigwell Parish Register, under date August 31st, 1615, of the baptism of 'Jhon Leonard, sonne of

<sup>1</sup> Sundry entries on the *Close Rolls* are concerned with Sir Robert Wroth's pecuniary transactions, and others reveal the gradual dispersion of the estates after his death, under the supervision of the Attorney of the Court of Wards, "who took special care to secure the best price for the benefit of James Wroth, esq., the son and heir." Downebarnes, for instance, was sold for 4,000*l.* in 1606; Northhall, for 3,300*l.* in the same year; and in 1617 Tewing fetched 4,500*l.* (*Ind. Enr.*, 14 Jac. I., 22; *ibid.*, 37; 15 Jac. I., 18.)

<sup>2</sup> *Enfield Parish Register*; and *Inq. p.m.*, James Wroth, 14 Jac. I., iii., fo. 82.

<sup>3</sup> *Harl. Soc.* xiii., 330.

<sup>4</sup> Drake: *Hundred of Blackheath*, p. xxv. He was lord of the manor of Apuldrefeld: baptized Oct. 25th, 1573; died *s. p.*

<sup>5</sup> *Fines*: Kent. 12 Jac. I.; and Drake, *ut supra*.

<sup>6</sup> A note in the *Chigwell Parish Register*, dated 1611, states that Sir Robert Wrothe, in virtue of 240 acres, and Lady Hawkins in virtue of 94, are, with others, to repair the 'rayles that fence about the church.' Her will, dated April 23rd, 1619, and proved in the Court of Hustings, in 1621, contains bequests to her niece, Mawde Leonard, and to the Lady Mary Wrothe.

Mr. Leonard<sup>1</sup>—the spelling counts for nought, and the same surname, under any form, does not seem to occur again. Geoffrey Lennard, as was said, died in February, 1618, and in or before 1621, his widow was married to John Wroth I. This appears from the recital, in a legal document, of an indenture of April 18th in that year, in which it is stipulated that, if the marriage be dissolved, John Wroth is to allow his wife, Maud, 120*l.* a year.<sup>1</sup> That a divorce did take place seems almost certain. Davy, in his *Suffolk Pedigrees*, alludes to one, though in point of detail he is manifestly inaccurate; and Mrs. Wroth, in her will, made while Mr. Wroth was yet alive, describes herself as “some tyme the wife of Mr. John Wroth esquire.”<sup>2</sup> Further confirmation I have been unable to obtain; if existent, it probably lies hidden among the dust-laden, uncalendared records of the Ecclesiastical Courts, stored up in a tower in Lambeth Palace. John Wroth I. certainly died without issue; and as Mrs. Wroth, in accordance with her wish that she might ‘lie neere her sonne’ in Chigwell church, was there buried, where no Wroth is known to have been until then interred, it seems probable that the reference is to a son born of her first marriage, whom we may identify with the John Leonard already mentioned.<sup>3</sup>

Three years after Maud Wroth’s death John Wroth I. married, as his second wife, Judith, one of the daughters of Robert Wrote, esq., of Bungay, deceased.<sup>4</sup> Whatever his relations with his first wife may have been, his second was the object of his singular solicitude. At short intervals and on three several occasions he made provision for her future well-being. First of all, on November, 17th, 1638, in consideration of a marriage thereafter by God’s permission to be solemnised between them, and for a competent jointure, he granted to her for term of life the messuage, tenement, or farmhouse, called Buckhurst, with the appurtenances.<sup>5</sup> In the second place, on February 18th, 1640, in consideration of his affection for her, he made over to trustees for her use, the capital messuage called

<sup>1</sup> *Chanc. Misc. Proc.*, xxiii., 126—Wroth v. Thorowgood. The Answer, dated June 21st, 1639, recites the Indenture of April, 1621. Thomas Trevor, a party to the Fine in 1614, re-appears as a trustee in this Indenture.

<sup>2</sup> Will dated April 7th, and proved October 13th, 1635, by Margaret Wroth, described as ‘*nepoti ex sorore*,’ (*P.C.C.*, 104, *Sadler*); and *Suffolk Pedigrees*—art. Wroth (B. M. Add. MS., 19, 156), where Davy represents John Wroth as the first, and Gregory Lennard as the second, husband.

<sup>3</sup> *Chigwell Par. Reg.*, — 1635: Mrs. Wroth buried the 14th September. A Sarah Wroth was buried there more than half a century afterwards—in 1687.

<sup>4</sup> No record of the marriage occurs in the *Registers* at Enfield, where, in the *Inq. p. m. Misc. Series*: xix., 11, it is said to have been celebrated ‘*secundum leges ecclesiasticas*.’ The lady appears in the *Visitation of Suffolk* as one of the daughters of Robert Wrote, of Grinton, whose pedigree is there given.

<sup>5</sup> *Indenture enrolled* (Close Rolls): 14 Car. I., part 3, m. 17.

Loughton Hall, with a rabbit warren and other parcels, apparently extra-manorial and unsettled.<sup>1</sup> And thirdly, on April 22nd, in the same year (1640), he conveyed to trustees for her use, and his own, Chigwell Hall and a long list of lands thereto attached.<sup>2</sup> He died intestate, on September 20th, and was buried at Enfield on October 4th, 1642, being then about sixty-five. Letters of administration were issued to his widow on September 28th in the same year; but to this grant his brother and heir, Henry Wroth, objected, though on what grounds I have not been able to discover. A decree seems to have been made ten years later, on July 7th, 1652; but the indices of the Act Books, 1642-5 and 1652-7, yield no information as to these or other proceedings.

The Inquisition taken two years after John Wroth I.'s death, at le Questhouse, in the parish of St. Clement Danes, shews that he held the manor of Durance *alias* Gartons in two moieties, a moiety of Cranes Farm, the two moieties of two mills, and Suffolkes *alias* Coltes—all in Enfield; also the manor of Loughton after the expiration of two leases, dated respectively 21 Eliz. and 6 Jac., with the reversion, on Lady Mary Wroth's death, of the manor of Luxborough and one hundred and forty acres. He also held Buckhurst, the manor of Chigwell, and other lands there and in Barking, in reversion, with a mill on Chigwell Row.<sup>3</sup>

In addition to the settlements made on his wife it appears that on May 25th, 1640, another was executed in view of the approaching marriage of his nephew, John Wroth II., the elder son of his brother Henry.<sup>4</sup> By this the manor of Loughton, two mills in Enfield, and other property, together with Luxborough and the residue of the manor of Loughton not settled, were conveyed to trustees, the bride-elect paying 2000*l.* to the settlor. Under the provisions of this settlement Courts were held in Loughton in the names of the trustees in 1647 and 1648; but from 1651 onwards they were held in the nephew's own name.<sup>5</sup>

Although John Wroth I. is described of Loughton Hall, and in the letters of administration as of the same parish, we are also told in the *Inquisition* that the Lady Mary Wroth was then living there.

<sup>1</sup> *Inq. p. m. Misc. Series*, xix., 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* On October 1st, 1634, Sir Thomas and Sir Peter Wroth had licence to alienate half the manor of Durance and other tenements in Enfield to John and Henry Wroth, taking (perhaps by way of exchange) the manor of Newton Pley *alias* Newton Wroth, in Somerset (*Pat. Roll*, 10 Car. I., part 15).

<sup>4</sup> *Inq. p. m. Misc. Series*, xix., 11.

<sup>5</sup> The names of these trustees as given on the Court-Roll are, Sir Edward Barkham, Knt. and Bart., James Clutterbucke and Simon Parrett, gentlemen.

Luxborough, on the other hand, is described as "lately while she lived in the tenure of Lady Margaret Hawkins, widow." Her death having taken place some years earlier, and no present tenant being named, one inclines to think that John Wroth lived there, or perhaps at Durance, rather than that he and the Lady Mary shared the Hall. But how the latter can have contrived to inhabit the latter is, in view of her debts and difficulties, an unsolved mystery.

Henry Wroth, senior, a man of more than fifty at [Henry Wroth.] the time of his brother's death, was found to be the heir of John Wroth I.<sup>1</sup> Davy tells us that he was one of James the First's Band of Pensioners, and that he married Jane, a daughter of Sir Thomas Harris, of Maldon, in Essex, Knight. His family appears to have been limited to two sons, John and Henry, between whom the family estates were divided, John, the elder, by his trustees, taking Loughton, Luxborough, and whatever came under the settlement already referred to; while Henry, the younger, under his father's will, succeeded to Durance, Chigwell and West Hatch, Canvey Marsh, and the residue of the paternal estate, the only other beneficiary named being 'the poor of Enfield,' who came in for 10*l.*<sup>2</sup> Henry Wroth's wife was buried at Enfield on December 19th, 1653; but his death, which occurred between 1652 and 1656, is not there recorded. With the Enfield branch of the family we have little concern; it vanished into space with the sale of the long-descended manor of Durance to Sir Thomas Stringer in 1673, after the death of Sir Henry Wroth, who had already sold Chigwell to Sir William Hicks, of Ruckholt, in 1670.<sup>3</sup>

**John Wroth II.** John Wroth II., the elder of Henry's two sons, acquired, as we have seen, an interest in Loughton, 1613 (?)—1662. Luxborough, and other property, by the gift of his uncle and namesake, John Wroth I. The settlement was made in

<sup>1</sup> Henry Wroth was baptised at Enfield on November 2nd, 1578.

<sup>2</sup> Henry Wroth's will, dated February 1st, 1652, was proved by his son, Henry, on December 8th, 1656 (*P.C.C.*, 437, *Berkley*). From the will of Ann Wroth, dated October 6th, 1675, and recited in some Chancery Proceedings in 1676 (*Whittington*—181), it would appear that the fee-simple of Luxborough was vested in her, as she purports, after appointing certain life-interests, to devise it to her 'grandson, John Wroth, and his heirs for ever,' subject to the payment of certain charges.

<sup>3</sup> Hodson and Ford's *History of Enfield* (1873), p. 89; and *Morice MSS.* (Dr. William's Library), *L. Misc.*, Vol. I. Symonds, in his *Diary* (*Camd. Soc.* 1859), under date Sep. 16th, 1645, says: "His Majesty despatched letters of business to Oxford, and sent them by Sir Henry Wrothe, whome he now knighted in the bishop's pallee in Hereford." According to Davy (*op. cit.*) it was at Oxford that Sir Henry was knighted in 1645, and he died September 22nd, 1671. His will was made in the May of that year, and proved in May, 1674 (*P.C.C.*, 3, *Bunce*). He was buried at Enfield on September 26th, 1671.

1640, on his marriage with Anne, the widow of Joshua Gallard,<sup>1</sup> to whom she had borne several children. To her second husband she bore one son, John, and a daughter, Anne, who married, first, James, third son of Sir William Cowper, or Cooper; and, secondly, George Howard, afterwards Earl of Suffolk.<sup>2</sup>

In his will, dated Sep. 24th, 1661, but not proved until Dec. 8th, 1668, John Wroth II., described as of Luxborough, named his only son, John, then under age, and his daughter, Elizabeth Sanders *alias* Wilson, whom he appointed sole executrix.<sup>3</sup> Of his wife, who long survived him, there is no mention; nor of his daughter Anne. He was a man of substance and appears (1660) in a list of eleven Essex gentlemen fit and qualified to be Knights of the Royal Oak—an Order intended by Charles II. to reward several of his followers, but laid aside lest it might create animosities.<sup>4</sup>

The settlement made on her marriage gave to the widow considerable powers of disposition, as appears by her will, dated Oct. 6th, 1675, and cited in some Chancery Proceedings of the following year.<sup>5</sup> This will, she says, was made "to the intent of preventing suits, *etc.*, and that amitie and good agreement might continue and be amongst her children and relations." She gave legacies to her son John Wroth and his wife; to her son-in-law, James Cowper and Anne, his wife; to her son, John Gallard and Judith, his wife; and to others. To the same John she gave a life-annuity of 20*l.*, and to trustees for her daughter, Anne, one of 50*l.*, issuing out of Luxboro', which she devised to her son, Joshua Gallard, for his life, with remainder to her son, John Wroth, for his life, and to her grandson, John Wroth, and his heirs male for ever, subject to the payment of the charges on it. Joshua Gallard was appointed sole executor, and the beneficiaries were to forfeit their legacies if they troubled him with suits. In spite of this, they filed a Bill of Complaint, accusing him of intending to defraud the legatees, by giving out that his mother made no such will; or, if she did, that she was not of perfect health, *etc.* To which he replied that he produced the will in their presence, and had it read. One cannot help thinking that the 'blustering' Mr. Wroth, as Lord Ailesbury calls him, had a hand in stirring up this matter, the upshot of which is still to seek.

<sup>1</sup> Joshua Gallard's will, made on March 3rd, was proved on March 7th, 1637, by his widow, whose maiden name was Huxley (*P.C.C.*, 24, *Lee*).

<sup>2</sup> Davy—*Suffolk Pedigrees*: art. Wroth; and *D. Lanc.*, Class xviii. (13). The will of Anne, Countess Dowager of Suffolk, was proved July 24th, 1710 (*P.C.C.*, 169, *Smith*).

<sup>3</sup> *P.C.C.*, 162, *Hene*.

<sup>4</sup> *English Baronetage*, Vol. IV.

<sup>5</sup> *Chanc. Proc.—Whittington*, 181.

**John Wroth III.** John Wroth III. was, at the time of his father's death, about sixteen or seventeen years old, and by his father's will made the ward of his uncle, Sir Henry, in whose name Manor-Courts were held at Loughton in 1663 and 1666. But in April, 1668, the nephew had apparently attained his majority, an occasion he celebrated by filing a Bill of Complaint, praying that his late guardian might be called upon to furnish an account of the rents received while his ward was an infant and beyond seas, whither, on his refusing the offer of a Cambridge education, he had been sent, after the prevailing fashion of the time, "for his better breeding."<sup>1</sup> In due course the accounts were furnished and in considerable detail. From them it appears that John Wroth III. went to France in 1663, returned in 1665, and married in 1666, a charge being made from the March in that year to March, 1668, 'for his Ladyes and servants' board.'<sup>2</sup> His uncle, while admitting receipts to the amount of 4,000*l.*, claimed to have made large disbursements on various accounts, and to be himself a creditor for 1,400*l.* in respect of an annuity unsatisfied since 1654. He maintained, indeed, that his late ward owed him, on balance, rather more than 700*l.* But I am unable to say how the parties settled the dispute.

John Wroth III. was thrice married. His first wife was a daughter of William, Lord Maynard, by which alliance he became the brother-in-law of his uncle and late guardian, whose wife, Anne, was another of Lord Maynard's daughters. In the allegation for a marriage-licence, dated April 13th, 1666, the bride-elect is said to be about twenty-three, but in the Little Easton Parish Register her baptism is recorded under date Feb. 6th, 1637; the bride-groom's age is correctly given as 'about twenty.'<sup>3</sup> Of this marriage there was issue a son, an only child, who eventually succeeded his father. At some time during the next five years Elizabeth Wroth died, and her husband, in 1673, married, as his second wife, a widow of three-and-twenty—Dorothy, daughter of Ralph Piggott, esq., and widow of John Moyle, of the Inner Temple.<sup>4</sup> The issue of this marriage was numerous, as the Loughton Registers, available from this date, testify. Between 1674 and 1690 four sons and six daughters were baptized; and on June 5th, 1693, Dorothy, their mother, was buried.<sup>5</sup> After remaining for thirteen years a widower, John Wroth married,

<sup>1</sup> Chanc. Proc.—*Whittington*, 110.

<sup>3</sup> Harl. Soc. xxiii.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>4</sup> Harl. Soc. xxiii.

<sup>5</sup> The children were:—Robert, bap. June 3, bur. June 5, 1674; Joshua, bap. Feb. 17, 1676; Dorothy, July 15, 1679; Elizabeth, Oct. 2, 1680; Charles, May 9, 1682; Anna Maria, Dec. 7, 1683; George, June 15, 1685; Knightly (a girl), Jan. 2, 1686-7; Mary, July 20, 1688; Jane Sybill, Nov. 10, 1690. William Wroth, possibly another son, was buried at Loughton on Nov. 19, 1681.

as his third wife, on Nov. 26th, 1706, Jane Coke, widow of William Coke, and daughter of Thomas White.<sup>1</sup> She survived her second husband, by whom she had no family, many years: both were buried at Loughton; he, on March 6th, 1708; she, on Jan. 10th, 1735.

John Wroth III. does not appear to have been a very agreeable person. He was litigious, and Roger Morice says of him that he was "a very careless and debauched gentleman, but of good parts." In 1667 he appears as Cornet of a troop of non-regimented horse, of which Prince Rupert was the Colonel and Lord Gerard, Captain; but he seems to have left the army after something more than ten years' service, the last mention of him occurring in 1678, when he was a Captain in Lord Gerard's Regiment of Horse.<sup>2</sup> His father, as we have seen, apparently favoured the cause of the Stuarts, but he himself was one of the two representatives of Essex in the Convention which met at Westminster on January 22nd, 1688-9, and, in agreement with the Lords, caused the Prince and Princess of Orange to be proclaimed King and Queen.<sup>3</sup> We learn also, from Lord Ailesbury, that it was at "Lowton, in Essex, near London, at the house of Mr. John Wroth, a blustering County Justice and a gentleman grazier," that Princess Anne of Denmark, "attended by the revengeful Bishop of London, Dr. Compton, with swords and boots," made a brief halt in her hurried flight from London.<sup>4</sup> How the Earl came by his epithet 'blustering' we know not; but another little episode in John Wroth III.'s career seems to indicate that it was not altogether inapt. At any rate it stands recorded in some Chancery Depositions that, after his marriage with Dorothy Moyle, he declared his dislike of the settlement he had made, and threatened his wife that, if she would not consent to destroy it and accept one for her life only, he would not live with her; and, further, that with her consent some of the Indentures were burnt and cancelled, others bearing the same date (19-20 May, 1673) being substituted for them. It was, however, also alleged that his wife's father had previously enrolled the originals in some Court of Record, and also preserved one for the benefit of Dorothy's issue.<sup>5</sup> A search among the Close Rolls has only revealed an acknowledgment on the part of John Wroth, of Loughton, that on May 21st, 1673, he owed to Ralph

<sup>1</sup> They were married at Loughton. After his death the widow lived at Alderton Hall. Her first husband was a Coke, of Trusley, by whom she had issue (Chan. Proc.—*Hamilton*, 645; and will of William Coke, P.C.C., 183, *Lot*).

<sup>2</sup> Dalton's *Army Lists*—1661-1714. Henry Wroth was a Cornet in the same Regiment.

<sup>3</sup> Bramston's *Autobiography*, p. 346.

<sup>4</sup> *Memoirs of Lord Ailesbury*, p. 191 (1890).

<sup>5</sup> Chan. Proc.—*Hamilton*, 645.



Piggott (his wife's father) and others, 200*l.*, payable on St. John Baptist's Day, for the due payment of which he bound all his heirs and all his property.<sup>1</sup>

These same Chancery Proceedings also illustrate Mr. Wroth's occupations; for, at the time of his death, he possessed one-hundred-and-twenty-four neat cattle, twelve horses, and over two-hundred sheep, Welsh and Weigh Hill<sup>2</sup>; wool and wheat to the value of 117*l.* 10*s.* and 170*l.* 10*s.*, respectively; and 1000 *oz.* of plate, valued at 254*l.* 5*s.* 10*d.* By his will he debarred all his children, except John, Dorothy, Mary, and Jane Sibella, whom he named, from any title or claim to his personal or real estate, giving to such as should be living at his decease, one shilling apiece. But to his credit it must be set down that he made some provision by will for two natural children, born after 1694, and his widow seems to have carried out his intention by befriending them.<sup>3</sup>

*To be continued.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Close Roll—25 Car. II., xxiv.

<sup>2</sup> Weyhill, near Andover, was at one time the scene of the greatest fair in England, for cattle, sheep, wool, and hops.

<sup>3</sup> P.C.C., 77, Barrett. "To my two naturall children, John Horne and Mary Horne, 200*l.* apiece." A Mary Horne, possibly their mother, was buried at Loughton on Jan. 3rd, 1702-3.

# RECORDS OF TILTEY ABBEY: AN ACCOUNT OF SOME PRESERVED AT EASTON LODGE.

BY WILLIAM CHAPMAN WALLER, M.A., F.S.A.

---

## PART I.

---

HENRY the VIII., that genial and pious Defender of the Faith, made two mouthfuls of the religious houses which he dissolved. First went the smaller ones, possessing a revenue of under 200*l.* a year, and to this class belonged the Cistercian Abbey of Tiltey. Of the details of its history not very much is known. Founded towards the end of Stephen's troubled reign, it had in course of time many benefactors, but their gifts, apart from those of the founder, Maurice fitz Geoffrey de Tiltey, were mainly small ones, and in 1538 the sum of all, expressed in the terms of annual revenue, fell something short of the amount which would have postponed for a few years the dissolution of the house.

The gracious permission of Lady Warwick, obtained by the intervention of our valued colleague on the Council, the Rev. F. W. Galpin, of Hatfield Broadoak, has recently procured for me a much-appreciated opportunity of examining at leisure both a Register of the Abbey, to which Morant apparently had access, and also a few other documents relating to its affairs.

The Register, which has recently been re-bound in vellum, the material of the original binding being in all cases carefully preserved, is comprised in two slender but closely-written volumes.<sup>1</sup> It owes its existence to a certain Brother John Feryng, who, as he himself tells us, began, on January 1st, 1444, to make abstracts of certain "charters touching the lands and tenements belonging to the monastery in the vill of Newport," and to him we are indebted for these interesting records of many of the Abbey's scattered possessions. In the following year,

---

<sup>1</sup> The material of the old binding consists of fragments of a Service-book, and of a Latin Accidence, both rubricated, together with some accounts of the year 1413.

if not previously, he was acting as collector of the Abbey rents, and it is not improbable that the difficulties he met with in the execution of his office led him to try to put affairs in better order. More than once he undertook a journey to investigate questions arising out of some rent at a distance, and one of the charters in his Register has a note at foot to this effect:—"This charter was transcribed from an evidence lying among those of Takeley on August 1, 24 Henry VI." [1446]. As the grant was to the church of Tiltey, it is a question how it became included in the Takeley evidences. Everything goes to shew that John Feryng was an industrious and careful man, and his skill as a scribe is unimpeachable. His journeys, of which there will be occasion to speak more at length later on, shew him to have been a busy man, and it is not surprising to find that he worked by night as well as by day. On examining his accounts we learn how he bought *2lb.* of candles "for the transcription of the evidences." At Thaxted he bought paper to the value of *2d.*; in London he was more lavish, spending *7d.* on paper,  $\frac{1}{3}d.$  on red wax, and *6d.* on materials for making ink, the quality of which is brilliantly attested by the legibility of his record after the lapse of more than four centuries.

Brother John's plan was, broadly speaking, the usual one: he collected together the deeds relating to the several vill or parishes in which the Abbey had any possessions, and, having made abstracts of them, appended thereto extracts from old rentals, or from court-rolls, calculated to be of practical use to himself and his successors in office. In some cases, accidentally or otherwise, entries belonging to the same vill are separated from each other. Roughly, however, the following is the order of the groups:—Newport, Broxted, Amberden, Debden, Berners Roding, Pledgdon, Steeple Bumpstead, Toppesfield 'in the parish of Hengham Sibill,' Lindsell, Wethersfield, Stebbing, Black Notley, Thurlow Parva, Takeley, Little and Great Bardfield, Castle Canfield, Dunmow, Easter, Berners Roding, Shellow Bowells (Schelue), Writtle, Great Baddow, Waltham, Felsted, Great Leighs, Woodham Mortimer, Woodham Ferrers, Purleigh, and Shoebury. The possessions, if not large, were at any rate widely distributed, and the Register, which deals in the main with small-rents, is very far from containing a complete list of them. Of the contents of the two volumes I have made abstracts (in English), in the hope that they may some day, by one means or another, find their way into print. For the present, therefore, it will suffice to give a brief account of what is more generally interesting in them.

Newport, at the end of the thirteenth century appears as a flourishing town, with its shops, semi-detached houses, mills, market-place, and stalls; its glovers, grocers, furriers, farriers, carpenters,

vintners, coopers, dyers, goldsmiths, and a moneyer. It had, at a date unspecified, a Vicar named Gilbert, who gave to Tiltey a messuage in Bonhunt Street, opposite the church, which messuage was, in 1276, the subject of an agreement between Abbot Nicholas and a widow named Amice Hunteman, who had a grant of it, saving to the Abbot and his successors a stall, with the right to resume it and the messuage, in the event (*quod absit*, as the chronicler adds,) of their being destroyed or burnt, and Amice making no compensation. The gifts in Newport were numerous though small and were made by townfolk, the last dated one being about the middle of the fourteenth century. In the middle of the fifteenth the Collector records three visits paid to enquire into the matter of the rents there. Several undated rentals are given, the total amounts received fluctuating between 11s. 3d. and 4s. 3d., sums which of course meant vastly more than now.

Interpolated among the charters is the copy of a survey of the manor of Newport, belonging to Edmund, Earl of Cornwall, made in 1299, and containing a mass of detail, including the names of the tenants, with a description of their tenures, holdings, and trades—in other words a directory of the town and vill.

A grant relating to Widdington brings on the stage a somewhat pathetic figure in English history. Bernard of Newport, vintner, is described as selling to his fellow-townsmen Quintin fitz Warin, a messuage in 'Widiton' lying "between the messuage of Sir Richard Youngman, chaplain, and the brook running from the vineyard of the King of Almaine to the Clerks' Spring (*de vinario domini Regis Allemanni versus fontem clericorum*), and abutting at one end on Quintin's garden, and on the other, on the street leading from Tobeleswell to Widiton." This King was Richard Plantaganet, Earl of Cornwall and Count of Poitou, King John's second son, who was elected King of the Romans and of Almaine in December, 1256, by the princes of the Empire, and crowned at Aachen on May 27th, in the following year. He was, however, soon dispossessed and forsaken. On his death in 1272 he was succeeded by his fifth but first surviving son and heir, Edmund, styled 'of Almaine,' who died without issue in the year following the making of the survey already mentioned.<sup>1</sup>

The many documents relating to Broxted include some recording an exchange effected between the monks of Tiltey and those of Ely. The latter held in Broxted a rent of 5s. 6d. payable quarterly, which had been given by Roger de Marenny to Saint Etheldreda, the Virgin, of Ely, for the repair of her shrine there; while the monks of Tiltey were seised of a rent of 10s. in the vill of Cambridge, 5s. issuing from

<sup>1</sup> G. E. C. *Complete Peerage*, s. v. Cornwall.

stalls in the market-place, and 5s. from a messuage. It is not quite clear whether a rent of 2s. 6*d.* held by Ely in Broxted was, or was not, included in the original 5s. 6*d.* The exchange, it may be assumed, was dictated by considerations of convenience, and was doubtless rendered more equal than appears by a money-payment on the part of Ely, whose Prior, Walter, sent his Sacristan, Sir Richard de Balsham, to deliver seisin of the rent. Other parties to the transaction were Walter le Feg; his overlord, Robert Cobbe, who was also a donor of land in Takeley and Little Broxted; and Robert's overlord, Roger de Mareny, already mentioned. Walter le Feg and the monks of Tilty finally exchanged assurances, he binding himself not to alienate his land to any religious house, and to pay them the homage, services, and rent of 2s. 6*d.*, with a pair of gloves, of the value of 1*d.*, hitherto paid to Ely. In return the Abbot confirmed him in the land he had bought of Robert Cobbe. On another occasion a 'John de Coquina called le Mareny' is party to the gift of an acre in Little Broxted, to be held of the Hospital in Newport, to the Warden of which a rent of 3*d.* was payable on the feast of St. Leonard, to whom the hospital was dedicated. The Hospital, on the other hand, appears in 1419 as holding of the Abbot four acres, by service of 6*d.* and suit of court, which suit a lessee for term of life requested to be allowed to make. He was admitted and made his fealty.

Broxted furnishes an instance of a benefactor, Luke de Broxhed, who assigned to the monks a rent of 6*d.*, receivable quarterly, for the provision of a wax-taper weighing one pound or more, on the feast of St. Thomas-the-Martyr at Christmastide, at the altar of the same. A careful man this, specifying the exact time at which his taper was to be lighted, and how long burnt; and also that the residue should be faithfully preserved by the ministers at the altar, for masses celebrated thereat, until it was wholly consumed. Nor did his precaution end here, for he further provided that if the monks kept the land in hand, they were to draw the wax from the common stock and so maintain the endowment for ever, in honour of the martyr and for the health of the souls of those who ordained it. A similar gift was by another donor made to God and the monks for lights at the same altar, at masses there celebrated for the good of the souls of all benefactors.

From another charter we learn that the monks, who were ever great agriculturists, held to farm of Sir Walter de Lake, by leave of Sir Richard de Clare, Earl of Gloucester and Hereford, the manor of Broxhed, the said leave being given on condition of their solemnly binding themselves not to accept a grant of the same in fee during the term of their lease. To this they agreed, granting that, in the event of their so accepting, the said Earl or his heirs, without hindrance on

their part, might take the manor into his or their own hands, so that the monks should have no right in it, and they furthermore renounced all remedy of law and every exception which might go contrary to the obligation.

The tenants of the monks in several villis seem to have made their suit at the Court of the Manor of Tiltey, and extracts from the proceedings, ranging in date from 1314 to 1446, are given. It is interesting to note that the first tenant mentioned, a freeholder paying relief, bore a name still attaching to a farm due west of Chaureth Green—Lovecotts Farm. The name of another, Roger Chigwell, recalls the fact that the monks had a farm and grange, commemorated in the existing name of Grange Court, in the parish which furnished Roger with his surname.<sup>1</sup>

The first of the deeds relating to Amberden sets out that Robert de Mortimer (*mortuo mari*) grants 2s. yearly from Geoffrey, son of Ranulph de Parco, or whoever holds the land, for the provision of a lamp to burn nightly forever before the high altar in the church of the house of Tiltey; a gift confirmed by his son, Hugo, who thereto added a power to distrain in the event of its not being duly paid. Hugo was apparently a subtenant of Roger de la Rokele and John de Pereville, which latter granted to the monks 1s. yearly to be received of the same Hugo. In this section, however, perhaps the most noteworthy document is a bond entered into by Alice, daughter of Robert Blandhar and wife of Richard Sparewe, who, under a penalty of 10*l.* payable to the monks and 5*l.* to the building of St. Paul's, promised, after her husband's death, to give them a charter of feoffment of that part of her land in Amberden which came to her from her father, and which, in the lifetime of her husband, she spontaneously gave as a fee held of them. Either the lady mistrusted herself, or the monks mistrusted her stability of purpose, for she furthermore under oath subjected herself and all her goods, moveable and immoveable, present and future, to the jurisdiction of the Deans of Thaxted, Walden, and Newport, for the time being, to make such further assurance as seemed good to the monks, when she came to the full power of her widowhood. In return for all this the consideration offered seems a little odd. For her gift of land and the due observance of her bond, Alice was to receive yearly two quarters of grain—one of wheat and one of wheat and rye mixed; and to be given a house to

<sup>1</sup> An *Inspeimus* of 1475 recites another issued by Edward II., based on a charter of Henry III., who confirmed the grant of his uncle, Richard I. The possessions of the Abbey are set out in great detail, and towards the end the donors of land in Chigwell are named among later grantors:—John Fitz Gilbert, of Chegwell, who gave all his land there; Herbert de Chegwell, chaplain; and William de Goldyngham and Alma, his wife, who confirmed the gifts. Margery, daughter of William de Chegwell, was another benefactor. (*Pat. Roll*, 15 Ed. IV., i., m., 3.)

dwelt in and a sound old robe (*unam tunicam veterem integram*) at the gate of the Abbey, so long as she lived. But even this proved too much for her, either in her own opinion, or that of her friends, for the next charter is one in which she quitclaims to the monks the house and curtilage which they were bound to find for her during her life. "And," the document continues, "if it happen that Alice, or any one in any way through her, disturb, defame, or by discussion anywhere or anyhow cause scandal to the said Abbot or Convent, on the occasion of any sale or letting made of the same house, she wills and grants that the monks cause herself and those agreeing with her, or those by whose advice the deed has been done, to be publicly excommunicated with candles lighted and bells a-ringing through the whole deanery of Elsenham." Rather more than less elaborate and awe-inspiring were the conditions imposed on another occasion, when William de Bosco, of Lindsell, in the year 1246, bound himself by oath to the payment of certain annual rents. St. Paul's Church in London again figures as a possible beneficiary, and bells and candles are again invoked, in this case through two whole deaneries, those of Sampford and Dunmow. "And for the greater safeguard of the matter he subjected himself and his heirs for ever, of his own free-will, to the jurisdiction of the Dean of Dunmow for the time being, that the said Dean, after one warning, might in the manner aforesaid, or in any other way the monks prefer, giving absolute credence to their statement, exercise his jurisdiction as well against William himself as against his heirs, both for the said payment of the said money and the penalty aforesaid, and also for the expenses the monks might have incurred in recovering them." Another clause seems to indicate that there had been trouble between the parties, for the document continues: "As touching the arrears of the costs which, through William's default, the monks have up to this provided for recovering the said money, he voluntarily bound himself, under the penalty aforesaid to pay, at the Abbot's decision, when and to what extent he pleased, renouncing on this point all cavil, contradiction, privilege of law civil or ecclesiastical, royal prohibition, and all remedy of law." It is probable that for John Feryng as well as for ourselves these long-drawn-out and elaborate provisions had all the interest of archaic curiosities, and that he transcribed them as such. They could have had no practical value more than two hundred years after they were indited; and no later documents contain clauses of the same character. Later benefactors were content to invoke the maledictions of Saints and Angels, with their own, on those that should disturb their gifts. The duties laid on the deans, *i.e.*, Rural Deans, and on their deaneries, are noteworthy.

From its free-tenants and molmen in Debden and Amberden the, Abbey received something over 30s. a year; and at Amberden and Debden Grange, courts were held, to which the Lord de Grey de Wilton, among others, owed suit, though but for half an acre, the heir to which was under age. A somewhat singular arrangement was made at Debden in 1403, when Cristina Hopper, a widow, stipulated to have for her life one room near the door of a messuage, with free entry and exit, and a parcel of curtilage annexed to the room, together with the easement and profit of a cock and three hens there to be kept; and, when the croft was sown, two bushels of the grain from it, and, when it lay fallow, two bushels of wheat. Instances of leases for term of life, and for terms of years, occur in these extracts from the court-rolls. In 1426, acquiescing in a request preferred by the lord and the steward, all the tenants allowed that thereafter the View of Frankpledge should be held on St. Anne's day (July 26th) for certain: to this agreement Sir William Okham, rector of Debden, and others, bore witness. A 'manor wood called Rownheye' still figures as Rowney Wood on the ordnance map.

The existence of an infirmary for seculars, with a chapel thereto attached, is revealed by the grant of a rent of 15*d.* issuing yearly out of land in Pledgdon (Henham). This rent Richard, son of Walter de Polhey, assigned for the provision of a lamp to burn in the chapel for ever; and another in Black Notley was, by another donor, divided between the monks' 'pittance' and the infirmary of the poor, 2*s.* to the former and 8*d.* to the latter. Under Notley the Mandevilles, Thomas, Gilbert, and John, appear as benefactors, while under Bardfield there is mention of the well-known family of de Merc, and of the Earl of Gloucester, who was wont to exact from the Abbot and Convent a threefold appearance (*trinus adventus*). The manor court at Tiltey took cognizance of affairs in Bardfield. In Dunmow the convent-holdings consisted chiefly of shops.

Brother John Feryng was, as has been said, collector of the Abbey rents in 1445, and at the end of his Register he inserts, in two lists, his accounts from Michaelmas to a date in both cases unspecified. The heading of the first defines the rents as those of assize, paid by free-tenants and molmen (*Moll'*), who are divided into groups under place-names. This account terminates abruptly and is incomplete. The second, which gives the names in no particular order and is silent as to status, is complete, concluding with a statement of the total sum received, which appears to be 6*s.* 8*d.* less than it should be—15*l.* 11*s.* 9½*d.*, as against 15*l.* 18*s.* 5½*d.*: a not infrequent result when castings had to be made in Roman numerals. In most cases a line serves to contain one entry; in others, particulars are given,



occasionally at some length, and one or two entries of payments in lieu of customary services occur. Robert Chercheman, collector of the Abbey rents in London, renders two accounts, which are embodied in John Feryng's. From the tenements in Wood Street and Milk Street<sup>1</sup> he appears to have received at Easter, 4*l.* 13*s.* 10*d.*, of which 1*l.* 9*s.* 9*d.* was spent in repairs, and 11*s.* was paid to a goldsmith for making something—possibly a mitre,—leaving a balance of 2*l.* 13*s.* 11*d.* For the Midsummer term the receipts from the same source were, it seems, 5*l.* 5*s.* 7*d.*; but as repairs cost 1*l.* 1*s.* 5*d.*, a royal pardon or licence (for what, is unspecified), 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, an error in the Easter account, 1*s.* 9*d.*, and 1*d.* was allowed to Robert for his trouble, the net receipt was reduced to 2*l.* 15*s.* 8*d.*

The receipts are followed by an account of expenditure said to be incurred between Michaelmas and All Saints in the same year; but the heading does not cover all the entries. Of this account some few items have already been cited; the remainder, save a few relating to repairs of shoes, are mainly records of journeys undertaken by Brother John and others, afoot or on horseback, sometimes with a servant and sometimes without, and chiefly in order to collect the scattered rents due to the monastery. One or two entries will serve as specimens of many:—

Expenses riding with two horses two days, to High Easter and Hatfield to receive rents there . . . . .	4 <i>d.</i>
Expenses going with one servant for two days and a night to enquire into rents at Newport and Walden . . .	5 <i>d.</i>
Expenses of Brothers John Dunmawe and John Feryng going on May 18th to attend the obsequies of John Grene, esquire, of Widiton . . . . .	1½ <i>d.</i>
Expenses of Brothers John Esterford and John Feryng, with one servant, going to hold a court at Rothyng Grange	1½ <i>d.</i>

During the undefined period covered by the account John Feryng paid three visits to London, and on two occasions furnishes details of his route and his expenditure. On Feb. 3rd he went by way of Harlow, where he spent ½*d.* in beer; he and his boy breakfasted at Roydon at a cost of 4*d.*; at Waltham Cross they supped for 5*d.* and got beds for 2*d.* On the following day they quenched their thirst at Edmonton and 'Hillidson,' and dined in London, where they spent but 1*d.*—it was a Friday. On Saturday he dined in Westminster and supped in London, where, by command of the lord Abbot, he

<sup>1</sup> John de Canebrugge and Margerie, his wife, had licence to give two messuages, *etc.*, in London, to find a monk-chaplain of Tiltye to celebrate daily in the Abbey there. (*Pat. Roll*, 6 Ed. III., 1, m. 24.)

gave to the Register Clerk of the Bishop of London a sum of *8d.*, in reward for a licence to preach and for some writing done for the said lord Abbot. On Tuesday he was dining at Waltham Cross on his way home, and there his record ends. On the second occasion, probably early in May, he was accompanied by Brother John Dunmawe and two servants. This time the route was by Nasing Gate and Waltham Abbey, where they dined, and so by Tottenham to London. They breakfasted next morning in Bridge Street, and John Feryng and the Abbot slept in Birchin Lane, where beds and beer cost them  $2\frac{1}{2}d.$  John returned home alone, accompanied by one servant, spending  $\frac{1}{2}d.$  on beer 'in the suburbs of London,' and *1d.* at Tottenham. The two travellers supped and slept at Waltham Abbey, breakfasted at Harlow, and so, by Takeley, home again. On June 20th he went, again by way of Takeley and Waltham Abbey, to attend a Convocation in London. On this occasion there is mention of wine, which was drunk after Nones, and some also, with bread, was given at the same hour to Master John Gray at a cost of  $4\frac{1}{2}d.$  Seven nights in London cost him *7d.* for beds; and to Mr. Robert Growt, Register of the Archbishop of Canterbury, he gave *8d.* for a *dimissio convocacionis*, the precise meaning of which I do not determine. His journey homeward he seems to have accomplished in the day, dining at Harlow, after short halts at Tottenham, Waltham Abbey, and Nasing Hatch. The details of his fourth journey, to receive the London rents, are not given.

In addition to these visits to the metropolis we have record of a visit to Cambridge and Ringmere<sup>1</sup> for certain affairs of the lord Abbot and the house, there to be transacted. The route followed is not at all clear, a journey to Bury being included. On the Saturday and Sunday one Henry Purve was riding from Fakenham Aspis to Gernemuta (Yarmouth) to investigate the rents there, and received *1s.*  $7\frac{1}{2}d.$  for his expenses.<sup>2</sup> Brother John breakfasted at Bury on the Monday and returned by way of Chevington, Wickham Brook, Stradishall, Hundon, where he dined, and Steple Bumpstead, where he supped. The bill for the whole journey, including Purve's account, amounted to *3s.*  $9\frac{1}{2}d.$  At another time he was absent for six days, on a visit to the Abbey of Vaudy (Lincs.), whither he went to confer with the lord Abbot; and at another, he rode with his own Abbot to a Convocation held at Huntingdon.

<sup>1</sup> Ringmere Grange, of the fee of Peter de Valoynes, is included among the earlier grants in the Patent 15 Ed. 4, already cited; and, among the later, land there of the fee of Isabel de Valoynes.

<sup>2</sup> The Abbot had a right to pasture sufficient for 300 sheep on the demesne heath at Fakenham. (*Ped. Fin. Suffolk*, 51 Hen. III., 4.) He had also, according to the Patent of Ed. IV., some customary messuages in Yarmouth.

In the final upshot Brother John says that he expended 15*l.* 16*s.* 8 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.*, a sum exceeding by 4*s.* 11*d.* what, on his own reckoning he had received; as a matter of fact it appears that he should have accounted for a balance left in hand of 1*s.* 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ *d.*

Some rough accounts, covering the period from Trinity to St. Lucy's day (Dec. 13th), 1413, are found at the end of the first volume of the Register, on paper which seems to have formed a part of the ancient binding. One relates to the kitchen, and records the purchase of four salmon for 6*s.* 6*d.*, twenty-seven eels for 5*s.*, a pike for 9*d.*, four pounds of rice for 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ *d.*, oil and an oil-jar for 9*d.*, and a broken-legged horse (*cum tibia fracta*) for 10*s.*—a singular purchase. The sum of the Collector's receipts is given as 307*l.* 12*s.* 1*d.*, but the period covered by them is not stated. It seems improbable that the revenue of the house can have fallen off by more than a third during the century following, although, if we bear in mind the Chronicle of Jocelin and the woes of Abbot Sampson, immortalized by Thomas Carlyle, such a decrease may not appear altogether inconceivable.

On another occasion it is proposed to say something concerning the detached documents to which reference was made at the beginning of this article.

---

## SOME ESSEX BRASSES RECENTLY REFIXED.

BY MILLER CHRISTY AND W. W. PORTEOUS.

THOSE interested in the study of Monumental Brasses have frequently to bewail the disappearance, through accident or theft, of interesting examples which can ill be spared. When, therefore, any examples which have become loose, and have stood thus in danger of being lost or destroyed, are rendered safe by reason of careful refixing, we may well make special note of the fact.

Such has been recently the happy fate of several loose brasses in our own county; and the circumstances in which each was refixcd seem worthy of brief record in these pages.

We may be excused, perhaps, for claiming that the various illustrated articles we have contributed, during the last few years, to the *Transactions* of this Society and the Monumental Brass Society, as well as to the pages of the *Essex Review*, the *Reliquary*, and the *Antiquary*, have done something towards arousing an interest in the monumental brasses of the county, and have thus led indirectly to the refixing of those about to be mentioned. In fact, as regards two of them, this Society has taken part directly in securing the end in view.

In the spring of 1898, Miss Florence M. Williams, then Churchwarden of Bowers Gifford, approached the Council of the Society and asked it to undertake the refixing of the brass in the church of Bowers Gifford, to the memory of Sir John Giffard, who died about the year 1348.

The brass in question is of quite exceptional interest. Not only is it of large size, but it is (with the exception of that to Sir — Fitzralph, about 1320, at Pebmarsh, and that to Sir John de Wantone, 1347, at Wimbish) the earliest military effigy in the county; while the style of armour represented is, in certain respects, quite unique.

After having been long missing from the church, the brass was discovered, many years ago, in the possession of the late Major Spitty, of Billericay; and, owing to the representations of our former Hon. Secretary, the late Mr. H. W. King, was refixcd in the church,

about the year 1855, by the Rev. W. W. Tireman, then rector of Bowers Gifford (see *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, vol. i., pp. 93-98). It appears, however, that, on this occasion, the work of fixing the brass was carried out ineffectually. The original stone into which the brass was let having disappeared, the brass was loosely rivetted on to a new slab of artificial stone. But the brass was not properly secured to the slab by means of rivets, and it was not let into a matrix, being simply fastened on to the surface. By the year 1898, therefore, the whole of it had again become loose, while the legs from the knees to the ankles had become detached from the stone altogether. The greater part of one leg had, indeed, been lost, whilst the other (which is in two portions) was loose in the church.

In view of these facts, the Council of the Society agreed to grant a sum of three guineas towards the cost of again refixing the brass, subject to the remainder of the cost being found locally and provided we were able to report that the work was about to be done satisfactorily. Mr. Christy visited the church, accordingly, and met, by appointment, the churchwarden (Miss Williams) and Sir Duncan Campbell, Bart., F.S.A. (Scot.), a parishioner, to discuss the best means of carrying out the work.

As a result, Mr. Christy recommended that the plate (which was bent and cracked by the force used originally to detach it from the stone) should be flattened properly; that the edges of the cracks and of the detached portions be brazed together; that a proper matrix be formed for its reception in a new slab; that it be securely fastened in the matrix by means of rivets; that the head, the lower part of the sword, the right leg, the left toe, and the marginal fillet (all of which are lost) should not be reproduced in brass, but that their probable outlines (other than those of the marginal fillet) should be indicated by incised lines cut in the stone; and that an inscribed plate be added, stating briefly who the effigy represents, its loss from and restoration to the church, and that it has been twice since refixed therein, on the latter occasion partly at the expense of the Essex Archæological Society. In the end, the work was carried out quite satisfactorily by Mr. Henry Young, of Herongate.

When Morant wrote, in 1768, an inscription to Isabel Clonvill and her son John (1361) remained in West Hanningfield Church. The effigy of the lady still remains, though much worn; but that of the man (apparently a priest) is lost. The inscription, too, was for long lost. Recently, however, on the coming of the present rector, the Rev. Walter Wace, the plate, broken into two pieces, was discovered at the rectory. Hearing of this, we brought before

the Council of the Society a proposal to refix the inscription in its original matrix, and the Council granted the sum of one guinea towards the cost, provided the remainder was found locally. This was accomplished through the action of the Rev. Walter Wace, and the inscription has just been refixed by Mr. Young. Owing to the excessive wear of the surface of the slab, the effigy stood up above the surface, while the matrix of the inscription had almost disappeared. The effigy had, therefore, to be detached and refixed in a deepened matrix, thus rendering it much safer and far less exposed to wear than formerly; while a new matrix had to be cut for the inscription. Thus another of our early brasses has been rendered secure. With two exceptions, it is the earliest inscription in brass now remaining in the county.

Some two years ago, we described and figured in these pages<sup>1</sup> seven effigies and three inscriptions forming portions of seven brass compositions which existed formerly, with others, in the church of Littlebury, but were torn from their matrices during a restoration in the year 1871. The ten plates in question were a civilian (about 1475), a civilian and wife (about 1510), a priest (about 1510), a civilian (about 1520), an inscription to James Edwards (1522), an effigy of and inscription to Jane Bradbury (1578), and an effigy of and inscription to Anne Byrd (1624).

For nearly twenty years after being torn from their slabs, these brasses were kept loose in an unlocked chest in the vestry and might have been carried off easily by any person desiring to do so. Later, the chest was kept locked; but we ventured to suggest in our article that, if it was not convenient to affix the brasses to new slabs, they might at least be attached securely to the walls of the church, where they would be both safe and visible to those desiring to see them.

We are very glad to be able to state that this has now been done. The brasses have been affixed to slabs of oak, and these have been fastened, in turn, upon the walls of the church. We are unable to state at whose expense the work was done, but it has been accomplished satisfactorily on the whole.

In the *Transactions* of this Society, we described recently<sup>2</sup> eight effigies, belonging apparently to five different compositions, preserved for many years at Audley End House (Lord Braybrooke), where they were affixed to panels at the side of one of the staircases.

<sup>1</sup> *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, vol. viii., pp. 40-52.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, n.s., vol. vii. (1900), pp. 240-243.

The eight effigies in question represent two ladies (about 1480), a lady (about 1495), a civilian and wife (about 1510), a civilian and wife (about 1530), and a civilian holding a book (also about 1530).

There can be little or no doubt that all these brasses came originally from the church of Saffron Walden, in which parish Audley End stands. The slab from which one of the effigies came is, in fact, still in the church; while another slab from which two other of the effigies came now forms part of the flooring of the kitchen at Reed Cottage, Audley Road, Saffron Walden.

As to the date when the effigies were removed from the church, we can give no definite information, as the many fine brasses which once existed in the church appear to have undergone systematic despoliation on several different occasions. In the Churchwarden's Accounts for 1643 appears the following entry:—

Received of John Pamment for the brasses that were taken off the gravestones by an Ordinance of Parliament, which weighed 7 score 18 lbs.—£2..19..0.

Probably the brasses removed on this occasion were chiefly inscriptions containing a request to the beholder to pray for the souls of the departed, for many effigies still remained in 1770, when the Rev. William Cole, of Cambridge, visited the church.

In 1790, the church underwent very extensive restoration, during which, says Lord Braybrooke,<sup>1</sup> the contractor tore up most of the brasses which still remained and these were dispersed or destroyed.

Even after that, however, some still remained; for according to the late Mr. Joseph Clarke, F.S.A.:—<sup>2</sup>

When the Church was repaired, about 1804, and had new pews, now happily removed, the floor was covered with rubbish . . . . . When it was cleaned off, the brass memorials were found to have left their places . . . [They went] into the hands of a brazier . . . named Peachey . . . [Later,] some of them went into the possession of Mr. Alderman Samuel Fiske, who, as a good churchman, ought to have restored them to the places from which they had been torn, but who most illegally and indefensibly presented them to the late Richard Griffin [third] Lord Braybrook, who had them affixed to the sides of one of the staircases of the Mansion at Audley End, where they now remain Richard Cornwallis Neville [fourth] Lord Braybrooke, his son and successor, the celebrated antiquary, on being asked to restore them [to the church], and whose known liberality would have inclined him to do so, found that, as they had been given to his father and were fixtures, they were heirlooms and could not be removed.

The eight effigies in question remained at Audley End until the month of May 1901, when the late (fifth) Lord Braybrooke came apparently to the conclusion that objects which can never have

<sup>1</sup> *History of Audley End and Saffron Walden* (1836).

<sup>2</sup> *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc., n.s., vol. ii. (1884), p. 295.*

belonged rightly to his family could not be in reality heirlooms. He resolved, therefore, to restore them to the church, which he did accordingly. His action in so doing is, we think, worthy of the highest commendation, and others who have in their possession monumental brasses of known origin may be recommended to follow his example.

The return of the brasses was warmly welcomed by the vicar, the Rev. John T. Steele, who decided at once to have them refixed suitably in the church. In the first place, they were let into small slabs of Bath stone, each about two inches thick, the plates being fastened into their new matrices by means of brass bolts which pass completely through both brass and stone and are secured by a nut at the back. The slabs were then let into the panels beneath certain ancient canopies on the wall of the north aisle, near the east end. Adjacent to them, in another panel of the same series, is placed a handsomely-engraved brass plate, measuring 19 by  $7\frac{1}{2}$  inches, with a border of quatrefoils, and thus inscribed:—

These eight effigies, dating from A.D. 1480 to 1530, for many years preserved at Audley End, were restored to the Church by Charles Cornwallis, 5th Baron Braybrooke, A.D. 1901.

We have had an opportunity of inspecting the manner in which the work was carried out, and have pleasure in stating that we consider it could not have been done better.

In regard to the effigy of a civilian (about 1530) holding a book, the original slab of which still remains in the church; we may say that, while the work of refixing was in progress, we ventured to urge strongly upon the vicar the desirability of refixing the effigy in its original matrix, even if the original slab had to be taken up and fastened against the wall. He replied, however, that, inasmuch as the slab no longer marked the place of sepulture of the civilian commemorated and was set so firmly in cement that it could not be raised without great danger of fracture, he preferred that the effigy in question should be affixed to the wall with the others. This was, therefore, done, but below it was fixed a brass plate, measuring 15 by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches, and thus inscribed:—

The Stone on which this Effigy, date 1530, was originally fixed now lies near the North Porch.

While the work of refixing these brasses, was executed in a most satisfactory manner, as described above, some may take exception to the removal of the only effigy still remaining in the church from its original slab and its refixing on a new slab affixed to the wall, uniformly with those above mentioned. We allude to the effigy



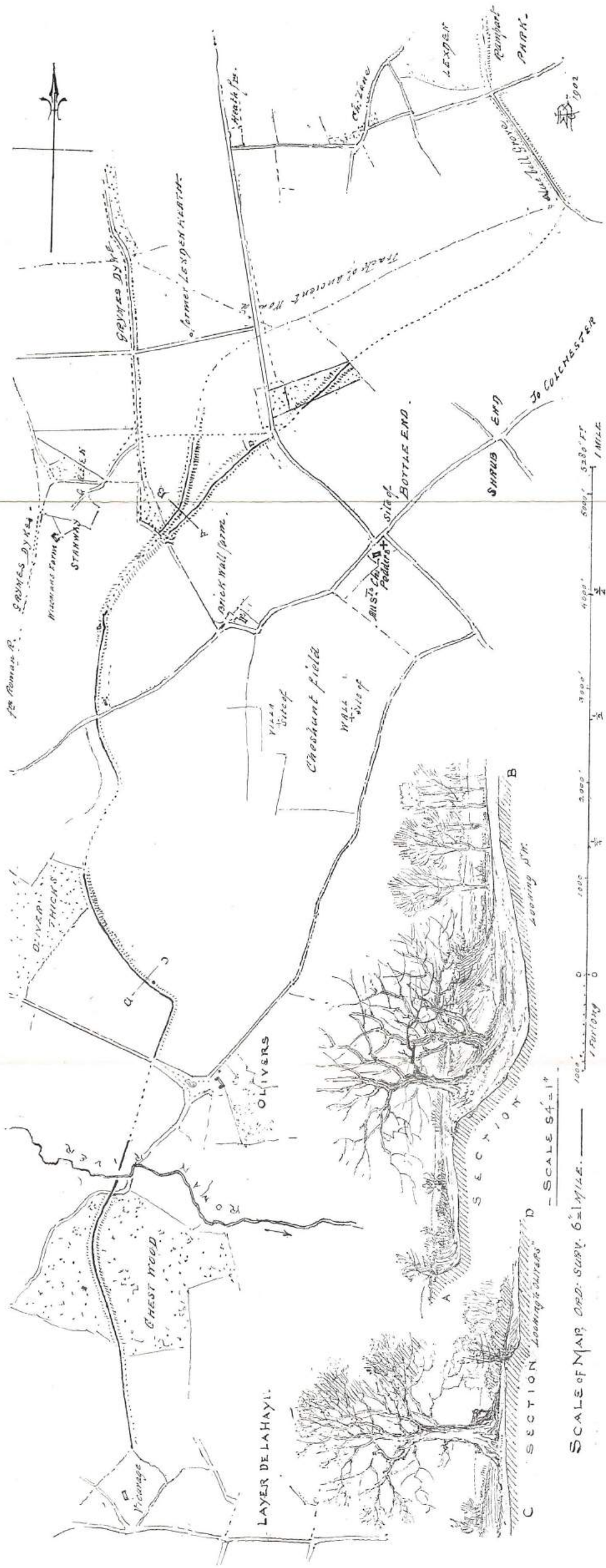
of a priest, who died about the year 1430, which we have already described and figured.<sup>1</sup> Against this removal we ventured to protest, as it appeared to us unjustifiable, in any circumstances, to reave an ancient brass from its matrix. The vicar's reply was to the effect that, as the brass was loose in its matrix, it was in danger of being stolen, and that the brass no longer marked the place of sepulture of the priest. Moreover, the brass lay (as he pointed out) near the doorway of the south chapel, where it was greatly exposed to wear and tear. We cannot deny that these considerations had considerable force, though we should have preferred the brass to remain in its original matrix. Anyway, the effigy is now safe. Above it is a reproduction in brass of the Pelican in Piety originally above the priest's head, but lost many years ago. The reproduction is from an old rubbing of the original which is preserved in the vestry. It is admirably executed and forms an interesting addition to the effigy. Below the effigy, as in the case of the effigy already mentioned, is fixed a brass plate, measuring 15 by 3½ inches, inscribed:—

This Effigy, date A.D. 1430, belonging to a stone now in the South Chancel Aisle, was taken out and the Pelican, a copy of the original, added, A.D. 1901.

In concluding, we desire to express the hope that other interesting brasses now loose may be refixed by those responsible for their safe custody as securely as those mentioned above.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Trans. Essex Archæol. Soc.*, N.S., vol. vi. (1898), p. 162.



# OLIVERS THICKS RAMPART

SCALE OF MAP. ORD. SURV. 6 1/2 MILE. ——— 1000' ———  
1 INCH = 6 1/2 MILE. ——— SCALE 64 = 1" ———

## OLIVER'S THICKS RAMPART: AN EARTHWORK NEAR COLCHESTER.

BY HENRY LAVER, F.S.A., F.L.S.

To the west and south of Colchester there are remains of extensive earthworks, of which in many cases it would be difficult to say for what purpose they were erected, as from their fragmentary condition it is sometimes anything but easy to trace their whole course or to satisfactorily restore their plan. Portions of these banks have been measured and described by Morant in his *History of Colchester*; unfortunately, however, he only interested himself with those on Lexden Heath, and left out on his plan, even here, nearly as many as he inserted.

It is almost impossible to follow his measurements as they are laid down in the work mentioned, without a plan to give some idea which earthworks the measurements refer to. In his own copy of his book, now in the Library of the Royal Institution in London, is a rough plan of those he describes; but of this one now under consideration he only gives a small portion.

We will, however, try to supplement his work, placing all the earthworks of the district and tracings of them, on the six-inch map, so that in future those interested in these matters may have less difficulty in following their courses. We have on previous occasions traced some of the most important of these dykes. One, Gryme's Dyke, presented no difficulties; the object for which it was thrown up was clear, and circumstances enabled us to agree with the generally received opinion of antiquaries, that it was the outer defence of the early British stronghold, and that therefore necessarily it was erected in early British times.

In some of the other dykes their object is not so clear. Some were no doubt roads; but the question is, if they were roads, were they not also defences? This one we are now inspecting should possibly be placed in this category.

That it was a road is very probable, for traces of it are fairly distinct from the southern end of Bluebell Grove up to the Roman River, which it crossed and continued on to Layer-de-la-Haye, as we shall hope to see presently.

In looking at the plan now produced, it will be seen that this earthwork we are now visiting, even if conveniently placed for the purposes of a road, is also equally well situated to act as a second line of defence to Gryme's Dyke, as it is placed inside it and roughly parallel to it; and traces show it to have been connected with other earthworks, also inside Gryme's Dyke, and extending from the river Colne to the Roman river. One of these through Lexden Park we traversed about two years ago.

Our earthwork, as before mentioned, after passing Roman river extends some distance to the south, where it would not appear to have been of much value as a defence, although as a road it would have been of considerable service.

Roman roads as a rule were very straight in their course, but not invariably so. On reference to the map it will be seen that this earthwork, if it were a road, did not conform to this rule. The reason may be that it follows the formation of the ground, advantage having been taken of the contour of the little valley to add probably to its usefulness as a defensive work. If these surmises are correct, the various turns we see are readily explained and accounted for.

Time will not allow us to pass over the whole course of this earthwork to-day, and I will therefore only draw attention to the traces which are apparent from its starting point at Bluebell Grove.

Some may remember that I have on a previous occasion shewn that the earliest Roman road from Colchester to London has left traces of its course from the Balkern gate to Bluebell Grove, and it is at this point, the extreme southern end of the earthwork known by this name, that we start on our journey to Oliver's Thicks. There are evident traces here and there, which on your map are shown as a dotted line, past Prettygate farmhouse to a small wood. In this little grove the bank, which runs diagonally and is marked by a black line, is perfect. On leaving the wood traces are distinctly seen across the corner of the field, and also where it crosses the road. Following these traces we come to a large hedge-bank, and find that this and its accompanying ditch are portions of the earthwork we are examining. The remains are here very distinctly seen, as far as the corner of the field just beyond the line, marking the section A to B. This hedge is the boundary of the Borough, and also of the parish of Lexden.

It will be observed that at this point another bank and ditch, in fair preservation, approach the one we have so far traced. They both pass through the plantation, and then would seem to join together in the next field, where there are very distinct traces to the

edge of the valley, where the dotted lines end in a dark line, which is used throughout to indicate a perfect or nearly perfect bank and ditch. The bank now becomes a single one, fairly perfect.

The bank from the north, which we have seen to join our earthwork, may be easily traced to the point where the old Roman London road crossed the present Straight road. There are also traces of other banks extending from it in other directions.

The object of all these entrenchments is not at all clear. Most of them are referred to in Morant's account of the earthworks on Lexden Heath, and of which, as before-mentioned, he gave measurements.

We left off at the point our bank touched the edge of the little valley. We will now follow the dark line on the map to where it is crossed by the road to Maldon. Standing here, the edge of the valley will be seen, both to the north and the south of the road, to be of an artificial formation, well adapted to form a strong second line of defence to Gryme's Dyke, a short distance to the west. Following the course of the valley, in the direction marked by a dotted line, where the traces are the least distinct at any part of the course of this earthwork, we come to Oliver's Thicks. Here we are again on sure ground, for both portions of the entrenchment are well marked and distinct, and the bank has a considerable elevation.

There is now no difficulty in following the earthwork in its somewhat curved course to the point where it makes a sharp turning to the south, a short distance beyond the section line, marked C to D. At the situation of this line will be noticed an oak tree, perhaps a century or a century and a half old.

This tree will give a very good indication of the height of the bank at the time the tree started into growth, for it will be seen that the tree is now standing elevated on its roots at least  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet higher than it did at first. The level therefore must have been reduced by this amount in the comparatively short period this tree has been in existence.

After the bank has made the sharp turn before mentioned, it continued in a straight course down to the valley, where now are considerable remains of the mound of earth. On this several trees are growing.

On the south side of the brook the bank begins almost at the edge of the water, and from this it may, I think, be fairly surmised that a bridge existed here; and this idea is supported by the statement made to me by a labourer, that remains of oak piles had been found here at the bottom of the brook when it was being cleared out. I give this tradition for what it may be worth. If there was not a

bridge here, why was the bank commenced so close to the water? and if there was a bridge, as I think we may fairly assume there was, then it follows that the earthwork was intended for a road, with the probability that advantage was taken of the position by carrying it where it would be of most service for defensive purposes as well.

From the river it is quite perfect through Chest wood, and considerable remains exist up to the Vicarage garden at Layer-de-la-Haye, after which all traces disappear. Throughout the whole course of this road, for such it appears to have been, full advantage was taken of it for defensive purposes; the ditch was excavated on the west, that is the side most distant from the town, corresponding in this respect with all the ramparts to the west of Colchester. If we consider it a road, the next question is, by whom or by what people was it thrown up?

Its curved form does not prove that it was not built by the Romans, for there are many instances of roads made by this people which followed the formation of a valley when it served their purpose to do so. Its formation does not accord with that of a British road, they therefore could not have raised it for a road, although portions of it may have been erected by them for defence.

It is impossible to assign any date for its formation further than this, that we may safely say that it has not been formed since the Roman occupation of this country ceased.

---

## ARCHÆOLOGICAL NOTES.

---

**The Descent of Thorrington.**—Among the miscellaneous 'Ancient Deeds' now being calendared at the Public Record Office there are some of early date relating to Thorrington, which establish the descent of that manor in a line very different from that which is given by Morant.

According to our county historian (I., 450):—

"About the reign of King Henry II. this estate was in the family of Anesty from which it passed to those of Montchensy, Vere, Valence, Hastings and Beauchamp."

He traced the descent of the manor to the heiress of the Anesty family, "Dionysia, that was married to William de Montchensy, baron of Swainscamp in Kent." The great house of Montchensy had large estates in Essex, but these came to that house from two distinct sources. One of these was the 'Anesty' inheritance acquired with the heiress of that family which was named from Anstey in Herts; the other, which has never, I believe, been explained, was the barony of 'Swainscamp' (that is Swanscombe in Kent, which was specially associated with the ward of Rochester castle, and which was largely composed of manors held at the time of Domesday by Ralf son of Turolde 'of Rochester' under Odo bishop of Bayeux). Now Thorrington was held by this Ralf under Odo of Bayeux in 1086, and it can be positively shown to have descended with other Essex manors which formed part of the 'Swainscamp' barony. That barony, under Henry II., was in the hands of Walter de Mayenne (*Meduana*) in right of his wife Cecily the Countess (of Hereford); and Walter mentioned in his return (1166) that it had been held by Geoffrey Talbot in 1135.<sup>1</sup> And we have but to consult the cartulary of St. John's Abbey, Colchester, to find a charter of Geoffrey Talbot dealing with Thorrington (p. 546). Gilbert, abbot of Colchester, claimed its church as subject to that of Brightlingsea, and Geoffrey Talbot, with his wife Agnes and their son Geoffrey came to an agreement, by permission of Richard bishop of London, with the abbot, according to which three shillings a year was to be paid from Thorrington church and some land in Barstable Hundred given to the Abbey as well.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Red Book of the Exchequer*, p. 195.

<sup>2</sup> The date seems to be between 1108 and 1126.

Coming now to Geoffrey's successor, 'Ancient Deed' A. 819 is a "release by Walter de Meduana and Cecilia the Countess his wife to Hamo de Scotot of £6 of silver very often, exacted from him for 'Torinton,' and confirmation to him of all 'Torinton' by service of one knight, except the fee of Amalric de Semanetonia." Accordingly, in 1166, we find 'Hamo de Scottot' holding one knight's fee of Walter 'de Meduana.'<sup>1</sup> In 1250 a descendant of this Hamo, namely "Hamo son of Richard de Esketot granted, for 100 marks, to Hugh, son of Richard de Elmstude (*Elmstead*) the manor of 'Thuriton' and the advowson of its church, paying therefor 12 sh. yearly for Hamo and his heirs to Sir Warin de Montchensy for the wardship of Rochester castle."<sup>2</sup> Lastly, Hugh de Elmstede released to Sir Warin de Montchensy, for 100 marcs, the manor and advowson of 'Turinton.'<sup>3</sup>

During the tenure of the manor by the Esketot family we find in the Colchester cartulary (pp. 425-6) a long and interesting charter of Richard de 'Asketot' (who mentions his wives Huberta and Antigone), giving the monks a site for a mill in his vill of 'Thuritune,' in his marsh next 'Suthfeld,' with right of way thereto. The position is very fully described and is clearly that of the present 'Thorrington mill.' This charter is witnessed, among others, by his sons Hamo and Richard.

It is, probably, that to about that time belongs an interesting deed preserved among the muniments of St. Paul's. This is a "license from Fulk bishop of London, by consent of his chapter, of Roger de Esketot, parson of the church of 'Thuritune,' and of Richard de Esketot the true patron of the same church, to Eadmund the son of Walter de Walpol and his heirs or assigns to have divine service celebrated in his chapel of 'Thuritune'; dated on the morrow of St. Nicholas (7th Dec.) in the first year of his pontificate."<sup>4</sup> This proves the existence of a private chapel at Thorrington in the 13th century. Of the Walpoles as of the Esketots Morant seems to have known nothing.

That Morant should not have known this is, of course, in no way to his discredit, but it is a serious matter that, having guessed (without the slightest ground) that the manor descended through the Anesti family, he proceeded to assert it as a fact, an assertion which gave me no small trouble when I had to identify the manor in Domesday, as I could hardly guess that it was made without any foundation whatever.

J. H. ROUND.

<sup>1</sup> *Red Book of the Exchequer*, p. 195.

<sup>3</sup> Ancient deed A. 825.

<sup>2</sup> Ancient deed A. 821.

<sup>4</sup> Report Historical MSS., App. I., p. 32.



**The Church and Glebe of Willingale Doe.**—In the year 1234 the ‘parson’ of Willingale Doe, Master William by name, brought the action known in law as the Assize *Utrum* against Emma de Crustwyc to decide whether a messuage with twenty acres of arable and three roods of meadow was her lay fee or was glebe belonging to his church.<sup>1</sup> The sworn testimony of the *juratores*, given as to this question, provides us with an interesting glimpse of parochial history. They set on record the names of William’s three predecessors and deposed that the earliest of these, “a certain Godfrey,” had replaced the wooden church which he found there by one of stone, and that when this had been built, “a certain Godfrey de Rupella,” who was in fact the lord of the manor, came and gave as endowment to the church the land in question. ‘Parson’ Godfrey was succeeded by William Folenfant, who in course of time became a leper. This gave his servant Alexander, father of Emma the defendant, the opportunity of securing the glebe for himself at an annual rent of six shillings. And this arrangement had been confirmed by the next ‘parson’ William ‘Do,’ otherwise styled William ‘de Augo’ (i.e. *d’Ou* or *d’Eu*). The result of the case was that Master William recovered seisin of the land belonging to his church.

The above report tells us in the first place how the parish church came to be built, at a date not later than the reign of Henry II., and, in the second, it illustrates the practice of glebe being given by the lord of the manor. Morant devoted a long note to the early descent of Willingale Doe (II., 477), which, as he observed, was otherwise known as Willingale ‘Rokele’ from the family of Rokele or ‘de Rupella’ by whom it was held. But his account was largely conjectural, as he himself admitted. We have, however, an important entry in the *Red Book of the Exchequer* (p. 740), which proves that, under Henry II., “the heirs of William de Rokella” held a fee and a half in Willingale of ‘the Honour of Hatfield Peverel’ which establishes the identity of Willingale Doe with that Willingale which Domesday shows us in the hands of Ranulf Peverel. Again under Richard I., in 1198, we have Philip de la Rokele and Bernard de la Rokele occurring at Willingale.<sup>2</sup> And lastly we have Godfrey de Rokele, about a generation earlier, endowing the church. Morant made the startling assertion that a Geoffrey de Rokelle, at this date, was otherwise known as William de Ow, from which he derived the name of Willingale Doe. But we find him elsewhere citing the Hatfield Peverel cartulary to the effect

<sup>1</sup> See *Bracton's Note Book* (Ed. Maitland) II., 649.

<sup>2</sup> Feet of Fines, 10 Ric. I.

that "William de Ou is styled *William de Rochelle*" (I. 99). In any case the name of one of the "parsons" mentioned in our case, that of William 'Do,' is suggestive.

The family of Rokele (probably named from La Rochelle) gave name at one time, to South Okendon as well as to Willingale Doe, so that it is interesting to find it still lingering on the map, in 'Rockels,' which stands about a mile south of the church of Willingale Doe. Morant observed that it was once borne by a manor of theirs in Arkesdon, but "only a wood retains it, which is the joy of fox-hunters." I take this to be the wood lying between what are now 'Rockell's farm' and 'New Rockell's farm' in a detached portion of Arkesdon lying to the north west of it. It would be interesting to know if this wood is still "the joy of fox-hunters."

There is a good deal of information about this family, at its Arkesdon seat, in the cartulary of Saffron Walden Abbey (Harl. MS., 3697). In 1302 Robert de la Rokele quitclaimed to the abbot his chantry, that is his right to have three masses a week celebrated by the monks in his chapel there (fo. 147).

The mention of Willingale reminds me that in the last issue of our *Transactions* (p. 333) I contended, as against the authorities of the Public Record Office and the British Museum, that they were mistaken in accepting Morant's identification of Pleshy with the 'Plesinchou' of Domesday, which was really a place in the Willingales of which the name is now lost. Since then the editor of *Feudal Aids* has kindly written to me from the Public Record Office to say that my arguments have convinced him, and that he has himself, moreover, discovered independent evidence confirming them<sup>1</sup>; Mr. Waller, also, I understand, has found further evidence that my view is right.<sup>2</sup>

J. H. ROUND.

**Beeleigh Abbey.**—In the Colchester Cartulary, Robert, abbot of Perhendune, occurs in August, 1172, as a witness to a grant to St. John's Abbey, by Ralph de Marci, who is mentioned in the confirmation charter of Richard I. to the canons of Beeleigh as having granted lands in Parndon to them. Thus it appears that the canons were settled at Parndon at least eight years before they migrated to Beeleigh in 1180.

R. F.

<sup>1</sup> This evidence consists of an extract from a Pleshy Court Roll of 20 Ed. I. (Court Rolls, Duchy of Lancaster 7<sup>6</sup>/<sub>7</sub>): "Willelmus Gervys constabularius de Anesty queritur, etc. . . . in quodam hameletto qui vocatur Plesingho in parochia de Willingale in campo de Westfeld."

<sup>2</sup> One may add that in a charter which is probably late in the reign of Henry III. (Harl. Cart. 45, D. 7) John de Arderne gives to Richard de Rupella land in Ireland, given him by Prince Edward son of Henry III., in exchange "manerii sui Willingehale et Plesingho." The witnesses have Essex names:—John de Riparius, Robert de Ufford, Richard de Tany, William de Wokindon, Roger de Beauchamp, Richard de Ispanya, knights; Walter de Essex; Thomas Jocelyn.

**The Siege of Colchester.**—In the extensive and valuable collection of MSS. belonging to the Rt. Hon. Sir J. Dimsdale, M.P., the present Lord Mayor of London, is a little document of special interest to Essex people.

Written during the memorable siege in 1648 by Lord Capell, or Capel as he sometimes spelt it, it is said to have been enclosed in a bone hollowed out to receive it, and thrown over the walls of Colchester, presumably intended for some friendly messenger to convey to the Royalist commander.

The smallness of the space provided in its strange envelope probably accounts for the diminutive size of the document which is about seven inches long by two inches wide. It is covered on both sides with minute writing, faded in parts but fairly legible as a whole.

By the courtesy of the Lord Mayor I am favoured with the following transcript:—

“ Sr

Wee are advertized from soe many severall parts of your being at Lincolne that wee cannot refuse the beleefe of it, and in the consideration that it may advance his Majesty's service, I thought it fitt to advertise you somewhat of our Condition at Colchester—Fairfax hath beene for this Month engaged heere at Colchester, I presume with the considerablest force that party can now make: which I beleeve exceeds not 3500 foote, and 1200 Horse—hee had so ill succes in his first adventure to storme us, and the taste he hath had of our foote by divers salyes hee relishes soe ill, that hee endeavours to surround us with a line and workes though att some distance in which he hath proceeded not unsoldgerly.

It is to be doubted wee may soon want fodder for our Horse—neither the enemy or wee are well—yet wee heere conceive that our tying and obliging Fairfax to us is the best way of proceeding for his Majesty's service for the rest of the Kingdom have the more scope to act their parts best. And a disaster heere would let him loose, which is the reason wee hazard not more than needes must stand with our Dutye and honour considering also the advantage the enemy hath of us in Numbers—if this finds you according to our expectation neer Cambridge I concieve that if you march by Walden on the border of Essex, Fairfax his army will not neerer attend your coming, and you are att your election to march directly to us, or to goe to London as shall be most requisite for the King's service—And though we should be glad to have the advantage by your coming to us to be relieved, and more at liberty to increase our numbers; and it is to be doubted when we are drawn to straighter provisions our Men will be kept well satisfied—by this much I doubt not but you will judge of our condition. I rest your most humble Servant Arthur Capell.

July<sup>v</sup>.<sup>10</sup>. Colchester.”

I. C. GOULD.

### Nether Hall in Roydon: Notes from the Inquisitions.

—In the year 1281 an enquiry was made as to whether the king would suffer loss if licence were granted to the then Abbot of Waltham to purchase from Alexander de Alrycheseye—the modern Arleseey, in Bedfordshire, which the Abbot and Convent owned,—twenty-five acres of land and five acres of pasture in Reyndon, or Roydon.<sup>1</sup> A jury of twelve found that no damage to the king would ensue, inasmuch as the land was held in socage of Sir Robert Fitz-Walter, by service of 14s. yearly, and suit at his court at Roydon every three weeks; moreover, Alexander had also to make suit for Robert at like intervals to the Hundred Court of Waltham, which the Abbot held in fee-farm. Nearly two hundred years afterwards, on Monday, August 2nd, 1473,<sup>2</sup> died Johan Parre, a richly-dowered woman, who had survived one, if not two, husbands. As Joan Trusbut, Morant says, she had married Thomas Colt, and at her death his son and her's, John Colt, born in 1465, was found to be her heir, and a part of his inheritance was Nether Hall, Roydon, held of the Abbot of Waltham, by a service then unknown. In November, 1506, a settlement (to which Sir Thomas More, then a simple gentleman, was a party,) was made, whereby Nether Hall, with other real estate in Essex, was secured to John Colt, and Mary his wife, for the term of her life, the Hall and all buildings situate within the site or ambit of the manor being expressly exempted from the operation of a clause touching impeachment of waste. I suggest, with some diffidence, that this provision may have had something to do with a proposed demolition of old and the erection of new buildings. A few years afterwards, on May 8th, 1514, the property was settled on John Colt's son and heir apparent, George, who at the age of 22, was about to marry Elizabeth, daughter and heir apparent of Henry Makwilliam.<sup>3</sup> John Colt died on October 22nd, 1521, and was succeeded by his son, George.<sup>4</sup>

W. C. W.

**Barking.**—The inquisitions from which the above notes on Nether Hall are derived, afford an interesting instance of tenure in another part of the county. The Colts were lords of the manor of Clay Hall in Barking, which they held of the Abbess there by the

<sup>1</sup> *Inq. p.m.* 9 Ed. I., No. 30.

<sup>2</sup> "The Monday before S. Laurence"; elsewhere, "July 10th, 13 reg."

<sup>3</sup> *Inq. p.m.* 15 Ed. IV. Morant says that the father of Joan Trusbut's husband came from Carlisle, and one of the numerous inquisitions taken on her death relates to a small property there, described as "worth nought, because destroyed by the Scots." In 1246-7 one Agatha 'Trussebuth' held land in co. Bucks, as we learn from the Inquisition 31 Hen. III.

<sup>4</sup> *Inq. p.m.* 13 and 14 Hen. VIII., S. 2, file 307.

service of a knight's fee and a money payment of 15s. 4d. yearly, with 3s. 11½d. more on St. Martin's Day. But that was not all. The tenant had also to come in person to the church of SS. Mary and Ethelburg in Barking, so as to arrive on the vigil of St. Ethelburg in each year for ever—there is a pathos about this eternal striving after perpetuity!—from the beginning of vespers on that day until the hour of nones on the following day, and there to guard the high altar of the church during all the time intermediate. In addition to this, a suit of court had to be paid once in three weeks, and whenever the Abbess sent notice over night the owner of Clay Hall and a groom had to appear in the morning, fully equipped and ready to ride with her any whither within the four seas; or with her steward, if he was going forth on the business of the Abbess. Finally, on the death of the tenant, the Abbess was entitled to his best horse and best harness.

W. C. W.

## GENERAL MEETING OF THE ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY HELD AT COLCHESTER CASTLE ON THURSDAY, THE 17th APRIL, 1902.

H. LAVER, ESQ., F.S.A., IN THE CHAIR.

The Hon. Secretary read the Annual Report, and the Treasurer's Account was laid before the meeting, and they were adopted and passed.

A vote of thanks was passed to the President, Vice-Presidents, Council, and Officers, for their services during the past year and it was resolved that they be re-elected with the addition on the Council of the Rev. E. H. L. Reeve and the Rev. T. G. Gibbons to fill the vacancies caused by the deaths of the Rev. E. L. Cutts, D.D., and the Rev. Cecil Deedes.

A vote of thanks was accorded to Mr. James Round, M.P., for the use of the Castle Library for the Society's meetings.

Mr. Douglass Round, Mr. Charles Benham and Mr. P. G. Laver were re-appointed the Society's representatives on the Museum Committee of the Corporation of Colchester.

Mr. J. H. Round read a short note on the Church and Glebe of Willingale Doe, and Mr. G. Rickword read a paper on the Parish Registers of Colchester.

The following candidates were elected members of the Society :—

	ON THE NOMINATION OF
TODHUNTER, JOSEPH, Kingsmoor House, near Harlow.	} Mr. W. C. Waller.
WALLER, GEOFFREY FRANCIS, Loughton.	
GREENWOOD, JOSEPH, Dunelm, Maldon Road, Colchester.	Mr. H. Laver.
CURLING, The Rev. T. H., The Rectory, Bradwell, Braintree.	} Mr. G. F. Beaumont.
BARKER, ELLIOT F., 52, Creffield Road, Colchester.	
JARMIN, A. M., East Hill, Colchester.	} Mr. Philip Laver.
LEWER, H. W., Priors, Loughton.	
CHALLIS, A. J., Clatterford Hall, Fyfield.	Mr. I. C. Gould.
WATKINS, The Venerable Archdeacon OSCAR D., The Limes, Sir Isaac's Walk, Colchester.	Rev. L. N. Prance
WATKINS, Mrs., same address.	} The Rev. H. Edmund Legh
CURTIS, RANDOLPH, 23, Pembroke Square, Kensington, W.	
	Rev. A. F. Curtis

In the afternoon an excursion was made to Butcher's Wood and Oliver's Thicks under the direction of Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A. Unfortunately a heavy storm somewhat marred the pleasure of the visit to Stanway, and prevented anything more than a cursory inspection of the remains of what was probably one of the ancient defences of Colchester. Mr. Laver read, in a barn at Oliver's, an interesting descriptive account of the rampart, and thoughtfully presented each member of the party with a plan of the district and a section of the rampart.

At "Olivers" members were kindly entertained to tea by Mr. and Mrs. Caldwell.

---

## QUARTERLY MEETING & EXCURSION, SATURDAY, 31st MAY, 1902.

RYEHOUSE, ROYDON, AND WALTHAM ABBEY.

Assembling at Ryehouse station, members at once proceeded to the Rye House over which they were conducted by the custodian of the building. Thence they moved on to Roydon Church where the interesting brasses to the members of the Colt family and others were inspected. Nether Hall was next visited by permission of the owner, Colonel Archer Houlblon, and an interesting account of the building and its former owners was given by Mr. G. E. Pritchett, F.S.A. The only remains of the Hall, which must originally have been a remarkably fine specimen of domestic architecture, are those of the ancient gateway built in brickwork, the following note on which has been contributed by Mr. I. C. Gould, and a further note by Mr. W. C. Waller will be found *ante* p. 378.

### NETHER HALL.

“Judging by the character of the brickwork, I had thought it probable that this fine example of domestic architecture was erected by Sir George Colt who, according to Morant, inherited the estate in 1521, but Mr. St. John Hope, when examining the place for the Society of Antiquaries, discovered on a decayed wooden corbel, in the great room on the first floor, a carving of the rose-en-soleil of Edward IV. charged with a fetterlock.

This makes it likely that the building dates from 1470—the period to which it is traditionally assigned.

The sad mutilation of the beautiful gatehouse can be judged by a comparison of the picture in Grose's *Antiquities of England and Wales* taken in 1769, engraved in 1775, with that published in Britton's *Architectural Antiquities* in 1809.

In the latter we see that the face of the projecting eastern bay of the tower had gone.

It is matter for congratulation that no very serious change has since taken place—as yet.

Grose's view shows the hall adjoining the western side of the gate tower: this has totally disappeared. Within it “on a door case” were the arms of Colt and Trusbutt,<sup>1</sup> similar to those on the tomb of Thomas Colt in Roydon church.

---

<sup>1</sup> A fess between three colts (Colt), impaling gyronny of eight (Trusbutt).



Thomas married Joan Trusbutt, and died in 1471.

The loop-holing of the wall above the moat, the guard-room and the battlements as well as the machicolations of the tower may perhaps be regarded as architectural survivals rather than for defensive service, but the utmost care seems to have been taken in providing for the disposal of the drawbridge, for it will be noted that the great doorway and the window above it are recessed beneath an arch thus allowing space into which the drawbridge was drawn up.

Probably older still than the 15th century hall and gatehouse is the moat which still surrounds so much of the enclosure; this *may* have been dug by the canons of Waltham when they bought the estate in 1280, or may, indeed, date from an earlier age."

Reaching Monkham, Waltham Abbey, about two o'clock, the party received a cordial welcome from Colonel R. B. Colvin, C.B., and the Lady Gwendoline Colvin who entertained them to an excellent luncheon in a marquee on the lawn. Afterwards a General Meeting of the Society was held, and, as Mr. Lowndes, the president, was unavoidably absent, the chair was taken by Mr. F. Chancellor, who it was announced had been a member of the Society since its inauguration fifty years ago. A hearty vote of thanks having been passed to Colonel and Lady Colvin for the hospitable reception which had been accorded to the visitors, the Hon. Secretary read the names of the following candidates, all of whom were unanimously elected members of the Society:—

ON THE NOMINATION OF

COLVIN, Colonel R. B., C.B., Monkham, Waltham Abbey.	}	Mr. W. C. Waller.
EDWARDS, A. J., Birch Hill Park, Waltham Abbey.		
TOWER, Mrs. FRANCIS, Holfield Grange, Coggeshall.	}	Rev. L. N. Prance.
EVANS, P. M., M.A., 29, Westbourne Terrace, London, W.		
NEAME, NORMAN, Mistley Abbey, Manningtree.	}	Mr. C. N. Brooks,
POTTER, FRED. CHAS., 26, West Street, Colchester		
KEMP, Mrs. ALFRED, Fairmead Side, Loughton.	}	Mr. H. Laver.
CAZENOVE, C. D., 26, Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, London, W.C.		
FINLAY, Rev. G. A. K., The Vicarage, Little Dunmow.	}	Mr. G. F. Beaumont.
		Mr. Hastings Worrin.

Waltham Abbey Church was next visited, being reached about 3.30, and here, by permission of the Vicar, the Society was addressed by Mr. W. H. St. John Hope, the Secretary of the Society of Antiquaries, who gave an interesting account of the Abbey, and described many of its architectural features, touching in particular upon the much debated question as to the date of the fine Norman nave.

It will be gratifying to members if Mr. Pritchett and Mr. Hope can be induced to furnish accounts of Nether Hall and Waltham Abbey for a future number of the Transactions.

## REPORT FOR 1901.

---

The Council has the pleasure to present to the Members of the Society its forty-ninth Annual Report.

The losses by death and resignation during the past year have been above the average, and have not, the Council regrets to add, been fully counterbalanced by the election of nineteen new members within the same period.

Of those whose removal by death has to be deplored, the following may be mentioned:—The Right Reverend the Bishop of Oxford, sometime Vicar of Navestock, one of the founders of this Society; the Right Hon. the Lord Rookwood, who, as Sir Henry Selwin-Ibbetson, was for a time President of the Society, and afterwards, till his death, a Vice-president; the Rev. Dr. E. L. Cutts, another founder of the Society, its Hon. Secretary from 1852 to 1866, and afterwards, until his death, a member of the Council; the Rev. Cecil Deedes, who took a keen interest in the church-bells of the county and was also a member of the Council; the Rev. E. R. Horwood, a member from 1854, if not from the foundation of the Society; the Rev. E. K. Green, who contributed a paper on Lawford Church to the last number of the *Transactions*; and the Rev. W. H. Beckett, who joined the Society in 1886 and was frequently present at its meetings and excursions.

The Council has also to announce that Mr. F. Spalding, who was appointed Sub-curator of the Museum in 1885, has been obliged to resign the office owing to failing health. In announcing this resignation the Council desires also to record its regret.

The total membership of the Society, which at the end of last year stood at 355, is now as under:—

Annual Members	...	...	279
Life Members...	...	...	45
Honorary Members	...	...	6

Elected to-day	...	...	330 11
----------------	-----	-----	-----------

Total	...	...	341
-------	-----	-----	-----

The general progress of the Society may be to some extent gauged by its publications, and it is noteworthy that the sum of these during the past decade has been just double what it was during the twenty years preceding. Moreover the recent issues have been fully indexed; and a General Index to the first ten Volumes has also been distributed among those who subscribed towards its preparation. *The Register of Scholars admitted to Colchester Grammar School* has been completed, and three instalments of the *Feet of Fines* for the County, covering the years 1182—1230, have been placed in the hands of members.

During the past year two parts of the *Transactions*, containing together 218 pages, have been issued. Mr. Miller Christy and Mr. W. W. Porteous have continued their interesting illustrated articles on Essex Brasses; Mr. W. C. Waller, F.S.A., has added another instalment of his useful list of Essex Field Names, and has furnished the first part of an account of the Wroth family; Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A., and Mr. I. C. Gould, have contributed valuable information on earthworks in different parts of the county; Mr. J. Horace Round has furnished several historical notes of interest; and among our new contributors is Mr. H. J. Dukinfield Astley, the Hon. Secretary of the British Archæological Association, who writes on Mediæval Colchester. Among those who have kindly lent blocks to illustrate the *Transactions* may be mentioned Colonel Frank Landon, Mr. I. C. Gould, and the Council of the British Archæological Association. It is hoped that the assistance of members in this direction may be still further relied upon in the future.

The Council suggests that the Rev. E. H. L. Reeve and the Rev. T. G. Gibbons be appointed to fill the vacancies in the Council caused by the deaths of Dr. Cutts and the Rev. Cecil Deedes; and that Mr. Charles Portway and Mr. F. E. Emson, be appointed Local Secretaries for Halsted and Saffron Walden respectively.

Mr. W. C. Waller has again kindly audited the subjoined accounts, which are not quite so satisfactory as, on the face, they appear to be, inasmuch as, against the balance of 36*l.* 8*s.* 0*d.* in hand at the close of the year there are bills outstanding to the amount of 104*l.* 10*s.* 0*d.* This circumstance prompts the Council to urge on the members the desirability of securing, in view of the Society's Jubilee next year, a substantial increase in the roll of membership.

The Council has been invited by the Corporation of Colchester to increase the annual contribution (35*l.*) made by the Society towards the Sub-curator's salary, which has recently been raised from 100*l.* to 130*l.* per annum. Having regard, however, to the financial position of the Society, and to the fact that the Borough of Colchester has

the advantage of the free loan of the Society's valuable collection of antiquities, the Council does not feel justified in increasing its expenditure in this direction. Indeed it considers that, in return for the privilege of exhibiting the Society's collection—which adds so much to the interest of its own—the Corporation might not unreasonably be asked to undertake its safe custody entirely free of charge, whereby the Society, being thus relieved from the fixed annual burden of 35*l.*, would be able to extend its operations and to print much valuable matter now practically unavailable to students, except at great expense or loss of time. It is due to Mr. James Round, M.P., to remind the Society that the Castle is the private property of that gentleman and that much of the space used for the Museum is generously placed at the disposal of the Corporation and the Society for the purpose without charge.

During the year, excursions were made to Dedham, Lawford, and Great and Little Bromley; Great Dunmow, Great and Little Easton, Broxted, and Chickney; and to Brentwood, Navestock, and South Weald.

It is proposed to visit during the present year, Waltham Abbey, Coggeshall, and Mount Bures and some of the adjoining parishes.

---

## DONATIONS TO THE SOCIETY.

---

From the Editor East Anglian Notes and Queries—  
Vol. IX., Jan. to Dec., 1901. Index Vol. V.

From Mr. G. H. Overend, F.S.A.—  
Queen Elizabeth at Helmingham by J. A. C. Vincent.

From Mr. H. Laver, F.S.A. (in aid of the *Transactions*)—  
Plan and Sketch of Ancient Rampart through Lexden Park.

From Mr. J. H. Round—  
The Early Charters of St. John's Abbey, Colchester.

From the Author—  
The History of Stondon Massey by the Rev. E. H. L. Reeve.

*From Societies in union for the exchange of publications.*

Society of Antiquaries of London—  
Proceedings, Vol. XVIII. (2nd Series) Nos. 1 and 2.

Society of Antiquaries of Scotland—  
Proceedings, Vols. XXXIV. and XXXV.

Royal Archæological Institute—  
Archæological Journal, Vol. LVIII.

British Archæological Association—  
Journal, Vol. VII. (New Series.)

Royal Institute of British Architects—  
Journal, Vol. VIII., parts 3 and 4 and Vol. IX., parts 1 and 2.  
Kalendar for 1901-1902.

Saint Paul's Ecclesiological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. V., part 1.

- Bristol and Gloucester Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. XXIII. and Vol. XXIV., part 1.
- Cambridge Antiquarian Society—  
List of Members of the Society 1901.  
Cambridge Borough Charters.  
The Place-names of Cambridgeshire.  
Twelve Windows in Canterbury Cathedral.  
Proceedings, Vol. X., No. 1.  
Report of the Library Syndicate 1900.
- Chester Archæological Society—  
Journal Vol. VIII. (New Series) and Index Vol. VI.
- Essex Field Club—  
Nothing received this year.]
- East Herts Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. 1., part 1. (reissue of)
- Leicestershire Architectural and Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol. IX., part 2.
- Powys-Land Club—  
Collections, Vol. XXXII., part 1.
- St. Albans & Hertfordshire Architectural & Archæological Society—  
Transactions, Vol., I. (New Series) part 3-
- Somerset Archæological Society—  
Proceedings, VII. (Third Series.)
- Suffolk Institute of Archæology—  
Proceedings, Vol. XI., part 1.
- Surrey Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XVI.
- Sussex Archæological Society—  
Collections, Vol. XLIV.
- Thoresby Society—  
Miscellanea, Vol. XI., part 1.  
Leeds Parish Registers, Vol. X., part 3.
- Wiltshire Archæological Society—  
Magazine, Vol. XXXLI., No. 95; XXXII., No. 96.  
Abstracts of Wiltshire Inquisitions post mortem, part 8.



# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

---

## LIST OF PUBLICATIONS.

---

**Transactions.** The Society's un-issued stock of the First Series (1858-73) was destroyed by fire in the year 1874.

Of the Second Series (seven volumes, 1878-1900), a few copies only remain in stock. To be had, in parts, at per volume £1 : 0 : 0

**Register of the Scholars admitted to Colchester School, 1637-1740**, edited, with additions, by J. H. Round, M.A., from the transcript by the Rev. C. L. Acland, M.A., cloth boards 3 : 6

**Catalogue of Books, Pamphlets, Periodicals, MSS. and Scrap Collections in the Society's Library** 1 : 0

**General Index to the Transactions of the Society.**  
Vols. I. to V., and Vols. I. to V., New Series ... 12 : 0

All publications are demy 8vo in size.

Members of the Society are entitled to one copy of any of the above at a reduction of 25 per cent.



# ESSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY

## MUSEUM, COLCHESTER CASTLE.

### OFFICERS AND COUNCIL FOR 1902.

#### President.

GEORGE ALAN LOWNDES, Esq., M.A.

#### Vice-Presidents.

The Right Hon. LORD EUSTACE CECIL.	Sir M. E. GRANT-DUFF, P.C., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., F.R.S.
The Right Rev. The LORD BISHOP OF ST. ALBANS, D.D.	Sir H. SEYMOUR KING, K.C.I.E., M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD RAYLEIGH, M.A., F.R.S.	The Right Hon. JAMES ROUND, P.C., M.A., M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD HAWKESBURY, F.S.A.	Colonel A. R. M. LOCKWOOD, M.P.
The Right Hon. LORD CLAUD HAMILTON.	Major F. C. RASCH, M.P.
The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF COL- CHESTER, D.D.	GEORGE COURTAULD, Esq.
The Right Rev. The BISHOP OF BARKING, D.D., F.S.A.	

#### Council.

The PRESIDENT ( <i>ex-officio</i> ).	The Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.
G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.	HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.
Major-General B. R. BRANFILL.	WILLIAM MACANDREW, Esq.
FREDERIC CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.	FRANCIS M. NICHOLS, Esq., F.S.A.
MILLER CHRISTY, Esq., F.L.S.	The Rev. CANON NORMAN, M.A.
The Rev. A. F. CURTIS, M.A.	The Rev. L. N. PRANCE, M.A., F.S.A.
The Rev. T. G. GIBBONS, M.A.	G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.
The Rev. H. L. ELLIOT, M.A.	The Rev. E. H. L. REEVE, M.A.
E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.	DOUGLASS ROUND, Esq., M.A.
The Rev. F. W. GALPIN, M.A., F.L.S.	J. HORACE ROUND, Esq., M.A.
A. R. GODDARD, Esq., B.A.	C. F. D. SPERLING, Esq., M.A.
I. C. GOULD, Esq.	W. C. WALLER, Esq., M.A., F.S.A.

#### Treasurer.

The Right Hon. JAMES ROUND, P.C., M.A., M.P.

#### Honorary Secretary.

G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.  
The Lawn, Coggeshall.

#### Collector.

#### Honorary Curator.

HENRY LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.,  
Head Street, Colchester.

#### Sub. Curator.

Mr. A. G. WRIGHT,  
The Museum, Colchester.

#### Local Secretaries.

Braintree—Rev. J. W. KENWORTHY.	Coggeshall—G. F. BEAUMONT, Esq., F.S.A.
Brentwood—Col. F. LONDON.	Colchester—H. LAVER, Esq., F.S.A., F.L.S.
Billericay—Major-Genl. B. R. BRANFILL.	Halstead—CHARLES PORTWAY, Esq.
Bishops Stortford—G. E. PRITCHETT, Esq., F.S.A.	Loughton—I. C. GOULD, Esq.
Chelmsford—F. CHANCELLOR, Esq., F.R.I.B.A.	Maldon—E. A. FITCH, Esq., F.L.S.
	Saffron Walden—F. E. Emson, Esq.